

## The Jesuit Order as a Synagogue of Jews

# Studies in Medieval and Reformation Traditions

*Edited by*

Andrew Colin Gow

Edmonton, Alberta

*In cooperation with*

Sylvia Brown, Edmonton, Alberta

Falk Eisermann, Berlin

Berndt Hamm, Erlangen

Johannes Heil, Heidelberg

Susan C. Karant-Nunn, Tucson, Arizona

Martin Kaufhold, Augsburg

Jürgen Miethke, Heidelberg

M.E.H. Nicolette Mout, Leiden

Christopher Ocker, San Anselmo and Berkeley, California

*Founding Editor*

Heiko A. Oberman †

VOLUME 146

# The Jesuit Order as a Synagogue of Jews

Jesuits of Jewish Ancestry and Purity-of-Blood Laws  
in the Early Society of Jesus

*By*

Robert Aleksander Maryks



BRILL

LEIDEN • BOSTON  
2010



This is an open access title distributed under the terms of the CC-BY-NC License, which permits any non-commercial use, distribution, and reproduction in any medium, provided the original author(s) and source are credited.



An electronic version of this book is freely available, thanks to the support of libraries working with Knowledge Unlatched. More information about the initiative can be found at [www.knowledgeunlatched.org](http://www.knowledgeunlatched.org).

*On the cover:* The View of Toledo. El Greco (Domenikos Theotokopoulos) (Greek, 1541–1614). The Metropolitan Museum of Arts, New York City.

#### Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data

Maryks, Robert Aleksander

The Jesuit Order as a synagogue of Jews : Jesuits of Jewish ancestry and purity-of-blood laws in the early Society of Jesus / by Robert Aleksander Maryks.

p. cm. — (Studies in medieval and Reformation traditions ; v. 146)

Includes bibliographical references (p. ) and index.

ISBN 978-90-04-17981-3 (hardback : alk. paper) 1. Jesuits—Membership—History—16th century. 2. Jesuits—Membership—History—17th century. 3. Marranos—History—16th century. 4. Marranos—History—17th century. 5. Antisemitism—Iberian Peninsula—History. 6. Race discrimination—Religious aspects—Christianity. 7. Iberian Peninsula—Ethnic relations. I. Title. II. Series.

BX3706.A2.M37 2009

271.53046089924—dc22

2009035704

ISSN 1573-4188

ISBN 978 9004 17981 3

Copyright 2010 by Koninklijke Brill nv, Leiden, The Netherlands.

This work is published by Koninklijke Brill nv. Koninklijke Brill nv incorporates the imprints Brill, Brill Hes & De Graaf, Brill Nijhoff, Brill Rodopi and Hotei Publishing.

Koninklijke Brill nv reserves the right to protect the publication against unauthorized use and to authorize dissemination by means of offprints, legitimate photocopies, microform editions, reprints, translations, and secondary information sources, such as abstracting and indexing services including databases. Requests for commercial re-use, use of parts of the publication, and/or translations must be addressed to Koninklijke Brill nv.

This book is printed on acid-free paper and produced in a sustainable manner.

Rodzicom moim drogim



## CONTENTS

Acknowledgements .....	ix
List of Abbreviations .....	xi
List of Illustrations .....	xiii
Introduction .....	xv
Chapter One The Historical Context of Purity-of-Blood	
Discrimination (1391–1547) .....	1
<i>Sentencia-Estatuto</i> of Pero de Sarmiento (1449) .....	2
Alonso de Cartagena and Alonso de Oropesa .....	4
Purity-of-blood statutes of Archbishop Silíceo (1547) .....	29
<i>Defensio Toletani Statuti</i> of Diego de Simancas (1573) .....	31
Chapter Two Early Jesuit Pro-converso Policy (1540–72) .....	41
Ignatius of Loyola as a “deep spiritual Semite” .....	42
Jerónimo Nadal’s opposition to the purity-of-blood legislation .....	76
The converso triumvirate: the election of Diego Laínez .....	90
Francisco de Borja’s infinite love of conversos .....	100
Chapter Three Discrimination Against Jesuits of Jewish	
Lineage (1573–93) .....	117
Italo-Portuguese anti-converso lobby at General Congregation 3 .....	120
Everard Mercurian’s “house cleansing” .....	123
Memorialistas’ revolt against Rome .....	125
Benedetto Palmio’s converso-phobic memorial .....	129
Acquaviva’s discriminatory measures .....	143
Chapter Four Jesuit Opposition to the Purity-of-blood	
Discrimination (1576–1608) .....	159
Antonio Possevino .....	162
Diego de Guzmán .....	182
Pedro de Ribadeneyra .....	187
García Girón de Alarcón .....	190
Juan de Mariana .....	212

Conclusion .....	215
Appendix I .....	219
Appendix II .....	257
Bibliography .....	261
Index .....	271



## ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

I express my particular gratitude to the scholars who have generously assisted me with their insightful comments and suggestions in the process of writing the present book. These include André Aciman, Miriam Bodian, Jonathan Boyarin, Richard F. Gyug, Ignacio Echarte Oñate, Kimberly Lynn Hossain, Francisco de Borja Medina, Thomas M. McCoog, Marc Rastoin, James W. Reites, Jean-Pierre Sonnet, and Alison P. Weber.

I owe much to the Jesuits of the Jesuit Historical Institute in Rome, Thomas M. McCoog and James F.X. Pratt for their friendly support and generous hospitality during my work there. The research in the archives progressed efficiently thanks also to the serene and accommodating spirit of the staff of the Institute, especially Nicoletta Basilotta and Mauro Brunello. I also thank Jill G. Thomas, the Jesuitana Librarian at John J. Burns Library of Boston College, who graciously and competently assisted me in finding and obtaining for publication the illustrations contained in the present book.

While writing this book in New York City, the help of the staff at Fordham University Libraries in collecting secondary sources was indispensable. I thank especially Christine Campbell, Helena Cunniffe, Betty Garity, and Charlotte Labbe.

A PCS-CUNY Research Grant provided the financial support necessary to do research in the archives of Rome in 2008, and Andrea Finkelstein, the acting chairperson in the History Department at Bronx Community College of the City University of New York, generously accommodated my teaching schedule to fit it into my writing project.



## LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS

*	born
†	died
ACA	Archivo de la Corona de Aragón, Barcelona
AHN	Archivo Histórico Nacional, Madrid
ARSI	Archivio Romano Societatis Iesu (the Jesuit Archives in Rome)
AHSI	<i>Archivum Historicum Societatis Iesu</i> (periodical)
c.	circa
<i>Chron.</i>	<i>Chronicon</i> (MHSI)
<i>Const.</i>	<i>Constitutions</i>
<i>DEI</i>	<i>Diccionario de Espiritualidad Ignaciana</i>
<i>DHCJ</i>	<i>Diccionario Histórico de la Compañía de Jesús</i>
<i>Epp.</i>	<i>Epistulae</i>
f.	folio
ff.	folios
<i>Fontes narr.</i>	<i>Fontes narrativi</i> (MHSI)
GC	General Congregation
<i>MHSI</i>	<i>Monumenta Historica Societatis Iesu</i>
<i>Mon</i>	<i>Monumenta</i>
<i>Opp. NN.</i>	<i>Opera Nostrorum</i>
r.	reigned
S.J. (S.I.)	Societatis Iesu (of the Society of Jesus)

See also *Monumenta Historica Societati Iesu* (MHSI) in Bibliography, where the abbreviations for the collection's volumes are provided.



## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

Map of the Iberian Peninsula in 1492 .....	xxxiii
Fig. 1. Pedro de Ribadeneyra as <i>the</i> biographer of Ignatius of Loyola .....	43
Fig. 2. Ignatius of Loyola incarcerated by the Inquisition in Alcalá .....	47
Fig. 3. Íñigo accused of seducing students at the University of Paris .....	53
Fig. 4. Íñigistas in Paris: the nucleus of the future Society of Jesus .....	56
Fig. 5. Diego Laínez (1512–65), the most prominent converso Jesuit .....	59
Fig. 6. Ignatius of Loyola converting a Jew .....	60
Fig. 7. Jerónimo Nadal (1507–80)—Loyola’s plenipotentiary emissary .....	77
Fig. 8. Nicolás Bobadilla (c. 1509–90)—the converso opponent of the “converso triumvirate” .....	92
Fig. 9. The Italian Jesuit historian Francesco Sacchini (1570–1625) .....	95
Fig. 10. Bl. Ignacio de Azevedo (1526–70)—the martyred missionary of Brazil .....	102
Fig. 11. Francisco de Toledo [Herrera] (1532–96)—the first Jesuit cardinal .....	105
Fig. 12. Francisco Suárez [de Toledo] (1548–1617)—the converso supporter of the anti-converso legislation .....	109
Fig. 13. Alfonso Salmerón (1515–85)—an influential opponent of the converso discrimination .....	141
Fig. 14. Map of seventeenth-century Vietnam .....	152
Fig. 15. Engravings from the <i>Vestigatio arcani sensus in Apocalypsi</i> (Antwerp, 1614) by Luis del Alcázar (1554–1613) .....	157
Fig. 16. The Italian Jesuit writer and diplomat Antonio Possevino (1533–1611) .....	161
Fig. 17. Juan de Mariana (1536–1624)—the Spanish avatar of Titus Livius .....	211



## INTRODUCTION

In an email reacting to my lecture on the Jesuits of Jewish origins at the Jesuit Ricci Institute of Macau in November 2007, a Jesuit told me briefly the story of his Jewish lineage. While his other Sephardic ancestors went to Istanbul, Baghdad, Tehran, and—through the Silk Road—up to Shanghai, where they remained Jewish until today, both his grandparents were descendants of Jews who settled in Palermo and Trabia (Sicily), where they converted to Catholicism in order to survive (in the baptismal registers, which are still extant, they are described as “usurers”). Yet, they kept practicing Judaism secretly. From Friday evening through Saturday evening, his grandfather would hide the image of baby Jesus from a large framed picture of St. Anthony that he kept in his home. It was, in fact, a wind-up music box. On Fridays he would wind up the mechanism and push a button, so that Jesus would disappear out of St. Anthony’s arms, hidden in the upper frame of the picture. On Saturdays, he then would push the button again, so that Jesus would come back out from hiding into St. Anthony’s arms. As eldest son in his family, my correspondent was told this story by his father (who passed away in 1979), who also had asked him to eat only kosher food. None of his siblings was required to do so—they in fact hide their origins, since they are a devout practicing Catholic family.

Had the Jesuit who wrote me this email asked to enter the Jesuit Order between 1593 and 1608, his Jewish ancestry would have constituted a legal impediment to his admission, just because his character would have been allegedly compromised by his impure blood, no matter how distant his Jewish ancestors were. Had he asked to become a Jesuit between 1608 and 1946, his background would have been reviewed up to the fifth generation and the story of his heterodox paternal grandfather could, therefore, have been cited as reason to prevent him from entering the Order. However, had he become a professed Jesuit between 1540 and 1593, no law would have prevented him from following his vocation, even though not every confrere would have supported it.

This book tells the story of the evolution of the discriminatory concept of purity of blood, its complex nature, its magnitude in the early Society of Jesus (the Jesuits), and the role Christians of Jewish ancestry

played in the Order. Purity of blood (*pureza de sangre*) was an obsessive concern that originated in mid-fifteenth-century Spain, based on the biased belief that the unfaithfulness of the “deicide Jews” not only had endured in those who converted to Catholicism but also had been transmitted by blood to their descendants, regardless of their sincerity in professing the Christian faith. Consequently, the Old Christians “of pure blood” considered New Christians impure and morally inadequate to be active members of their communities.<sup>1</sup> As Yosef Hayim Yerushalmi put it eloquently, “the traditional mistrust of the Jew as outsider now gave way to an even more alarming fear of the Converso as insider.”<sup>2</sup> In the process of nation-state building in the early modern period, which was characterized by the national self-definition based on purity of lineage, the converso and Jewish elements—as figuratively epitomized in Shakespeare’s unmiscegenated Belmont—became a particularly dangerous threat. Arguably, the high number of Jews who converted to Christianity as a result of the *pogroms* in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries and as a result of the royal edict of 1492 con-

---

<sup>1</sup> There are different terms to designate this group: *New Christians*, *neophytes*, *marranos*, *confesos*, *tornadizos*, *alboraique*, and *notados*. I prefer to use *conversos*, for it does not carry any pejorative connotation, it is employed in contemporary historiography, and, additionally, it points out the Iberian origin of the group. The *Encyclopedia Judaica* (Jerusalem: Encyclopedia Judaica, 1972, vol. 15, p. 133) explains that the term refers “specifically to three groups of Jewish converts to Christianity and their descendants in the Iberian Peninsula. The first group converted in the wake of the massacre in Spain in 1391 and the proselytizing fervor in the subsequent decades. The second, also in Spain, were baptized following the decree of Ferdinand and Isabella in 1492 expelling all Jews who refused to accept Christianity. The third group, in Portugal, was converted by force and royal fiat in 1497.” However, there were many other groups that converted in Iberia between 1391 and 1492, or even prior to this period, such as thirteenth-century Majorcan Jews. See, for example, Yosef Hayim Yerushalmi, *Assimilation and Racial Anti-Semitism: The Iberian and the German Models*, Leo Baeck memorial lecture, 26 (New York: Leo Baeck Institute, 1982), pp. 7–8. For a very concise history of the Iberian Jews and conversos, with a bibliography on the subject, see Esther Benbassa and Aron Rodrigue, *Sephardi Jewry: A History of the Judeo-Spanish Community, 14th–20th Centuries* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 2000), pp. xxv–lxiii; for a brief yet comprehensive recent work on the topic, see Jane S. Gerber, *The Jews of Spain: A History of the Sephardic Experience* (New York: Free Press, 1992), pp. ix–xxv and 2–144. For an analysis of the modern historiography on conversos and its place in broader scholarship, see Kevin Ingram, “Historiography, Historicity and the Conversos,” in Kevin Ingram, ed., *Conversos and Moriscos in Late Medieval Spain and Beyond*, Volume One: *Departures and Change* (Leiden: Brill Academic Publishers, 2009), pp. 338–56.

<sup>2</sup> Yerushalmi, *Assimilation and Racial Anti-Semitism*, p. 10. See also Max-Sebastián Hering Torres, *Rassismus in der Vormoderne: die “Reinheit des Blutes” im Spanien der Frühen Neuzeit* (Frankfurt: Campus, 2006), pp. 34–5.



stituted much greater hindrance to the monarchs' vision of Catholic national identity than they had during the Visigothic rule in Spain, prior to the Muslim invasion of the Iberian Peninsula in 711.<sup>3</sup>

The first part of the title of the present book, *The Jesuit Order as a Synagogue of Jews*, reflects the genealogical identification of the converted Jews and their descendants, no matter how distant, with their allegedly infidel ancestors. It was characteristic not only of some renowned Talmudic authorities<sup>4</sup> and of the late medieval and early modern Christian authors whom we shall analyze throughout this book but also of some contemporary historians. Alfred Sicroff described this trend as "the ulcer of the Spanish existence."<sup>5</sup> It is telling that, for instance, the titles of both the anti-converso legislation at the San Antonio de Sigüenza College, *Statutum contra hebraeos* (1497), and the major contemporary work on Spanish conversos by Julio Caro Baroja, *Los judíos en la España moderna y contemporánea* (Madrid: Ediciones Arion, 1961),<sup>6</sup> reflect the identification of conversos with Jews, even though after the Expulsion of 1492 there were officially no Jews in Spain (as there were no Jews in Portugal after their expulsion in 1497).<sup>7</sup>

Caro Baroja, in fact, identified three different sources of the anti-Jewish bias: the economic (usury), the psychological (intelligence and arrogance), and the physical (body features and ungratefulness).<sup>8</sup>

---

<sup>3</sup> In this context, Jerome Friedman's article "Jewish Conversion, the Spanish Pure Blood Laws and Reformation: A Revisionist View of Racial and Religious Antisemitism," published in *Sixteenth Century Journal* 18/1 (Spring, 1987): 3–30, lacks the chronological order, which leads its author to inaccurate if not false conclusions.

<sup>4</sup> See the *responsum* of Hakham ha-Levi, citing Hakham Jacob Berab, to a question on the levirate marriage of a Portuguese converso in Matt Goldish, *Jewish Questions: Responsa on Sephardic Life in the Early Modern Period* (Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 2008), pp. 96–8. See also *ibidem*, pp. 99–105, and my forthcoming review of it in *Sixteenth Century Journal*.

<sup>5</sup> See Albert A. Sicroff, *Los estatutos de Limpieza de Sangre: controversias entre los siglos XV y XVII* (Madrid: Taurus, 1985), p. 11; and Marcel Bataillon, *Erasmus y España: estudios sobre la historia espiritual del siglo XVI* (Mexico: Fondo de Cultura Económica, 1966), vol. 1, pp. 70 and 90–1.

<sup>6</sup> A few pages there (pp. 231–7) are dedicated to the converso problem in the Society of Jesus.

<sup>7</sup> This is a characteristic underscored by both older and recent historiography on the subject. See, for example, Antonio Domínguez Ortiz, *Los judeoconversos en España y América* (Madrid: ISTMO, 1971), p. 28; and David L. Graizbord, *Souls in Dispute: Converso Identities in Iberia and the Jewish Diaspora, 1580–1700* (Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 2004), p. 3.

<sup>8</sup> See Julio Caro Baroja, *Los judíos en la España moderna y contemporánea* (Madrid: Ediciones Arion, 1978), vol. 1, pp. 104–6.

A mixture of prejudices based on these features the conversos allegedly inherited by blood pervades the entire anti-converso literature, starting with the first purity-of-blood legislation (1449) passed by the mayor of the city of Toledo in Castile, Pero de Sarmiento, to the *Estatutos* (1547) promulgated by the archbishop of Toledo, Juan Martínez Guijarro (1477–1557), better known as Silíceo,<sup>9</sup> and to Bishop Diego de Simancas's *Defensio Toletani Statuti* (Antwerp: Plantin, 1573). Like the gentle (but not-gentile) daughter of Shylock, Jessica, in Shakespeare's *The Merchant of Venice*, “in spite of canonical assurance of the regeneration through baptism, the converso was still considered a Jew in the eyes of Spanish Old Christians, and as such he [or she] was constantly responsible for the faults of his [her] Jewish ancestors.”<sup>10</sup>

Two major ecclesiastical intellectuals of fifteenth-century Spain adamantly challenged in their works the discriminatory portrayal of the converso: Alonso de Santa María de Cartagena (1384–1456) in the *Defensorium unitatis christianae* [In Defense of Christian Unity] (1449–50),<sup>11</sup> and Alonso Oropesa (d. 1469) in the *Lumen ad revelationem gentium et gloria plebis Dei Israel, de unitate fidei et de concordia et pacifica aequalitate fidelium* (1450–66) [Light for the Revelation of the Gentiles and Glory to the People of God Israel: Concerning the Unity of the Faith and Agreeable and Peaceful Equality of the Faithful].<sup>12</sup> Although Gretchen Starr-LeBeau has pointed out in her

---

<sup>9</sup> For the more racial rather than socio-political interpretation of the anti-converso legislation, see, for example, Yerushalmi, *Assimilation and Racial Anti-Semitism*, especially pp. 11–6; Benzion Netanyahu, *The Origins of the Inquisition in Fifteenth Century Spain* (New York: Random House, 1995), Book 2: “The Reign of Juan II; B. Netanyahu, *Toward the Inquisition: Essays on Jewish and Converso History in Late Medieval Spain* (Ithaca, N.Y.: Cornell University Press, 1997), pp. 76–98; and Norman Roth, *Conversos, Inquisition, and the Expulsion of the Jews from Spain* (Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 2003), pp. 88–103.

<sup>10</sup> See Janet Adelman, *Blood Relations: Christian and Jew in The Merchant of Venice* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2008), especially pp. 66–98, and my forthcoming review of it in *Sixteenth Century Journal*; and Sicroff, *Estatutos*, pp. 55–6 and 213.

<sup>11</sup> For the historical context and a portrayal of Cartagena, see Guillermo Verdín-Díaz, ed., *Alonso de Cartagena y el “Defensorium Unitatis Christianae.” Introducción histórica, traducción y notas* ([Oviedo]: Universidad de Oviedo, 1992), pp. 15–98, and the bibliography cited there. See also Roth, *Conversos, Inquisition*, p. 97; and Bruce Rosenstock, *New Men: Conversos, Christian Theology, and Society in Fifteenth-century Castile* (London: University of London, 2002), pp. 22–52.

<sup>12</sup> Luis A. Díaz y Díaz, ed., *Alonso de Oropesa. Luz para conocimiento de los gentiles* (Madrid: Universidad Pontificia de Salamaca, 1979), pp. 18–20. Strangely, this translation abridges the original title, a manipulation that suggests only a partial content of Oropesa's work. In his discussion of Oropesa, Sicroff could base his presentation

important book on the religious history of Guadalupe in Extramadura that “fray Alonso de Oropesa’s work represents one of the period’s most important and carefully reasoned theological statements on the status of conversos in Christendom,”<sup>13</sup> Cartagena’s work seems to have exercised even more influence in offering a distinctive Jewish-converso soteriology.<sup>14</sup> This is why we shall spotlight his *Defensorium* in Chapter One, without failing to note, however, its theological resemblance to the *Lumen*. In their comprehensive template of arguments, both *Defensorium* and *Lumen* would become inspirational to many future efforts to defend the threatened status of conversos, including Jesuit conversos, as we shall see in the last chapter.

Analyzing Cartagena’s and Oropesa’s works adds significance to the understanding of the following chapters of this book for two reasons: first, Juan Alfonso de Polanco (1517–76)—one of the most influential converso Jesuits—descended from the converso Maluenda clan of Burgos, which was allied with the newly converted Santa María family through the marriage of Alonso de Cartagena’s paternal aunt, María Nuñez (d. 1423), to Juan Garcés de Maluenda (el Viejo); second, the Jesuit jurist García Girón de Alarcón (1534–97), whose pro-converso treatise we shall examine below, belonged to the same order as Oropesa—the Jeronymites—before joining the Society of Jesus. The Jeronymites were renowned for their openness to converso candidates and as such represented—in Sicroff’s view—the Spanish pre-Erasmist

---

only on the quotations of the former in José Sigüenza’s *Historia de la Orden de San Jerónimo* (Madrid: Bailly-Ballière, 1907–9), before Díaz y Díaz published his Spanish translation of Oropesa’s work in 1979.

<sup>13</sup> See Gretchen D. Starr-LeBeau, *In the Shadow of the Virgin. Inquisitors, Friars, and Conversos in Guadalupe, Spain* (Princeton and Oxford: Princeton University Press, 2003), pp. 46–9 and 113. See also Albert Sicroff, “*El Lumen ad revelationem gentium* de Alonso de Oropesa como precursor del erasmismo en España,” in Eugenio Bustos Tovar, ed., *Actas del cuarto Congreso Internacional de Hispanistas* (Salamanca: Asociación Internacional de Hispanistas, 1982), vol. 2, pp. 655–64; Netanyahu, *Origins of the Inquisition*, p. 896; Roth, *Conversos, Inquisition*, p. 232; and Stefania Pastore, *Un’eresia spagnola: spiritualità conversa, alumbradismo e inquisizione (1449–1559)* (Florence: L.S. Olschki, 2004), p. 25.

<sup>14</sup> See Sicroff, *Estatutos*, p. 62: “[Cartagena] hizo un estudio tan profundo que durante dos siglos los abogados de los cristianos nuevos no encontraron nada que añadir a las consideraciones teóricas expuestas en el *Defensorium*”; and Pastore, *Eresia spagnola*, p. 5: “I due vescovi di Burgos, padre e figlio, rimasero per i conversos di fine secolo i rappresentanti della nobiltà conversa per eccellenza, ritornando come figure esemplari nelle *Generaciones y semblanzas* di Fernán Pérez de Guzmán e tra i *Claros varones de Castilla* di Fernando del Pulgar.”

movement.<sup>15</sup> It is not unreasonable, therefore, to see connections between the Jeronymite and Jesuit converso traditions, which—to the best of my knowledge—have passed unnoticed by historians, but which deserve to be treated in a separate monograph.

Furthermore, the founder of the Jesuits, Ignatius of Loyola (c. 1491–1556), had many contacts with influential Erasmists (and *alumbrados*) during his studies at Alcalá de Henares,<sup>16</sup> as we shall see in Chapter Two. Indeed, his positive approach to conversos (and Jews) pre-dates the foundation of the Society of Jesus in 1540, despite the assertion of many experts to the contrary. His openness towards conversos may have been motivated by the financial support that he had sought from their network in Spain and in the Spanish Netherlands before founding the Society and that he would continue to seek as the superior general of the Jesuits. In spite of this down-to-earth concern, Loyola undoubtedly was, as Henry Kamen powerfully put it, “a deep and sincere spiritual Semite.”<sup>17</sup>

The foundation of the Jesuits coincided—for better or worse—with the rise of the Spanish anti-converso hysteria<sup>18</sup> that reached its peak in 1547, when the most authoritative expression of the purity-of-blood legislation, *El Estatuto de limpieza* [*de sangre*], was issued by the Inquisitor General of Spain and Archbishop of Toledo, Silíceo. Even though Pope Paul IV and Silíceo’s former pupil, King Philip II, ratified the archbishop’s statutes in 1555 and 1556, respectively—in spite of the latter’s earlier opposition to it<sup>19</sup>—the authority and impetuous

---

<sup>15</sup> Sicroff, “*El Lumen ad revelationem gentium* de Alonso de Oropesa,” pp. 655–64.

<sup>16</sup> See Sicroff, *Estatutos*, p. 24.

<sup>17</sup> See Henry Kamen, *The Spanish Inquisition* ([New York]: New American Library, 1965), p. 12.

<sup>18</sup> Eusebio Rey speaks about Silíceo’s “fiebre estatutista” and “psicosis nacional” (“San Ignacio de Loyola y el problema de los cristianos nuevos,” *Razón y Fe* 153 (1956), p. 184). See also Henry Kamen, “Una crisis de conciencia en la Edad de Oro en España: Inquisición contra Limpieza de sangre,” *Bulletin Hispanique* 88/3–4 (1986), p. 330.

<sup>19</sup> See Rey, “San Ignacio,” p. 187; Feliciano Cereceda, *Diego Laínez en la Europa religiosa de su tiempo: 1512–1565* (Madrid: Ediciones Cultura Hispánica, 1945–6), p. 399; Francisco de Borja Medina, S.J., “Ignacio de Loyola y la ‘limpieza de sangre,’” in Juan Plazaola, S.J., ed., *Ignacio de Loyola y su tiempo: congreso internacional de historia (9–13 septiembre, 1991)* (Bilbao: Mensajero/Universidad de Deusto, 1992), pp. 8–9; Sicroff, *Estatutos*, pp. 139 and 169–72; and Isabella Ianuzzi, “Mentalidad inquisitorial y jesuitas: el enfrentamiento entre el Cardenal Silíceo y la Compañía de Jesús,” *Cuadernos de Historia Moderna* 24 (2000): 11–31.

character of Silíceo did not deter Ignatius of Loyola and his converso successor, Diego Laínez (1512–65).<sup>20</sup> Encouraged by their close converso collaborators, they vigorously opposed the Inquisitor's attempts to preclude conversos from joining the Jesuits.<sup>21</sup> They also had to counter the Jesuit provincial superior for Spain and Loyola's relative, Antonio Araoz (1515–73),<sup>22</sup> who—abetted by his penitent, the prince of Éboli, Ruy Gómez de Silva (c. 1516–73)—made himself the Jesuit harbinger of the Iberian policy of *pureza de sangre*.<sup>23</sup>

In a letter addressed to the Jesuit Francisco de Villanueva (1509–57), Loyola straightforwardly wrote that in no way would the Jesuit Constitutions accept the policy of the archbishop, who, according to Loyola, should take care of his own business rather than interfering with the internal issues of the Society.<sup>24</sup> The problem was that the flourishing College at Alcalá de Henares—which was inaugurated by the Jesuit Villanueva in 1546 and became a mine of Jesuit (converso) vocations—was located within Silíceo's diocesan jurisdiction.<sup>25</sup> In this delicate affair, Loyola was aided by his plenipotentiary emissary, Jerónimo Nadal [Morey] (1507–80), who visited the Inquisitor in February 1554. In communion with Loyola, Nadal insisted that the Jesuit Constitutions did not discriminate between candidates of the Society on the basis of lineage.<sup>26</sup> Nadal, therefore, during his visit to Iberia admitted a handful of converso candidates. In a heated debate over the admission of one of them, Luis (Diego) de Santander (c. 1527–99), Nadal frankly

---

<sup>20</sup> Diego Laínez: \*1512 Almazán (Soria); †1565 Rome; priest in 1537; professed in 1541. On the Jewish ancestry of Laínez, see Carlos Carrete Parrondo, ed., *Fontes Iudaeorum Regni Castellae* (Salamanca: Universidad Pontificia de Salamanca; [Granada]: Universidad de Granada, 1981–[1997]), vol. 4: “Los judeoconversos de Almazán, 1501–1505: origen familiar de los Laínez.”

<sup>21</sup> See Rey, “San Ignacio,” pp. 187–90; and especially Medina, “Ignacio de Loyola,” pp. 579–615.

<sup>22</sup> Antonio Araoz: \*1515 Vergara (Guipúzcoa, Spain); † 13 February 1573 Madrid; SJ 1538; priest in 1541; professed in 1542 (see *DHCJ* 1:215–6). On Araoz's anti-converso sentiments, see Medina, “Ignacio de Loyola,” pp. 8–9.

<sup>23</sup> See Rey, “El problema de cristianos nuevos,” pp. 187–90; and especially Medina, “Ignacio de Loyola,” pp. 8–10.

<sup>24</sup> [Rome] 2 January 1552, in *Cartas de San Ignacio de Loyola*, 6 vols. (Madrid: La V.E. Hijo de D.E. Aguado, 1874–89), vol. 3, pp. 13–21.

<sup>25</sup> Loyola employed Villanueva also in the affair of the converso Juan de Ávila's entrance to the Society (see Manuel Ruiz Jurado, S.J., “San Juan de Avila y la Compañía de Jesús,” *AHSI* 40 (1971): 153–72). See also *DHCJ* 4:3976–7, where the author avoids the true motive of the conflict between the Society and the Inquisitor.

<sup>26</sup> See *Mon Nadal*, 1:233; and Antonio Astrain, S.J., *Introducción Histórica a la Historia de la Compañía de Jesus* (Madrid: Rivadeneyra, 1912), p. 353.

and proudly replied: “We [Jesuits] take pleasure in admitting those of Jewish ancestry.”<sup>27</sup>

The heated polemics over Silíceo’s legislation were still echoed three decades later in Diego de Simancas’s *Defensio Toletani Statuti a Sede Apostolica saepe confirmati, pro his, qui bono et incontaminato genere nati sunt* [The Defense of the Toledan Statute, which was often confirmed by the Apostolic See for those who were born of good and uncontaminated lineage] (1573), despite the fact that the Inquisition in 1572 prohibited further discussion of the purity-of-blood issue.<sup>28</sup> This text—whose publication date coincides with the Jesuit Third General Congregation, in which the anti- and pro-converso lobbies collided—is of special concern here. Not only because—in contrast to the early Jesuit leadership—it defended Silíceo’s statutes but also because Simancas’s tract may have been utilized by some Jesuits to promote similar anti-converso legislation in the Society of Jesus during the decade of fervent discriminatory propaganda that preceded General Congregation 5 (1593). Indeed, a Jesuit from Toledo copied many excerpts from Simancas’s book in 1591. They are preserved in the Jesuit Archives of Rome but until now have remained unnoticed, because a Jesuit archivist inserted the manuscript (*Defensio Statuti Toletani*)—whose genre he did not recognize—into a folder containing documents (*statuta*) related to the foundation of the Jesuit College at Toledo.<sup>29</sup> These excerpts are analyzed in Chapter One for the first time. In the context of earlier anti-converso texts, they suggest the genealogy of modern racism, from Sarmiento to Silíceo to Simancas to anti-converso Jesuit legislation, and they indicate the correlation between early modern institutional Catholicism and the new racism developing in Spain and spreading outwards.

In this perspective, the anti-discrimination policy of the early Jesuit leadership constituted an act of bold and tenacious resistance to the early modern Iberian *Zeitgeist*. As a result, the minority of Jesuits of Jewish ancestry, socially and psychologically bonded one to another or dissociated from one another, shaped the history of the early Society of Jesus. They held the highest administrative offices, defined the Society’s institutional development and spirituality, revised Loyola’s historio-

---

<sup>27</sup> *Mon Nadal*, 2:21.

<sup>28</sup> See Sicroff, *Estatutos*, p. 178.

<sup>29</sup> ARSI, *Fondo Gesuitico, Toledo 1641*.



graphy by assigning it an inflated anti-Protestant character, filled the ranks of linguistically adroit missionaries in Asia and the Americas, authoritatively represented the Society at the Council of Trent, significantly contributed to the transformation of the Society into the first teaching order and to the placement of Greco-Roman culture in the center of the Jesuit school curriculum, (influenced by the Dominicans from the School of Salamanca) boldly offered a new epistemological frame to casuistry as a transition from medieval Tutorism to modern Probabilism,<sup>30</sup> developed a new discipline of moral theology, and staffed the papal penitentiary office at St. Peter's basilica in Rome. Some came from families who generously supported the work of the Society and the foundation of a number of Jesuit colleges; others enthusiastically engaged in many other extraordinary literary, diplomatic, and scientific endeavors (especially popular among them were different missions dealing with "heretics" and schismatics). "By their sanctity and learning they rendered the Society illustrious," as the Jesuit García Girón de Alarcón put it.<sup>31</sup>

On a much larger scale than the historian Marcel Bataillon has intuitively suggested,<sup>32</sup> these contributions by Jesuits of Jewish ancestry helped to shape Early Modern Catholicism<sup>33</sup> by complementing the work of their distinguished Iberian converso fellows, such as Hernando de Talavera (1428–1507),<sup>34</sup> Joan Lluís Vives (1492–1540),<sup>35</sup>

---

<sup>30</sup> See Robert A. Maryks, *Saint Cicero and the Jesuits. The Influence of the Liberal Arts on the Adoption of Moral Probabilism* (Aldershot: Ashgate, 2008), passim.

<sup>31</sup> See Alarcón's memorial in ARSI, *Instit.* 184/I, ff. 297<sup>r</sup>–312<sup>v</sup>. The same argument appears in Diego de Guzmán's memorial (ARSI, *Instit.* 186e, f. 255<sup>v</sup>), as we shall see in Chapter Four.

<sup>32</sup> Pierre-Antoine Fabre, ed., *Marcel Bataillon. Les Jésuites dans l'Espagne du XVI<sup>e</sup> siècle* (Paris: Les Belles Lettres, 2009), p. 238.

<sup>33</sup> John W. O'Malley coined this term. See his *Trent and All That: Renaming Catholicism in the Early Modern Era* (Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 2000), and my translation of it into Italian, *Trento e dintorni. Per una nuova definizione del cattolicesimo nell'età moderna* (Rome: Bulzoni, 2005).

<sup>34</sup> See Sicroff, *Estatutos*, pp. 13–4. Talavera, who was the Jeronymite bishop of Ávila and the confessor of Queen Isabella, wrote on sacramental confession (*Breve forma de confesar*), a preferred subject of Jesuit conversos—see Maryks, *Saint Cicero and the Jesuits*, pp. 32–48. He was also very engaged in the apostolate with Moriscos, as were many converso Jesuits. For his portrayal, see, for example, Roth, *Conversos, Inquisition*, pp. 152–4; and David Coleman, *Creating Christian Granada: Society & Religious Culture in an Old-World Frontier City, 1492–1600* (Ithaca, N.Y.: Cornell University Press, 2003), pp. 82–7.

<sup>35</sup> See Miguel Battlori, "Las obras de Luis Vives en los colegios jesuiticos del siglo XVI," in J. Ijsewijn and Angel Losada, eds, *Erasmus in Hispania, Vives in Belgio. Acta colloquii Brugensis, 1985* (Leuven: Peeters, 1986), pp. 121–45; and Valentín Moreno

St. Juan de Ávila (1500–69),<sup>36</sup> Luis de Granada (1504–88),<sup>37</sup> St. Teresa of Ávila (1515–82),<sup>38</sup> Benito Arias Montano (1527–98),<sup>39</sup> Luis de León (1528–91),<sup>40</sup> St. Juan de la Cruz (1542–91), and many others.<sup>41</sup>

However, after the death in 1572 of Francisco de Borja,<sup>42</sup> the grandson of Pope Alexander Borgia (r. 1492–1503) and the third superior

---

Gallego, “Notas historiográficas al encuentro de Loyola y Vives,” in Juan Plazaola, ed., *Ignacio de Loyola y su tiempo: congreso internacional de historia (9–13 setiembre, 1991)* (Bilbao: Mensajero/Universidad de Deusto, 1992), pp. 901–8.

<sup>36</sup> His relation to the Society of Jesus will be discussed below.

<sup>37</sup> See his *De frequenti Communione libellus* (1591), another preferred Jesuit topic, and a biography of Juan de Ávila, *Vida del Padre Maestro Juan de Ávila y las partes que ha de tener un predicador del Evangelio* (1588) that he discussed with the converso Jesuit Pedro de Ribadeneira, about whom much will be discussed below.

<sup>38</sup> José Gómez-Menor, “El linaje toledano de santa Teresa y de san Juan de la Cruz,” *Toletum* 45–46 (1969–70): 88–141. On the relationship between Teresa and the Jesuits, see Alberto Risco, “Una opinión sobre los tres primeros confesores jesuitas de santa Teresa de Jesús (Cetina, Prádanos, B. Álvarez),” *Boletín de la Real Academia de la historia* 80 (1922): 462–9; Félix Rodríguez, “Santa Teresa de Jesús y sus consejeros jesuitas,” *Manresa* 59 (1987): 309–11; Joaquín Montoya, *L’amore scambievolmente e non mai interrotto tra S. Teresa e la Compagnia di Gesù* (Lucca: presso Francesco Bonsignori, 1794); Cándido Dalmases, “Santa Teresa y los Jesuitas. Precisando fechas y datos,” *AHSI* 35 (1966): 347–78; Ugo de Miesi, “Teresa d’Avila e i Padri della Compagnia di Gesù,” *La Civiltà Cattolica* 133 (1982): 234–43; Alban Goodier, “St. Teresa and the Society of Jesus,” *The Month* 168 (1936): 395–405; Ignacio Iglesias, “Santa Teresa de Jesús y la espiritualidad ignaciana,” *Manresa* 54 (1982): 291–311; Enrique Jorge, “San Francisco de Borja y Santa Teresa de Jesús,” *Manresa* 46 (1974): 43–64; Enrique Jorge Pardo, “Santa Teresa de Ávila y la Compañía de Jesús en el siglo XVI,” *Razón y fe* 166 (1962): 293–306; and Manuel Prados Muñoz, “Santa Teresa y la Compañía de Jesús,” *Manresa* 54 (1982): 75–8.

<sup>39</sup> See Antonio Pérez Goyena, “Arias Montano y los Jesuitas,” *Estudios eclesiásticos* 7 (1928): 273–317; Robert Giammanco, “Sull’inautenticità del memoriale antigesuitico attribuito a Benito Arias Montano,” *AHSI* 26 (1957): 276–84; and Sicroff, *Estatutos*, p. 13.

<sup>40</sup> See Sicroff, *Estatutos*, pp. 13 and 16–22.

<sup>41</sup> Rey argued that Bataillon’s claim of the influence of the converso Juan de Ávila and Láinez on Catholic reform lacks proofs (see Rey, “San Ignacio,” p. 176). See the contrary view of Sicroff (*Estatutos*, p. 13): “No cabe duda de que la historia española habría sido muy diferente de lo que fue si hubiera seguido las corrientes religiosas e intelectuales introducidas por españoles de la estirpe de Talavera, Luis de León y Arias Montano.” Most Jewish scholars working on converso history—who are often more familiar with the history of the Protestant Reformation than the Catholic Reformation—associate the Iberian conversos more with the former than with the latter. A blatant example of this historiographical tendency is Yovel’s recent book on conversos and their relation to modernity. See Yirmiyahu Yovel, *The Other Within: The Marranos. Split Identity and Emerging Modernity* (Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 2009), especially pp. 246–62.

<sup>42</sup> Francisco de Borja: \*1510 Gandía; SJ 1546; †1572 Rome; priest in 1551; professed in 1548. It is interesting to note that it was Borja’s grandfather, Pope Alexander VI, who rewarded the Aragonese King Ferdinand for his anti-converso policy with the title of “Catholic Monarch.” Borja’s pro-converso policy will be studied below.



general, a close-knit anti-converso party gained ground within the Society, as indicated by the archival material on the Italo-Portuguese sabotage of the election of Juan Alfonso de Polanco as Borja's successor during the Third General Congregation (1573), which we shall analyze in Chapter Three.<sup>43</sup> Upon election as vicar general, the converso Polanco was the most prominent figure in the Society of Jesus; he had been a senior administrator in the general curia in Rome since his appointment by Loyola in 1547 as Society's secretary. Because the previous two vicars general, Laínez and Borja, had been elected superiors general at the subsequent general congregations, Polanco was considered the most probable candidate for this highest post in the Society. After all—to the dismay of the Italian Benedetto Palmio (1523–98) and the Portuguese—the Spanish electors dominated the congregation. They governed all but one Italian province, and the province of Portugal also was in their hands.<sup>44</sup>

Contributors to the *Mercurian Project* have recently discussed this anti-Polanco campaign more critically. Francisco de Borja Medina, S.J., pointed out that even though the Italian Benedetto Palmio denied in his unpublished autobiography the charge that he was part of the Portuguese intrigue during the congregation, his anti-Spanish tendencies were well known. Medina further pointed out that “the veiled attacks against Juan Alonso [*sic*] de Polanco for his Judeo-Christian ancestors were directed, in reality, against the Spanish nation.”<sup>45</sup> Moreover, John Padberg, S.J., argued that Palmio pressed Antonio Possevino “to do battle for his homeland Italy by voting against a Spaniard.”<sup>46</sup> Finally, Mario Fois, S.J., suggested that a distinction must be made between the anti-Spanish motivation of Palmio (and other Italians)

---

<sup>43</sup> See John W. Padberg, Martin D. O'Keefe, and John L. McCarthy, eds, *For Matters of Greater Moment: The First Thirty Jesuit General Congregations: A Brief History and a Translation of the Decrees* (St. Louis, Mo.: The Institute of Jesuit Sources, 1994), p. 135.

<sup>44</sup> On Portuguese-Spanish tensions fueled by the patriotism of the former, see Nuno da Silva Gonçalves, “Jesuits in Portugal,” in Thomas M. McCoog, *The Mercurian Project: Forming Jesuit Culture, 1573–1580* (Rome: Institutum Historicum Societatis Iesu, 2004), pp. 719–20.

<sup>45</sup> See his “Everard Mercurian and Spain. Some Burning Issues,” in McCoog, *Mercurian Project*, p. 945.

<sup>46</sup> See his “The Third General Congregation,” in McCoog, *Mercurian Project*, p. 54 (the information comes from Astrain, *Historia*, 3:7–8, but it can be traced back to Possevino's memorial, ARSI, *Congr. 20b*, f. 210<sup>v</sup>).

and the anti-converso opposition of the Portuguese group.<sup>47</sup> As we shall see, however, the archival material that we examine in this book reveals that the real intention of both Palmio and the Portuguese was to impede the election of Polanco or any other *converso* candidate. “Spanish” was a euphemism for “Jew/converso,” and the “anti-Spanish” campaign during the Third General Congregation was thus merely a camouflage for the Italo-Portuguese anti-converso conspiracy.

In spite of the death of the royal minister, Ruy Gómez de Silva, and his protégé Araoz in 1573, the anti-converso lobby found support in the newly elected superior general Everard Mercurian (1514–80), who from the very first years of his office “cleansed the house”: he removed from Rome (and possibly from Italy or even Europe) almost all Spanish Jesuits, especially those who are accused in Palmio’s memorial of being part of the converso lobby.<sup>48</sup>

Ironically, Mercurian’s segregation policy created new opportunities for some converso or pro-converso Jesuits who had occupied high-ranking positions in the Jesuit administration to reinvent themselves as prolific writers. Three clear examples are Polanco, who spent the last years of his life composing the first multi-volume chronicle of the Society;<sup>49</sup> Nadal, who produced his monumental *Evangelicae Historiae Imagines* with 153 superb engravings by Bernardino Passeri (d. c. 1590), Maarten de Vos (1532–1603), the brothers Wierix, and others;<sup>50</sup> and especially Pedro de Ribadeneyra (1525–1611), who between 1574 and 1611 composed an impressive number of writings on history, historiography, asceticism, and politics, many of which were multi-edited and translated, assigning him a foremost place among the writers of the Spanish *Siglo de Oro*, as we shall see in Chapter Three.

Arguably, the discriminatory policy of Mercurian—one that was subsequently endorsed also by Claudio Acquaviva (1543–1615)—and the defeat of the converso lobby during the general congregation triggered the anti-Roman movement by Spanish Jesuits known as the *memoria-*

<sup>47</sup> Fois, “Everard Mercurian,” in McCoog, *Mercurian Project*, pp. 21–5.

<sup>48</sup> See Palmio’s autobiography, ARSI, *Vitae* 164, ff. 42<sup>r</sup>–45<sup>v</sup>; Rey (“El problema de cristianos nuevos,” p. 187) mistakenly argued that Mercurian maintained the pro-converso policy of Loyola and Laínez.

<sup>49</sup> MHSI, *Chronicon*, 6 vols.

<sup>50</sup> Gerónimo [Jerónimo] Nadal, *Evangelicae historiae imagines: ex ordine Evangeliorum quae toto anno in Missae sacrificio recitantur, in ordinem temporis vitae Christi digestae* (Antwerp: Martin Nutius [Plantin], 1593).

*listas*.<sup>51</sup> Contrary to what the closet-converso Ribadeneyra argued (in an attempt to minimize the participation of his fellow converso Jesuits in this movement),<sup>52</sup> some members were indeed of converso background. In an alleged plot against their superior general in Rome, they sent secret memorials to the Spanish court, the Inquisition, and the Holy See, asking for reform of the Jesuit Institute and, especially, for the autonomy of the Spanish Jesuit provinces.<sup>53</sup> As in the case of the earlier *comunero* movement in Spain,<sup>54</sup> the vexed question of whether the participation of conversos in the *memorialistas* movement gives it an exclusively converso character needs a more comprehensive and unprejudiced answer, which exceeds the scope of the present book.<sup>55</sup>

The converso character of the *memorialistas* movement was indeed accentuated by the anti-converso lobby, which after the election of Acquaviva (1581) included other high-ranking officials in the Jesuit curia, such as Paul Hoffaeus (c. 1530–1608), Manuel Rodrigues (1534–96), and Lorenzo Maggio (1531–1605). Their Italian predecessor, Assistant General Benedetto Palmio, had fueled their anti-converso bias. It is evident in a manuscript that has remained virtually unknown for more than 400 years (its critical edition is published in the appendix to the present book). In it, the author relates how “the multitude and insolence of Spanish neophytes” in the Order had been growing. According to him, the first two superiors general, Ignatius of Loyola and Diego Laínez, had excluded conversos, but conversos subsequently had found refuge in Laínez’s successor, Francisco de Borja. It was true that the converso party had been defeated during the Third General Congregation in 1573, Palmio related, but they were insufficiently controlled by the newly elected superior general, Mercurian, and consequently revolted against Rome under his successor, Acquaviva.

---

<sup>51</sup> See *DHCJ* 3:2615–6.

<sup>52</sup> See *Mon Rib.* 2:191.

<sup>53</sup> For an interpretation of this movement through the lens of the crisis of the “partido castellano” and the transformation of the Spanish monarchy, see José Martínez Millán, “La crisis del ‘partido castellano’ y la transformación de la Monarquía Hispánica,” *Cuadernos de Historia Moderna* 2 (2003): 15–17.

<sup>54</sup> See, for example, J.I. Gutiérrez Nieto, “Los conversos y el movimiento comunero,” *Hispania* 94 (1964): 237–61.

<sup>55</sup> See Francisco de Borja Medina, “Los precursores de Vieira: Jesuitas andaluzes y castellanos en favor de los cristianos nuevos,” in *Terceiro centenário da morte do Padre António Vieira. Congresso internacional. Actas* (Braga: Universidade Católica Portuguesa, 1999), pp. 494–7, where he criticizes Astrain’s biased judgment on the movement, expressed in the latter’s *Historia de la Compañía de Jesús en la asistencia de España*.

This and other documents by Acquaviva and his three assistants that we critically scrutinize in Chapter Three undeniably reveal that these men orchestrated the discrimination of Christians of Jewish lineage into law at the Fifth General Congregation (1593), as punishment for the alleged participation of conversos in the revolt against their way of governing the Society. Ironically, this congregation was convened because of pressure from two converso Jesuits, José de Acosta (1540–1600) and Cardinal Francisco de Toledo (1532–96).

There is no doubt, however, that the 1593 decree—proclaiming that Jewish (and Muslim) ancestry, no matter how distant, was an insurmountable impediment for admission to the Society—ignored Loyola’s desires as expressed in the Jesuit Constitutions and contradicted the practice of the first three generalates. The lineage-hunting season began. The measure, which was voted for by all but two delegates, was so harsh that it scandalized even the Cardinal Archbishop of Toledo and Inquisitor General, Gaspar de Quiroga (1507–94), who affirmed that the Society dishonored itself by promulgating such a law.<sup>56</sup> Indeed, Quiroga, who held the reins of the Spanish Inquisition between 1573 and 1594—during the bout of the most intense Jesuit anti-converso offensive—restricted the employment of purity-of-blood laws, a policy that reflected a shift in the approach of Philip II’s council to the converso problem in the last decades of the sixteenth century.<sup>57</sup> As a matter of fact, the Jesuit Sixth General Congregation mitigated the 1593 decree in 1608,<sup>58</sup> if only superficially, because of strong opposition from many Jesuits led by Antonio Possevino (1533–1611), Diego de Guzmán (c. 1522–1606), Ribadeneyra, Girón de Alarcón, and Juan de Mariana (1536–1624). These men’s writings against discrimination

---

<sup>56</sup> On Quiroga’s relationship with Loyola, Láinez, Borja, and especially with Ribadeneyra and Mariana, see Henar Pizarro Llorente, *Un gran patrón en la corte de Felipe II: Don Gaspar de Quiroga* (Madrid: Universidad Pontificia Comillas, 2004), pp. 104–7. He had an affable relationship also with Alfonso Salmerón (see ARSI, *Ita 119*, f. 195 and *Ita 120*, f. 131).

<sup>57</sup> See Kamen, “Crisis de conciencia,” pp. 322–56, and the revised English version of this article in Henry Kamen, *Crisis and Change in Early Modern Spain* (Aldershot: Ashgate, 1993), part VII, pp. 1, 8–9, 12–3. Kamen is incorrect, stating that the 1593 decree regarded only Spain and that it was revoked in 1608 (p. 13). The first part of the error was followed by Stafford Poole in his “The Politics of *limpieza de sangre*: Juan de Ovando and His Circle in the Reign of Philip II,” *The Americas* 55 (1999), p. 367. The decree was universal and was abrogated only in 1946, as we shall see below.

<sup>58</sup> See Rey, (“El problema de cristianos nuevos,” p. 203); and Medina, “Los precursores de Vieira,” pp. 511–3.

and in defense of the indispensable minority of Jesuits of Jewish ancestry are analyzed in Chapter Four. Amid other arguments, Possevino would point out that discrimination against conversos had ramifications for the relationship with aboriginal peoples with whom the Jesuits worked as missionaries. Apparently, the Church at large became aware of the problem, as the canonical quotation of the Benedictine Bishop Prudencio de Sandoval (1553–1620) from his *Vida y Hechos del Emperador Carlos V* (1604) shows:

I do not censure the Christian compassion, which embraces all, for, then I would be in mortal error, and I know that in the Divine presence there is no distinction between Gentile and Jew, because One alone is the Lord of all. Yet who can deny that in the descendants of the Jews there persists and endures the evil inclination of their ancient ingratitude and lack of understanding, just as in the Negroes [there persists] the inseparable quality of their blackness [*negrura*]? For if the latter should unite themselves a thousand times with white women, the children are born with the dark color of the father. Similarly, it is not enough for the Jew to be three parts aristocrat [*hidalgo*] or Old Christian, for one family line alone [*solo una raza*] defiles and corrupts him...<sup>59</sup>

Racial tensions played a pivotal role in early Jesuit history<sup>60</sup> (bearing in mind the obvious semantic difference of the early modern term of *raza*, but not its utter dissociation with modern racism or anti-Semitism)—to which the texts of Palmio, Acquaviva, Hoffaeus, Rodrigues, Maggio, and many other manuscript sources that we examine in the present book unequivocally testify. Nonetheless, the battle within the Order against those Jesuits with Jewish ancestry has been insufficiently acknowledged and has even been suppressed in scholarship on the subject.

In their writings on Benedetto Palmio, for example, two Italian Jesuit historians of high repute, Pietro Tacchi Venturi (1861–1956) and Mario Scaduto (1907–95), omitted Palmio's converso-phobic attitude. Tacchi Venturi, also involved in negotiations between the Vatican and the Mussolini regime regarding the fate of the Jews

---

<sup>59</sup> Quoted from Yerushalmi, *Assimilation and racial Anti-Semitism*, pp. 16–7. This relationship between converso discrimination and the discrimination of aboriginal peoples has been recently explored by Jonathan Boyarin in his *The Unconverted Self: Jews, Indians and the Identity of Christian Europe* (Chicago, Ill.: University of Chicago Press, 2009).

<sup>60</sup> For a description of various scholarly approaches in the periodization of the persecution of minorities, see David Nirenberg, *Communities of Violence: Persecution of Minorities in the Middle Ages* (Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1996), especially pp. 6–7.

1938–43,<sup>61</sup> published parts of Palmio’s autobiography, but not those that reveal his discriminatory lobbying. Scaduto knew both Palmio’s “moving” autobiography and the memorial, yet never discussed the racial tensions contained therein. Indeed, in his lists of the primary sources used, Scaduto either omitted the codex *Institutum 106*<sup>62</sup> or bypassed the part containing the memorial.<sup>63</sup> Furthermore, in one of his works he portrayed Palmio as “the first and the ripest fruit of the Italian harvest.”<sup>64</sup> The Belgian Jesuit historian Jean-François Gilmont (b. 1934) also omitted some of Palmio’s autobiography.<sup>65</sup> A laconic note about the resemblance between the latter part of Palmio’s autobiography and his memorial, made by the renowned Spanish Jesuit historian Cándido de Dalmases (1906–86), editor of a volume in the series *Monumenta Historica Societatis Iesu*,<sup>66</sup> makes clear that he knew the content of Palmio’s memorial. However, he never divulged it.

Until the present work there has been no sustained, systematic analysis of the correlation between the rise of the Society of Jesus and that of *limpieza* mania in the sixteenth century and no analysis of how implementation of the purity-of-blood laws had different stages in early Jesuit history. There are, however, a few fragmentary studies on the history of early converso Jesuits. The most important of them regard the relation of Ignatius of Loyola to the problem of the New Christians. The first such study was published in 1956 by the Spanish Jesuit Eusebio Rey,<sup>67</sup> the second one was a long article by the American Jesuit James Reites, published in 1981,<sup>68</sup> a continuation of his dissertation work from 1977 at the Jesuit Gregorian University of Rome, which unfortunately was never published.<sup>69</sup> Still before Reites’s

---

<sup>61</sup> See Giacomo Martina, *Storia della Compagnia di Gesù in Italia (1814–1983)* (Brescia: Morcelliana, 2003), pp. 276–7.

<sup>62</sup> See Mario Scaduto, *L’Opera di Francesco Borgia, 1565–1572* (Rome: Edizioni “La Civiltà cattolica,” 1992), p. 20\*; and *L’epoca di Giacomo Laínez. L’azione. 1556–1565* (Rome: Edizioni “La Civiltà Cattolica,” 1974), p. xvi.

<sup>63</sup> See Mario Scaduto, *L’epoca di Giacomo Laínez. Il governo. 1556–1565* (Rome: Edizioni “La Civiltà Cattolica,” 1964), p. xx.

<sup>64</sup> Scaduto, *Governo*, p. 316.

<sup>65</sup> See Jean-François Gilmont, *Les écrits spirituels des premiers jésuites* (Rome: IHSI, 1961), pp. 39–40.

<sup>66</sup> *Fontes Narr.*, 3:154, n. 9.

<sup>67</sup> Rey, “San Ignacio,” pp. 117–204.

<sup>68</sup> James W. Reites, S.J., “St. Ignatius of Loyola and the Jews,” *Studies in the Spirituality of the Jesuits* 13/4 (1981).

<sup>69</sup> James W. Reites, S.J., *St. Ignatius and the People of the Book: An Historical-Theological Study of St. Ignatius of Loyola’s Spiritual Motivation in His Dealings with the Jews and Muslims* (Rome: Pontificia Universitas Gregoriana, 1977).

works, two important articles on more specific issues pertaining to the history of Jesuits of Jewish ancestry had appeared: the first one on the converso genealogy of the prominent Spanish Jesuit Pedro de Ribadeneyra, published by José Gómez-Menor in 1976, whose results were taken into consideration only by a few scholars;<sup>70</sup> and a year later the Jesuit Josef Wicki published an article on the role that New Christians played in the Jesuit missionary enterprise in the Far East until the generalate of Acquaviva.<sup>71</sup> Another decade elapsed before the American Jesuit John P. Donnelly published an article on the most probable Jewish ancestry of Antonio Possevino.<sup>72</sup> Scholarship on the subject intensified in the 1990s, to which the Spanish Jesuit Francisco de Borja Medina especially contributed. He tenaciously argued (contrary to the Anglo-Saxon scholarship of Reites, Donnelly, and Munitiz) that anti-converso sentiments in the sixteenth century had only socio-religious, not racial, origins.<sup>73</sup> The only article on the subject in the French language was published in 1999 by the French Jesuit Pierre-Antoine Fabre, who explored the reasons why conversos were willing to join the Society of Jesus.<sup>74</sup> In the last decade, only three articles on the converso Jesuit question have appeared: in 2004 the Jesuit Joseph A. Munitiz published an article on the legal support given to the Jesuit anti-converso legislation by the famous Jesuit jurist Francisco Suárez,<sup>75</sup> and Thomas Cohen published his excellent analysis of Possevino's first pro-converso memorial,<sup>76</sup> which later found its extension in the

---

<sup>70</sup> José Gómez-Menor, "La progenie ebrea del padre Pedro de Ribadeneyra S.I. (hijo del jurado de Polendo Alvaro Fusillo Ortiz de Cisneros)," *Sefarad* 36 (1976): 307–32.

<sup>71</sup> Josef Wicki, S.J., "Die 'cristão-novos' in der Indischen Provinz der Gesellschaft Jesu von Ignatius bis Acquaviva," *AHSI* 92 (1977): 342–61.

<sup>72</sup> John P. Donnelly, "Antonio Possevino and Jesuits of Jewish Ancestry," *AHSI* 109 (1986): 3–29. See also the Italian "summary" of this article: Alberto Castaldini, "L'incognita marrana. Ipotesi sulle origini familiari del gesuita Antonio Possevino (1533–1611)," *Atti e memorie dell'Accademia Nazionale Virgiliana* 69 (2001): 129–40.

<sup>73</sup> Medina, "Ignacio de Loyola," pp. 579–615, whose abridged version was reprinted nine years later under the same title in *Encuentro Islamo-Cristiano*, 339–40 (Julio-Agosto 2000): 2–16; idem, "San Ignacio y los Judíos," *Anuario del Instituto Ignacio de Loyola* 4 (1997): 37–63; and idem, "Precursores de Vieira," pp. 491–519.

<sup>74</sup> Pierre-Antoine Fabre, "La conversion infinie des conversos. Des 'nouveaux-chrétiens' dans la Compagnie de Jésus au 16e siècle," *Annales HSS* 4 (1999): 875–93.

<sup>75</sup> Joseph A. Munitiz, S.J., "Francisco Suárez and the exclusion of men of Jewish or Moorish descent from the Society of Jesus," *AHSI* 73 (2004): 327–40.

<sup>76</sup> Thomas Cohen, "Nation, Lineage, and Jesuit Unity in Antonio Possevino's Memorial to Everard Mercurian (1576)," in *A Companhia de Jesus na Peninsula Iberica nos secs. XVI e XVII*, 2 vols (Porto: Universidade do Porto Centro Inter-Universitário de História da Espiritualidade/Instituto do Cultura Portuguesa, 2004), vol. 1, pp. 543–61.



convincing parallelism between the anti-converso Jesuit legislation and the exclusion of native peoples from the Society.<sup>77</sup> Just before the latter article by Cohen was published in *The Cambridge Companion to the Jesuits*, the French Jesuit Marc Rastoin issued his concise yet fresh overview of the early Jesuit converso history.<sup>78</sup> To conclude this brief bibliographical *excursus*, it is interesting to note that the most brilliant and authoritative history of the early Jesuits published in 1993 by the American Jesuit John W. O'Malley dedicated just four pages to the combined Jewish and converso questions—a proportion that does not fully reflect the role that converso Jesuits played in the foundation and progress of the Society of Jesus.<sup>79</sup>

The present book aims to fill the gaps of scholarship on the subject in two ways: by a different reading of the sources and secondary literature already known; and by an analysis of the archival material that has been known little or not at all. The clarification of blind spots in early Jesuit history that I attempt on the following pages may well shed light on other discriminatory problems—like those so dramatically embodied in the meandering Shakespearean characters not only of Shylock and Jessica but also of Antonio—with which the Jesuit Order grapples to this very day.

---

<sup>77</sup> Thomas Cohen, "Racial and ethnic minorities in the Society of Jesus," in *The Cambridge Companion to the Jesuits*, ed. Thomas Worcester (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2008), pp. 199–214.

<sup>78</sup> Marc Rastoin, S.J., "The 'Conversos' in the Society of Jesus or From Windfall to Fall," in Thomas Michel, S.J., ed., *Friends on the Way: Jesuits Encounter Contemporary Judaism* (New York: Fordham University Press, 2007), pp. 8–27. See also its earlier and shorter version in French: Marc Rastoin, S.J., "Les chrétiens d'origine juive dans la Compagnie naissante," *Christus* 211 (2006): 357–63.

<sup>79</sup> John W. O'Malley, *The First Jesuits* (Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1993), pp. 188–92.





“Map of the Iberian Peninsula in 1492”



## CHAPTER ONE

### THE HISTORICAL CONTEXT OF PURITY-OF-BLOOD DISCRIMINATION (1391–1547)

*[New Christians] still hold on their lips the milk of their ancestors' recent perversity.*

Archbishop Juan Martínez Guijarro (Silíceo), 1547

The Society of Jesus could not avoid coping with the converso problem, because the Jesuits were founded by a group of Old and New Christians whose majority, as did their leader Ignatius of Loyola, originated in Iberia. In spite of the universal character of the Order envisioned by the founding fathers and of Catholicism *per se*, the vexed purity-of-blood concept produced a profound polarization in the Society as it tried to implement its mission of conversion.<sup>1</sup> Naturally, both Jesuit supporters and opponents of the purity-of-blood discrimination sought validation for their arguments in the works that had been employed in the heated discussion that had rent the Iberian Church between the first anti-converso legislation of 1449 and the Jesuit decree that legalized the converso discrimination in 1593. Moreover, the historical context of the Spanish discriminatory laws—whether discrimination by civic or ecclesiastical authorities—sheds more light on the origins of such legislation in the Society of Jesus itself.

Given this close connection between the majority of the founding fathers of the Society of Jesus and the Iberian context, this chapter aims to provide the reader with a concise historical *excursus* of the complex and abundant discussion about the concept of purity of blood. It begins in Toledo with the *Sentencia-Estatuto* of Pero de Sarmiento (1449); rests on major subsequent pro-converso works by two prominent ecclesiastical intellectuals of the mid-fifteenth century, Alonso de Cartagena and Alonso de Oropesa, whose legacy would be reflected in later pro-converso literature; and concludes again in Toledo with

---

<sup>1</sup> See the contrary view in Anna Foa, “*Limpieza* versus Mission: Church, Religious Orders, and Conversion in the Sixteenth Century” in Susan E. Myers and Steven J. McMichael, eds., *Friars and Jews in the Middle Ages and Renaissance* (Leiden: Brill, 2004), especially pp. 302–3, 306–8.

the *Estatutos* of Archbishop Silíceo (1547), which—along with the Sarmiento legislation—were eagerly defended by Bishop Diego de Simancas in his *Defensio Toletani Statuti* (Antwerp: Plantin, 1573). Arguably, the latter inspired some Jesuits in their campaign to introduce the anti-converso discriminatory laws in the Society of Jesus in the last decade of the sixteenth century.

### Sentencia-Estatuto of Pero de Sarmiento (1449)

The history of the purity-of-blood anti-converso discrimination begins with the so-called *Sentencia-Estatuto* adopted in Toledo in June 1449. It resulted from a popular uprising against the royal authority of King Juan II of Trastámara (1405–54) that was led by the city mayor (*alcalde mayor*), Pero de Sarmiento. To make the complex and long story short for the purposes of this chapter: the rebellion was provoked by an attempt by the converso Constable of Castile, Álvaro de Luna (d. 1453), to raise additional revenue of one million *maravedíes* from the citizens of Toledo for the defense of Castile against a recent invasion of the Aragonese.<sup>2</sup> Sarmiento associated this measure with the machinations of the treasurer Alonso Cota<sup>3</sup> and other Toledan conversos. They represented an affluent and influential minority among burghers, unparalleled in other European countries of the Middle Ages,<sup>4</sup> who—under royal protection—rapidly emerged after the first massive conversions propelled by the brutal *pogroms* against the “deicide Jews” in 1391.<sup>5</sup>

Recalling these allegations that had spawned a half-century of social, economic, and political resentment and combining them with the old anti-Judaism bias, a fanatical mob of Old Christians murdered several

---

<sup>2</sup> See Sarmiento’s letter to King Juan II written in May 1449, prior to his *Sentencia-Estatuto*, in Eloy Benito Ruano, *Toledo en el siglo XV; vida política* (Madrid: Consejo Superior de Investigaciones Científicas, 1961), pp. 186–90.

<sup>3</sup> See Francisco Cantera Burgos, *La familia judeo-conversa de los Cota de Toledo* (Madrid: Academia de Doctores de Madrid, 1969), pp. 11–8.

<sup>4</sup> On the social and political ascendance of conversos in this period, see, for example, Francisco Marquez Villanueva, “Conversos y cargos concejiles en el siglo XV,” *Revista de Archivos, Bibliotecas y Museos* 63 (1957): 503–40.

<sup>5</sup> For a recent presentation of the causes of the *pogroms* in 1391, see, for example, Juan Ignacio Pulido Serrano, *Los conversos en España y Portugal* (Madrid: Arco Libros, 2003), pp. 18–20.

conversos in 1449 and plundered or burned many dwellings, beginning with Cota's. What started as an anti-fiscal rebellion turned into anti-converso riots and an anti-royal war. Subsequently, seeking a veiled justification for their *laesa maiestas* offense, the city council issued the purity-of-blood legislation. Claiming a precedent of royal and canon law, it barred all Jews converted to Christianity *and* their descendants from holding public offices or testifying in Christian courts of law, because of the conversos' infamy, inability, and indignity, which allegedly stemmed from their untrustworthy faith and was proven by their continued judaizing.<sup>6</sup> According to the *Sentencia-Estatuto*, the history of the city of Toledo testified to the longtime converso plotting that can be traced back to the alliance of their Jewish ancestors with the Muslim conquerors, which had caused the death or enslavement of many old and pure (*lindos*) Christians.<sup>7</sup> More recently, with the royal money that they astutely stole, the conversos had oppressed, destroyed, and robbed the majority of Old Christians of their property in the city of Toledo, where they had been able to sneak into influential governmental posts.<sup>8</sup>

---

<sup>6</sup> "Que por quanto es notorio por derecho así canónico como civil, que los conversos de linaje de los judíos, por ser sospechosos en la fe de nuestro Señor e Salvador Jesucristo, en la cual frecuentemente vomitan de ligero, judaizando [...]. Que debemos de declarar e declaramos, pronunciar e pronunciamos, e constituimos, e ordenamos, e mandamos, que todos los dichos conversos descendientes del perverso linaje de judíos, en cualquier guisa que sea, así por virtud del derecho canónico y civil que contra ellos determina sobre las cosas de suso declaradas, como por virtud del dicho privilegio dado a esta cibdad por el dicho señor Rey de muy gloriosa memoria don Alfonso Rey de Castilla y de León, progenitor del rey nuestro señor y por otros señores reyes sus progenitores e por su alteza, jurado e confirmado, como por razón de las herejías e otros delictos, insultos, sediciones e crímenes por ellos fasta hoy cometidos e perpetrados, de que de suso se face mención, sean habidos e tenidos como el derecho los ha e tiene por infames, inhábiles, incapaces e indignos para haber todo oficio e beneficio público y privado en la dicha cibdad de Toledo, y en su tierra, término y jurisdicción con el cual pueden tener señorío en los cristianos viejos en la santa fe católica de nuestro Señor Jesucristo creyentes, facerles daños e injurias, e así mismo ser infames, inhábiles, incapaces para dar testimonio e fe como escribanos públicos o como testigos, y especialmente en esta cibdad" (Ruano, *Toledo en el siglo XV*, pp. 193–5).

<sup>7</sup> For the historical context of Jewish collaboration with the Muslim conquerors, see, for example, Serrano, *Los conversos*, p. 9; and Roth, *Conversos, Inquisition*, p. 91. According to the experts, this is the first use of the term *pure* in relation to Christians who were not of Jewish lineage, which would constitute a shift from socio-political into a racial approach to the vexed converso question.

<sup>8</sup> See Ruano, *Toledo en el siglo XV*, p. 194.

*Alonso de Cartagena and Alonso de Oropesa*

These tragic events of 1449 in Toledo and the consequent anti-converso legislation of Pero de Sarmiento provide the historical context for the major pro-converso work penned by Alonso de Santa María de Cartagena (1384–1456)—*Defensorium unitatis christianae* [In Defense of Christian Unity] (1449–50). Its author was indirectly involved in the political turmoil of Toledo, for his brother, Pedro de Cartagena, saved the life of the Constable of Castile, Álvaro de Luna, against whom the riots of 1449 began.<sup>9</sup> But what was the broader background of one of the foremost intellectuals of fifteenth-century Spain?

Alonso de Cartagena had been baptized (at the age of five or six) by his father Shlomo ha-Levi/Pablo de Santa María (c. 1351–1435), who—as chief rabbi of Burgos—converted to Christianity just before the anti-Jewish *pogroms* of 1391 and later was elected bishop of Cartagena (1402) and Burgos (1415),<sup>10</sup> while his wife remained faithful to her ancestors' faith. As was the case with a number of other conversos, Cartagena studied civil and ecclesiastical law at Salamanca; he later served as apostolic nuncio and canon in his native Burgos. King Juan II—to whom Alfonso's father and the latter's brother, Álvaro García de Santa María (1370–1460),<sup>11</sup> had lent their services—appointed Cartagena as his official envoy to the Council of Basel (1434–9). There, he expressed his conciliarist views and contributed to the formulation of a decree on the regenerative character of baptism without regard for lineage (which Pope Paul III later cited in his bull *Cupientes Iudaeos*, as the Jesuit García Girón de Alarcón would note):

For the members of the family of God and the saints become citizens by the grace of baptism, and it is much more worthy to be regenerated in the spirit than to be born in the flesh, we stipulate by this decree that [the converted Jews] of the cities and places, where they are regenerated by holy baptism, must enjoy the same privileges, exemptions, and liberties that other [Christians] receive based on their birth and origin alone.<sup>12</sup>

<sup>9</sup> See Roth, *Conversos, Inquisition*, p. 89.

<sup>10</sup> Marcel Bataillon was incorrect in stating that Shlomo ha-Levi converted *after* the 1391 *pogroms* (see Fabre, *Marcel Bataillon*, p. 237).

<sup>11</sup> On the enormous influence of the converso clan of Santa María, see Francisco Cantera Burgos, *Alvar García de Santa María y su familia de conversos. Historia de la Judería de Burgos y de sus conversos más egregios* (Madrid: Instituto Arias Montano, 1952).

<sup>12</sup> Concilium Basileense, *De his qui volunt ad fidem converti* (Decretum Sexto Basileense, sess. XIX): “Et quoniam per gratiam baptismi cives sanctorum et domestici

After Pablo de Santa María's death (1435), Pope Eugenius IV (r. 1431–47) nominated Cartagena his successor in the episcopal see of Burgos. As would be the case with many future converso Jesuits, the civic aspects of ancient Roman literature, especially Cicero and Seneca, fascinated Cartagena. At the request of Juan Alfonso de Zamora, King Juan II's secretary, he translated Cicero's *De officiis*, *De senectute*, and *De inventione* and rendered into Castilian Seneca's twelve books. He also participated in the literary debate with Italian humanists over the translation of Aristotle's *Ethics* by Leonardo Bruni (1369–1444).<sup>13</sup> Cartagena employed in his *Defensorium* these classical authorities to corroborate the biblical and patristic citations.<sup>14</sup>

The 1449 events in Toledo are also echoed—albeit less explicitly—in another work that was written around the same time by Fray Alonso de Oropesa (d. 1469). It was entitled *Lumen ad revelationem gentium et gloria plebis Dei Israel, de unitate fidei et de concordia et pacifica aequalitate fidelium* [Light for the Revelation of the Gentiles and Glory to the people of God Israel: Concerning the Unity of the Faith and Agreeable and Peaceful Equality of the Faithful], which is an allusion to the words of old Simon in the Gospel according to Luke (2:32).<sup>15</sup> The book was dedicated to Alonso Carrillo de Acuña (1413–82), Archbishop of Toledo since 1447, known for his opposition to the *pureza de sangre* laws that he and his successors would later repudiate, as we shall see in Chapter Four.<sup>16</sup>

Oropesa, who may have been a converso and had taken his name from his native town of Oropesa near Toledo, studied—as had Cartagena—at Salamanca and entered the Jeronymite monastery

---

Dei efficiuntur, longeque dignius sit regenerari spiritu, quam nasci carne, hac edictali lege statuimus ut civitatum et locorum in quibus sacro baptismate regenerantur privilegiis, libertatibus et immunitatibus gaudeant quae ratione duntaxat nativitatis et originis alii consequuntur.” In his *Defensorium* (ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 261), Cartagena stated that this decree was voted unanimously.

<sup>13</sup> On Cartagena's humanism, see, for example, Jeremy Lawrance, “Alfonso de Cartagena y los conversos,” in Alan Deyermond and Ralph Penny, eds, *Actas del Primer Congreso Anglo-Hispano* (Madrid: Editorial Castalia, 1993), vol. 2, pp. 103–20.

<sup>14</sup> For a presentation of Cartagena's thought in his *Defensorium*, see, for example, Sicroff, *Estatutos*, pp. 64–99; and Pastore, *Eresia spagnola*, pp. 5–8 and 10.

<sup>15</sup> For a presentation of Oropesa's life and thought, see Díaz's introduction to his translation (Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz, pp. 7–57); Roth, *Conversos, Inquisition*, pp. 232–3; and Pastore, *Eresia spagnola*, pp. 9–11 and 19–25.

<sup>16</sup> On Archbishop Carrillo and his lineage, see Roth, *Conversos, Inquisition*, pp. 96–7; Francisco Esteve Barba, *Alfonso Carrillo de Acuña: autor de la unidad de España* (Barcelona: Editorial Amaltea, 1943); and Barba, *The Cardinals of the Holy Roman Church* (<http://www.fiu.edu/~mirandas/bios1440a.htm>).

of Our Lady of Guadalupe in Extremadura.<sup>17</sup> Shortly thereafter, he was elected as prior of Santa Catalina in Talavera (1451/2) and later became superior general of his religious Order (in 1457 and again in 1462).<sup>18</sup> Oropesa had been composing the *Lumen* intermittently between 1450 and 1466 as a response not only to the Sarmiento anti-converso legislation but also to the subsequent anti-converso tensions in Toledo in 1461–2 that he was personally called to solve by Archbishop Carrillo, after a certain Franciscan claimed to possess a hundred foreskins that had come from circumcised Christians.<sup>19</sup>

Even though it is difficult to establish the reciprocal influence between the two treatises—sometimes it looks as though Oropesa copied parts of Cartagena’s work (or was depending on a common source?)—they employed very similar arguments in their effort to counter the Sarmiento legislation and its anti-converso bias. The main themes of Cartagena’s *Defensorium* and Oropesa’s *Lumen*, on which they based their anti-discrimination arguments, are the unity of Christian faith; the election of Israel in view of the generation of Christ; the imperfection of Israel before the birth of Jesus and its perfection in Christ; and the redemption of both Gentiles and Jews to form one people of God in harmony and peace. However, Cartagena and Oropesa give the Jews differing responsibility for the conversos’ lack of persistence in the Christian faith. The former claims that the Jews—more than pagans, heretics, or schismatics—represent a risk for the Christian faithful and that, therefore, one must preach to them their fulfillment in Christ. The latter calls for more drastic measures: the intervention of the ecclesiastical and civil authorities to prevent contacts between Christians and Jews,<sup>20</sup> a position that

---

<sup>17</sup> Alfred Sicroff, “The Jeronymite Monastery of Guadalupe in 14th and 15th century Spain,” in *Collected Studies in Honour of Américo Castro’s Eightieth Year* (Oxford: Lincombe Lodge Research Library, 1965), pp. 397–422.

<sup>18</sup> On different views about Oropesa’s ancestry, see Roth, *Conversos, Inquisition*, p. 183; and Pastore, *Eresia spagnola*, pp. 18–9. Foa in her “*Limpieza versus Mission*” (pp. 303–4) incorrectly states that Oropesa was the general of the Jerusalemite Order. The name of the Jeronymite Order comes from its patron, St. Jerome (Spanish *Jerónimo*, Lat. *Hieronimus*, thus also “Hieronymites”—a different spelling of the Order’s name).

<sup>19</sup> See, for example, Henry Charles Lea, *History of the Inquisition of Spain* (New York: Macmillan Co., 1906), vol. 1, p. 127; Fabre, ed., *Marcel Bataillon*, pp. 240–1; and Sicroff, *Estatutos*, pp. 95–6.

<sup>20</sup> See Sicroff, *Estatutos*, pp. 99–100.



would eventually materialize in the creation by Oropesa of a proto Spanish Inquisition.<sup>21</sup>

To the Bishop of Burgos and the General of the Jeronymites, the desire to strive for Christian unity originates in God's creation of humanity in the unity of one man alone. Cartagena's account, thus, begins with a literal analysis of the biblical story of the creation of Adam and Eve (Genesis 1:26): "One Adam was created, as the Scripture says: 'Let us make man to our image and likeness.' He did not say men, but man, to show that he was thinking about the unity of men from the very beginning and that he abhorred the distinction among them based on carnal birth."<sup>22</sup> In the history of the dispersion of humankind

---

<sup>21</sup> Archbishop Carrillo summoned Oropesa to resolve a new conflict between the conversos and the Old Christians that sparked in Toledo in 1461. The Jeronymite superior general punished those conversos who judaized and those Old Christians who denied the regenerative character of baptism. According to the Order's historian, José de Sigüenza, this intervention formed the first Inquisition in Castile. On Oropesa's contribution to the creation of the Spanish Inquisition, see David Nirenberg, "Mass Conversion and Genealogical Mentalities: Jews and Christians in Fifteenth-Century Spain," *Past and Present* 174 (2002): 31; Roth, *Conversos, Inquisition*, pp. 73–4, 80, 146; and Pastore, *Eresia spagnola*, p. 10. The relationship among the purity-of-blood laws, the conversos, and the foundation of the Spanish Inquisition was much more complex than Foa suggested in her "*Limpieza* and Mission," p. 303.

<sup>22</sup> "Un solo Adán fue creado como dice la escritura [...]. No dijo a los hombres, sino al hombre, para manifestar desde el mismo principio que pensaba en la unidad de los hombres y que la diferencia entre ellos, basada en la propagación de la carne, la aborrecía" (Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 107).

"Pues como permanece la Iglesia perfecta e inmutable en su estado, así también permanece universal y unida en concordia unánime de todos sus fieles, apartada de ella toda disparidad de aquellas antiguas imperfecciones, puesto que, de otro modo, ya no podría decirse que tuviera un estado nuevo y perfecto; esta sacratísima unión la solemnizó Cristo muriendo en la cruz para redención universal de todos los fieles, sin división alguna que se introduzca entre ellos, cuando adquirió para sí la única e indivisa Iglesia de todos los católicos; y tan admirable misterio ya había sido figurado antes en la formación de la primera mujer del costado del varón: de forma que, como del único varón Adán, se formaba la única mujer para la procreación universal de todos, así también del gloriosísimo Jesús, único redentor nuestro, se formase la única santa madre Iglesia para salvación universal de todos sus fieles, a quienes por el mismo hecho les encomendó una concordia unánime" (Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz, cap. XXI).

All quotations from the *Defensorium* are from the Spanish translation of the Latin original in Verdín-Díaz, ed., *Alonso de Cartagena*. The choice of the Spanish translation is dictated by Verdín-Díaz's premise that he based it on his more correct reading of the manuscript than that of the Jesuit Manuel Alonso in his *D. Alonso de Cartagena. Obispo de Burgos, Defensorium unitatis Christianae. Tratado en favor de los judíos conversos. Edición, prólogo y notas por el P. Manuel Alonso, S.I.* (Madrid: CSIC, 1943), and on the comparison of two different manuscripts.

All quotations from the *Lumen* are from the Spanish translation of the Latin original (Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz).

resulting from Cain's crime, God based his choices not on a person's lineage or origin but on righteousness. That was the case, for instance, with Noah and Job, who were Gentiles: their righteousness came from their obedience to the law of nature alone,<sup>23</sup> which Cartagena compares elsewhere to the lunar light in contrast with the solar light of Christ, who is eternal splendor and a second Adam without stain.<sup>24</sup>

God's preferences, argue Cartagena and Oropesa, do not guarantee justification; Abram's circumcision was just a mark of an alliance, not a result of his merits. This is why "God generously decided to give his people the law, so that the distinction among peoples be perceived not only in the flesh by cutting off the foreskin, but also in the customs by cutting off vices."<sup>25</sup>

For both Cartagena and Oropesa, the election of the patriarchs Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob and the story of the chosen people were

---

<sup>23</sup> See Cartagena, *Defensorium* (ed. Verdín-Díaz), pp. 108–9. Concerning Job, Oropesa quotes Augustine's *De civitate Dei*: "Ni creo que los mismos judíos se atrevan a decir que nadie perteneció al Señor fuera de los israelitas, desde que comenzó a ser descendencia de Israel con la reprobación del hermano mayor. Pueblo que de verdad se dijera con propiedad pueblo de Dios no hubo otro; pero no pueden negar que hubiera algunos hombres que pertenecían no a la patria terrena sino a la sociedad celestial, a los verdaderos ciudadanos israelitas de la patria del cielo, ya que, si lo niegan, con toda facilidad se les demostrará 'del santo y admirable Job,' que ni era del país ni prosélito, es decir, ni vivía en el pueblo de Israel, sino que era descendiente de los idumeos: donde nació allí murió; quien de tal forma es alabado por la palabra de Dios que, en lo que atañe a su justicia y piedad, ningún hombre de su tiempo lo iguala, y cuya época, que, aunque no encontremos en las crónicas, podemos deducir de su mismo libro—que con razón los israelitas lo aceptaron entre los autores canónicos—debió ser tres generaciones posterior a Israel" (Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz, cap. XI).

<sup>24</sup> See Cartagena, *Defensorium* (ed. Verdín-Díaz), pp. 127–35. See a similar use of this metaphor in Oropesa: "Pero esta paz excelente y verdadera concordia de la Iglesia militante ha de durar hasta que no haya luna, que es lo mismo que decir hasta que acabe la actual Iglesia, que, cual otra luna en la oscurísima noche así resplandece ella en las tinieblas de este oscuro mundo, iluminada incesante y maravillosamente por el verdadero sol de justicia, por la que, el que es la luz verdadera, ilumina a todo hombre que viene a este mundo (Jn 1, 9); o también: hasta que no haya luna, es decir, hasta que se termine esta vida actual, cuando ya cesó el moverse de las estrellas y puede decirse que ya tampoco hay luna. Y así concuerda bien con ésta otra frase del profeta en que dice de Cristo: «Grande es su señorío y la paz no tendrá fin...» (Is 9, 6). Y esto es porque en esta vida no tendrá fin esta paz de la Iglesia, y después de esta vida tampoco puede decirse propiamente que se acaba sin más, porque le sucede otra paz mejor que ha de durar para siempre, como se ha dicho" (Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz, cap. XXXV).

<sup>25</sup> "[Dios] se dignó darle generosamente la ley para que la diferencia no fuese percibida sólo en la carne, por el corte del prepucio, sino en las costumbres, por el corte de los vicios" (Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 114).

understood in light of the generation of Christ,<sup>26</sup> in whom all lineage distinctions cease. Christ saved both Jews and Gentiles, for they are united as one people by the virtue of regenerative baptism, as St. Paul—fundamental to Cartagena’s argument—had already stressed: “For as many of as have been baptized in Christ have become clothed with Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek; there is neither servant nor free; there is neither male nor female. For you are all one in Christ Jesus” (Galatians 3:27–9).<sup>27</sup>

<sup>26</sup> “Sólo a ese pueblo [judío] la ley le fue ofrecida para que alcanzase ciertas prerrogativas de virtud por encima de los demás en atención a que de ese pueblo había de nacer Cristo [...]. Dios dio la ley y otros muchos beneficios a aquel pueblo por la promesa hecha a sus padres, por aquella especialmente que de ellos nacería Cristo [...]. La razón de la distinción concedida a aquel pueblo se deriva de la carne de Cristo que habría recibir de aquel pueblo, y no de los méritos del pueblo” (Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, pp. 116–7).

“Si se preguntase por qué eligió más bien al pueblo judío para este misterio en vez de cualquier otro, para que Cristo precisamente naciera de él, dice santo Tomás en la Suma teológica que parece respuesta adecuada a esto lo que dice Agustín en las Homilías sobre el evangelio de Juan acerca de por qué Dios traiga a uno y no traiga a otro—se entiende a la penitencia y a la gracia—: «no quieras juzgar si no quieres errare; donde también un poco antes concluye que tal elección del pueblo judío no fue por mérito de Abraham para que se le hiciera la promesa de que Cristo nacería de su descendencia, sino por elección y vocación gratuita; por eso dice Isaías: «¿Quién ha suscitado de oriente al justo y lo ha llamado para que le salga al paso?» (Is 41, 2 Vulg.). Y de esta forma los padres recibieron la promesa tan sólo por la elección gratuita, y el pueblo nacido de ellos recibió la ley, según dice el Deuteronomio: «... y de en medio del fuego has oído sus palabras. Porque amó a tus padres y eligió a su descendencia después de ellos...» (Dt 4, 36–37). Supuesta, pues, la predilección y la promesa a los padres antiguos, que fue libre y gratuita, como se ha dicho, resulta en consecuencia la elección del pueblo para que se realizase el misterio de Cristo, por la veracidad de Dios, para que se confirmasen en él las promesas hechas a los padres, como dice el Apóstol a los Romanos (Rm 15, 8)” (Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz, cap. XIII).

<sup>27</sup> See Cartagena, *Defensorium* (ed. Verdín-Díaz), pp. 93 and 135.

“Pues así como todos hemos sido engendrados por Adán y Eva, y todos sin diferencias hemos quedado pecadores, así también todos hemos sido reengendrados por Cristo y la Iglesia sin diferencias y hemos quedado en perfecta justicia, según lo que explica ampliamente el Apóstol a los Romanos y en la primera carta a los Corintios, diciendo: «Porque, habiendo venido por un hombre la muerte, también por un hombre viene la resurrección de los muertos. Pues del mismo modo que en Adán mueren todos, así también todos revivirán en Cristo» (1 Co 15, 21–22; cf. Rm 5, 12–21), «pues no hay diferencia alguna (de judío y griego, es decir, de judío o gentil, como dice la Glosa); todos pecaron y están privados de la gloria de Dios, y son justificados por el don de su gracia, en virtud de la redención realizada en Cristo Jesús» (Rm 3, 22–24), como dice a los Romanos; y concluye el Apóstol diciendo a los Gálatas: «Ya no hay judío ni griego; ni esclavo ni libre; ni hombre ni mujer, ya que todos vosotros sois uno en Cristo Jesús» (Ga 3, 28); lo que comenta la glosa: «Por ninguna de esas cosas nadie se hace más digno en la fe de Cristo, y por tanto que ninguno judaice cual si fuese más digno por algo de eso, ya que en verdad por ninguna de esas cosas se hace nadie más digno en Cristo»” (Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz, cap. XXI).

Within the framework of his ecclesiology of the continuity of the covenant, Cartagena underlines the point that Christ's redemption is for the Israelites the clear perfection of their faith that was represented in the Old Testament as figurative or allegoric. For Gentiles—to the contrary—Christ's message is something totally new. Thus, the former are invited to learn more profoundly something that had been known already;<sup>28</sup> the latter, in contrast, are invited to learn something they had not yet heard.<sup>29</sup> As Cartagena notes, "it was not Jerusalem that walked towards Gentiles, but it was they who went to Jerusalem, so that both peoples established the new and true Jerusalem that in this life is the Church Militant, through which one reaches the celestial Jerusalem, where all, without regard to their provenience, walk in the light without enmity."<sup>30</sup>

---

<sup>28</sup> "Dios eligió a aquel pueblo de entre los gentiles, como quedará claro en el capítulo siguiente, para que, al llegar el tiempo elegido por él, rehiciera de ellos un pueblo que le fuera grato entre todos los gentiles, perfecto en su estado e inmutable hasta el fin del mundo; cuya perfección y calidad, fe y creencia, culto y veneración significó suficientemente en aquel pueblo pequeño y singular especialmente elegido para que por él pudiera darse a conocer con claridad lo que la religión cristiana cree, venera y predica, con tal que el que va a ser instruido no ponga ante sus ojos el velo de una obstinada ceguera con que contradiga al Espíritu Santo no dejando entrar dentro de sí la luz de la fe; lo que parece claro que ha ocurrido a los pérfidos judíos, que pugnan hasta hoy día por negar con cerviz altiva a Cristo como verdadero salvador, que es el camino, la verdad y la vida por donde debieran entrar al descanso eterno" (Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz, cap. XII).

This argument seems to be the ideological backbone of the Jesuit apostolate to the Roman Jews, as we shall see below: Polanco wrote in a letter that "many Jews, moved by the love of our fellow Jesuits or the good example of some of their own who were already baptized, were converted to our faith. Among them were some of the most respected Jews who were highly important for converting others because they could clearly and forcefully persuade the other Jews, showing them from Scripture that Jesus Christ our Lord is the real promised Messiah" (Polanco, *Chron.* 3:9; MHSI, *Fontes Narr.* 4:404).

<sup>29</sup> "Se saca en conclusión, por consiguiente, que una vez libre el entendimiento y purificada el alma, los israelitas que reciben la fe de los libros de la ley escrita, espiritualmente entendidos y por Cristo completamente perfeccionados, reconocen claramente lo que se consideraba como figurado o alegórico; los gentiles, en cambio, lo escuchan como algo nuevo y saludable desconocido para sus filósofos, cosa que manifiestamente se ve en la misma llamada a los dos pueblos, si se observa bien la cualidad de la llamada. El uno es invitado a conocer más profundamente lo que de alguna manera había conocido; el otro, en cambio, es invitado a lo que no había oído" (Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, pp. 113–4). See also the following Chapter 7 of Cartagena's work.

<sup>30</sup> "Y no fue Jerusalén la que se dirigió a los gentiles, sino que es el pueblo gentil el que se vuelve a Jerusalén para de uno y otro pueblo establecer la única y verdadera Jerusalén, que en esta vida es la Iglesia militante por medio de la cual se sube a la

After having provided a biblical context in Part One that concurs with Oropesa's exposition, Cartagena aims to provide what he calls four theorems: (1) Through the Redeemer of the world, Jesus Christ, the Israelites were redeemed in fullness; (2) In the same way and through the same Savior all nations of the world also received grace and redemption; (3) Israelites and Gentiles, as they entered the door of the Catholic Church through baptism, do not remain divided into two peoples or nations; instead, together they form one new people; (4) Now, as before, those who arrive to the Catholic faith recuperate their capacity of any excellence, nobility or any other faculty that they had possessed earlier, provided that in doing so they do not oppose the principles of authority of the Catholic Church.<sup>31</sup>

To demonstrate the first theorem, the son of the former chief rabbi of Burgos highlights what the New Testament teaches about the redemption of Israel. Christ in the Gospel according to Matthew (15:24), for example, defines his mission by saying "I was not sent except to the

---

Jerusalén celestial y en la que todos, de cualquier parte que vinieren, caminarán en la luz sin enemistad" (Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 133).

"Todo lo cual hay que entender así, según los sagrados doctores: la fuente abierta había de ser el santo bautismo en el que la impureza, es decir, el pecado original en las entrañas de la menstruada, o sea, contraído de la misma madre, y el pecado, se entiende actual, habían de lavarse y purificarse del todo; y tenía que estar abierta, o sea, pública y común, para todos los habitantes de Jerusalén, que es la Iglesia militante, que con frecuencia se la designa en la Escritura por Jerusalén, y que había de estar abierta espiritualmente a la casa de David; y por la que se habían de extirpar los nombres de los ídolos de esta tierra, porque tanto los judíos como los gentiles tenían que venir a ella y a la vez purificarse uniformemente por ella y, abandonando el judaísmo y la gentilidad, congregarse en unanimidad en un pueblo nuevo que se hizo al comienzo de la Iglesia naciente y se hará después sucesivamente, pero se completará del todo en uno y otro pueblo hacia el fin del mundo, cuando se haga íntegra y perfectamente un solo rebaño y un solo pastor, porque entonces se exterminarán definitivamente tanto el judaísmo como los ídolos de la gentilidad, y todos se reunirán juntos en la fe universal" (Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz, cap. XXXIX). See also Sicroff, *Estatutos*, p. 65.

<sup>31</sup> "Primer teorema. Se demuestra que por medio del redentor del mundo, Jesucristo nuestro Señor, el pueblo israelita fue completamente redimido. Segundo teorema que todas las gentes del mundo, del mismo modo y mediante el mismo Salvador, recibieron también la gracia de la redención. Tercer teorema que tanto los israelitas como los gentiles, al entrar por la puerta del bautismo a la Iglesia católica, no permanecen divididos como dos pueblos o dos gentes, sino que de uno y otro se crea un único pueblo nuevo. Cuarto teorema que tanto entonces como ahora los que arriban a la fe católica recuperan de nuevo la aptitud para obtener cualquier excelencia, nobleza, u otra dote cualquiera que en principio tenían, siempre que para recuperarlas no se opongan a los principios de la autoridad de la Iglesia" (Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 142). On the discussion of the Jewish/Spanish concept of nobility, see Netanyahu, *Toward the Inquisition*, pp. 8–16.

sheep, which have fallen away from the house of Israel,” and Paul describes Jesus’ mission as “minister of circumcision because of the truth of God, so as to confirm the promises to the fathers.”<sup>32</sup> Oropesa supports Cartagena’s first theorem by emphasizing that the entire Holy Scripture testifies how these promises were accepted or refused by Israel.<sup>33</sup> This story still continues—those who reject the Catholic Church follow the infidelity of the impious and the hardness of the rebel. However, those who refuse the imprudence of their ancestors and submit their hearts to the Catholic faith with purity of spirit are true followers of the chosen Israel.<sup>34</sup> That is what Paul had in his mind when he addressed the Gentiles in his Letter to the Romans (11:13–26 and 30–2), whose longest quotation is pivotal in Cartagena’s work and, therefore, worth citing in its entirety:

For I say to you Gentiles: Certainly, as long as I am an Apostle to the Gentiles, I will honor my ministry in such a way that I might provoke to rivalry those who are my own flesh, and so that I may save some of them. For if their loss is for the reconciliation of the world, what could their return be for, except life out of death? For if the first-fruit has been sanctified, so also has the whole. And if the root is holy, so also are the

---

<sup>32</sup> See Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 146; and Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz, cap. XXVII: “Pues eso es lo que Jesús les dijo a sus discípulos que intercedían por la mujer cananea: «No he sido enviado más que a las ovejas perdidas de la casa de Israel» (Mt 15, 24), es decir, no he venido a predicar ni a conceder mis beneficios ni yo ni mis discípulos, como ocupación propia mientras viva, a no ser a los judíos a quienes fue hace mucho tiempo prometido; y a la mujer cananea que ya en persona se había acercado a Cristo pidiendo insistentemente la salud de su hija, le respondió Cristo de la misma manera diciéndole: «No está bien tomar el pan de los hijos y echárselo a los perritos» (Mt 15, 26).”

<sup>33</sup> Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz, cap. XIII: “Ciertamente hay muchos y diversos testimonios tanto de la ley como de las profecías y también de ambos, que claramente hacen ver que el pueblo elegido por Dios y su ley y sacerdocio habían sido puestos al modo de un espejo divino de todos los gentiles para salvación y bendición de todos los que se iban a salvar, a quienes Dios había dispuesto a su tiempo llamar, traer y reunir por medio de su Unigénito hecho hombre; quienes llegando en gran muchedumbre de las cuatro partes del mundo se habían de salvar, una vez revelada la gracia y la salvación eterna, al conocer al único y verdadero redentor y al aceptar su santísima ley; y todo esto debía aprovechar en ventaja y salvación de todos a partir de los judíos, cual de raíz seleccionada. Pero, ya que esto resalta claramente en los santos evangelios y el Apóstol lo muestra y desenvuelve brillantemente en muchos lugares de sus cartas, resultaría superfluo acumular testimonios sobre ello; sin embargo hay uno en que el santo Simeón, nuevo profeta evangélico de Cristo, en una sentencia encerró este admirable misterio diciendo que Cristo, nacido del pueblo judío y presentado en aquel mismo momento a sus manos en el templo, era la luz para conocimiento de los gentiles y gloria de su pueblo Israel (cf. Lc 2, 32).”

<sup>34</sup> See Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 154.

branches. And if some of the branches are broken, and if you, being a wild olive branch, are grafted onto them and you become a partaker of the root and of the fatness of the olive tree, do not glorify yourself above the branches. For though you glory, you do not support the root, but the root supports you. Therefore, you would say: The branches were broken off, so that I might be grafted on. Well enough. They were broken off because of unbelief. But you stand on faith. So do not choose to savor what is exalted, but instead be afraid. For if God has not spared the natural branches, perhaps also he might not spare you. So then, notice the goodness and the severity of God. Certainly, toward those who have fallen, there is severity; but toward you there is the goodness of God, if you remain in goodness. Otherwise, you also will be cut off. Moreover, if they do not remain in unbelief, they will be grafted on. For God is able to graft them on again. So if you have been cut off from the wild olive tree, which is natural to you, and, contrary to nature, you are grafted on to the good olive tree, how much more shall those who are the natural branches be grafted on to their own olive tree? For I do not want you to be ignorant, brothers, of this mystery (lest you seem wise only to yourselves) that a certain blindness has occurred in Israel, until the fullness of the Gentiles has arrived. And in this way, all of Israel may be saved [...]. And just as you also, in times past, did not believe in God, but now you have obtained mercy because of their unbelief, so also have these now not believed, for your mercy, so that they might obtain mercy also. For God has enclosed everyone in unbelief, so that he may have mercy on everyone.<sup>35</sup>

From the above citation, Cartagena deduces that the election or rejection of the Israelites is based on their reception or refusal of the faith. Only those who believe, no matter whether they come from Israel and Abraham or from other nations, can be called faithful Israelites and descendants of Abraham.<sup>36</sup> Thus, it is necessary to recall the sins

---

<sup>35</sup> See Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 156. On the centrality of this passage in Cartagena's father's *Scrutinium Scripturarum*, see Rosenstock, *New Men*, pp. 35–7.

<sup>36</sup> “Y de estas palabras del apóstol con sobrada evidencia se deduce que la elección o rechazo de los israelitas está basada en la recepción de la fe o en rechazo de la misma, de manera que de acuerdo con la diversidad de méritos los creyentes se consideran elegidos, y los no creyentes, rechazados, quedando balanceado el juicio del justo juez. En cuanto al lugar de donde procedieren, tanto de Israel y de Abraham como de otras naciones, llámense solamente fieles israelitas y descendientes de Abraham” (Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 157).

“Aun cuando aquel pueblo judío era el único que pertenecía al Señor de modo que él y ninguno más se llamase pueblo de Dios por su especial culto, ceremonias y ley, y por esa razón Dios fuese conocido en Judá y fuese grande su nombre en Israel (cf. Sal 76, 2), sin embargo, no lo eligió Dios de tal modo que ya entonces permitiera que perecieran todos los gentiles, por no abrirles con misericordia el camino de



of their fathers, either Gentile or Israelite, if they resist accepting the Catholic faith or if, after having received it, they fall into the errors of Judaism or Gentilism. This is so because to not know the truth or, after having known it, to abandon it, is something very grave and must be persecuted by authorities.<sup>37</sup> Together with “saint doctors,” Cartagena believes that Paul in his Letter to Titus (1:10–4) gave an example of this sharp rebuke by addressing those of the circumcision who “subvert the entire house” by teaching in Crete “the Jewish fables” under the name of Christ, while at the same time failing to reprehend the Cretan Gentiles themselves.<sup>38</sup>

Concluding the exposition of the first theorem, Cartagena repeats that a special attention should be paid to the faith and not to the Israelite flesh, even though—he proudly underscores—the faith appears to be more splendid in the Israelite flesh, as proven in Philippians 3:3–6, where Paul paradoxically says that even though there should be no confidence in the flesh for the circumcised, he might be entitled to have more confidence in the flesh as “a Hebrew among Hebrews.”<sup>39</sup>

It follows, Cartagena points out, that the Israelite who was exiled from the divine grace due to his infidelity, but was adopted through baptism to receive the faith, is reestablished in the divine grace with more richness than before, for the grace that is earned by the divine adoption is much more extraordinary, pure, and beneficial than the

---

la esperanza de salvación; pues muchas personas particulares de entre los gentiles, realizando obras de verdadera justicia, fueron fieles y aceptos a Dios y herederos y conciudadanos entre los verdaderos israelitas, no en la condición de la herencia terrena, sino de la sociedad de los cielos, a quienes plugo a Dios iluminar de muchos modos en la fe y en su culto grato, ya por el conocimiento y trato con aquel pueblo judío, ya por manifestación de sus ángeles o por cualquier inspiración divina, como explica santo Tomás en los Comentarios a los libros de las Sentencias” (Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz, cap. XI).

<sup>37</sup> See the *Utillogo* of Cartagena’s *Defensorium* (ed. Verdín-Díaz), pp. 398–400.

<sup>38</sup> See Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, pp. 161–9.

<sup>39</sup> See Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz, cap. XLVIII: “Ampliamente explica todo esto el Apóstol a los Romanos, donde hace ver que Dios no ha rechazado a Israel, sino que su resto siempre se salvará, elegido por gracia, etcétera (cf. Rm 9–11), y que Dios es poderoso para volver a reinjertarlos en la fe, de donde se han cortado y caído, y que tenga cuidado cualquiera que de la gentilidad se ha injertado en la fe para que no presuma ni se ensoberbezca contra los que se convierten del judaísmo a la fe de Cristo, no sea que él mismo sea cortado y caiga a causa de la soberbia, etc.” See also Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, pp. 89–90. For a discussion of the pride of conversos stemming from their descent from God’s chosen people with the bibliography on the subject, see Nirenberg, “Mass conversion,” pp. 30–1.



one under the law, as St. Paul's life itself testified.<sup>40</sup> The divine adoption opens the gates of heaven, which was impossible before, for the sacraments of the old law did not possess any virtue whereby the sanctifying grace could be conferred.<sup>41</sup> To exemplify this argument, Cartagena cites the proverbial Jewish shyness that, by virtue of baptism, was transformed in many into military valor.<sup>42</sup>

The equality with which the Savior treats both Israelites and Gentiles is the subject matter of Cartagena's second theorem. Since the issue had been partially treated in the previous theorem, its exposition here is briefer. The special connection between Israelite lineage and acceptance of the Catholic faith mentioned at the end of the previous theorem clearly does not exclude Gentiles from the universal redemption offered through Christ, provided that they make themselves worthy to receive it, which is true also for the Israelites.<sup>43</sup> Moreover,

---

<sup>40</sup> See Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 288.

"Y así todos nos hacemos por la fe y el bautismo hijos de Abrahán (cf. Ga 3, 29), incluso también hijos de Dios (Cf. Jn 1, 12), y, en consecuencia, coherederos con Cristo (cf. Rm 8, 17) y, mediante él, ambos, judíos y gentiles, tenemos acceso al Padre en el único Espíritu (cf. Ef 2, 18), y, por lo tanto, cesa absolutamente tal diferencia, porque igualmente somos recibidos por Cristo mediante la fe y el sagrado bautismo, y nos acercamos a él en el único y mismo Espíritu de filiación, gracia y herencia; pues como escribe san León en el mismo sermón: *El día del nacimiento del Señor es el día del nacimiento de la paz*" (Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz, cap. XLIX).

<sup>41</sup> "La gracia que se gana por adopción divina es mucho más extraordinaria, pura y provechosa que la que bajo la ley se poseía. Porque la adopción divina abre las puertas del cielo, lo que no hubiese podido hacer aquella, porque los sacramentos de la Antigua ley no tenían en sí virtud alguna con la que obrasen para conferir la gracia santificante" (Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 171). See also *ibidem*, p. 277.

<sup>42</sup> See Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 183. See also Sicroff, *Estatutos*, p. 75. One wonders whether Cartagena's argument explains the engagement of a number of converso Jesuits, such as Diego Laínez, Jerónimo Nadal, Cristóbal Rodríguez, Baltasar Gago, or Hernando de Torres, as military chaplains.

<sup>43</sup> "Ninguno, pues, ya sea israelita, ya sea gentil, será excluido de los dones de Cristo a no ser que él mismo se excluya habiéndose indigno" (Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 179).

"Pues como permanece la Iglesia perfecta e inmutable en su estado, así también permanece universal y unida en concordia unánime de todos sus fieles, apartada de ella toda disparidad de aquellas antiguas imperfecciones, puesto que, de otro modo, ya no podría decirse que tuviera un estado nuevo y perfecto; esta sacratísima unión la solemnizó Cristo muriendo en la cruz para redención universal de todos los fieles, sin división alguna que se introduzca entre ellos, cuando adquirió para sí la única e indivisa Iglesia de todos los católicos; y tan admirable misterio ya había sido figurado antes en la formación de la primera mujer del costado del varón: de forma que, como del único varón. Adán, se formaba la única mujer para la procreación universal de todos, así también del gloriosísimo Jesús, único redentor nuestro, se formase la única santa madre Iglesia para salvación universal de todos sus fieles, a

even though “the first fruits of the Israelite people represented in the shepherds anticipated the fruits of the Gentiles in the reception of the Catholic faith, yet the fullness of the nations represented by the Magi anticipated the Israelite fullness in the faith,” as St. Paul had noted in his Letter to the Romans (11:25–6): “A certain blindness has occurred in Israel, until the fullness of the Gentiles has arrived and in this way all of Israel may be saved.”<sup>44</sup> Cartagena and Oropesa study this soteriological order by an analysis of the *Acts of the Apostles* 10, where Peter visits the Gentile Cornelius and, after having overcome his own resistance, as a circumcised Jew, to dealing with a Gentile, recognizes God’s will in redeeming the Gentile through baptism.<sup>45</sup>

The baptism of Cornelius united him with Peter to be part of the new and indivisible—as Jesus’ tunic<sup>46</sup>—people of the Church of

---

quienes por el mismo hecho les encomendó una concordia unánime” (Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz, cap. XXI).

<sup>44</sup> “Así pues, las primicias del pueblo israelita figuradas en los pastores se anticiparon a las primicias de los gentiles en la recepción de la fe católica, mas la plenitud de las gentes representada por los Magos se anticipó a la plenitud israelita en la fe” (Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 182). Surprisingly, Rosenstock (*New Men*, p. 33) overlooked this choice of the Pauline *corpus* by Cartagena in an attempt to explicate Israel’s delay in the final redemption.

“Pero hay que seguir considerando para redondear del todo el tema presente que en su santísimo nacimiento no sólo mostró que pronto iba a hacer tal paz entre los dos pueblos, sino que también comenzó a realizarla enseguida, y en cierta forma ya los unió en sí mismo, pues trajo a los pastores, que eran del pueblo judío (como está en el evangelio de Lucas, 2, 8–17), y a los magos, del pueblo de los gentiles (como está en el evangelio de Mateo, 2, 1–12); y a unos y otros llamó de modo extraordinario y los trajo para que lo adorasen y reconociesen como Dios y hombre, y así ya los reunió en sí mismo en una cierta alianza de paz” (Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz, cap. XXXV).

<sup>45</sup> See Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, pp. 183–5.

“Pero, sea de ello lo que se quiera, resulta evidente que la Iglesia universal estuvo congregada de unos y otros en unanimidad y se hizo admirable ejemplo en esta santa comunión dicha, como se dice expresamente en los Hechos de los Apóstoles (cf. Hch 6,1–7; 14,1.27) y puede deducirse en general del desarrollo de todo el libro; y todos los de ambos pueblos, de los judíos y de los gentiles, recibían de Dios la misma gracia y dones dentro de la única Iglesia universal de los fieles. Por eso, cuando Pedro fue de Joppe a Cesárea invitado por el centurión Cornelio, que era hombre gentil, y permaneció con él, y él con sus parientes y amigos recibieron el Espíritu Santo hasta llegar a proclamar en toda lengua las maravillas de Dios y merecer que les bautizara en el nombre de nuestro Señor Jesucristo, y cuando los creyentes de Jerusalén que eran de la circuncisión comenzaron a reprochárselo a Pedro, él, haciéndoles ver esta igualdad de gracia para unas y otras gentes, les respondió diciendo: «Por tanto, si Dios les ha concedido el mismo don que a nosotros, por haber creído en el Señor Jesucristo, ¿quién era yo para poner obstáculos a Dios? Al oír esto se tranquilizaron y glorificaron a Dios...»” (Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz, cap. XXXVIII).

<sup>46</sup> See Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 199; and Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz, cap. II: “Con razón pues sólo nos resta concluir sobre la magnitud de este error

Christ, regardless of their different lineage. This mixture of blood had taken place already in biblical times among the Israelites themselves, explicates Cartagena in the third theorem. For instance, Rahab (Joshua 6:25) and Ruth (Ruth 1:16–7) came from the Gentiles—from Jericho and Moab, respectively. Yet they both married Israelite men: the former became mother of Solomon and the latter of Jesse, father of David, from whom Christ derived his lineage, as the Gospel according to Matthew highlighted.<sup>47</sup> In sum, “the sanctification of Israel would really come in the form not of division but of unification, so that both the descendants of Jacob by flesh and the rest would unite under one king and one pastor, that is Christ, in order to form one people only, one lineage only, and one flock only.”<sup>48</sup> Isaiah predicted this union: “The wolf will dwell with the lamb; and the leopard will lie down with the kid.” According to Cartagena, in this image, the “bellicosity of the armed Gentility unites with tenderness of the Israelite meekness.”<sup>49</sup>

The unity of the Christian Church that encompasses both Israelites and Gentiles is also based on the sharing of guilt for Christ’s death, a guilt shared by those priests who disregarded the signs given to them by prophets; simple Jews as a result to their ignorance; and the Gentiles who actually crucified Christ. The last group’s guilt, however, was more forgivable in Cartagena’s view, for—contrary to the Jews—the Gentiles did not have knowledge of the law.<sup>50</sup> Nevertheless,

---

que, si realmente somos discípulos de Cristo, fieles y católicos, tenemos que deplorar en este cisma, no de otra forma que rasgando los vestidos, que se ha cortado su túnica: es decir, la caridad y la unidad.”

<sup>47</sup> See Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 189; and Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz, cap. L: “«Y suscitaré para ponérselo al frente a un solo pastor que las apacientará: mi siervo David», es decir. Cristo, nacido de la descendencia de David según la carne, como se dice en el evangelio de Mateo y en la carta a los Romanos (cf. Mt 1,1; 1,6–16; Rm 1,3).” On Netanyahu’s critique of Américo Castro’s idea of alleged Jewish “racial hermetism,” see Netanyahu, *Toward the Inquisition*, pp. 4–7.

<sup>48</sup> “La santificación de Israel habría de venir no realmente bajo la forma de división, sino de unificación, de modo que, tanto los que descendieran de Jacob según la carne como el resto, se unirían para bajo un solo rey y un solo pastor, que es Cristo, para formar un solo pueblo, un solo linaje y un solo rebaño” (Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 199).

<sup>49</sup> “La turbulencia de la gentilidad armada se une a la blandura de la masedumbre israelita” (Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, pp. 200–1).

<sup>50</sup> See Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, pp. 202–3; and Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz, cap. XLVIII: “Es que esta santificación por el bautismo es tan necesaria a los gentiles como a los judíos si quieren salvarse y contarse y estar entre los hijos de la Iglesia: pues todos pecaron y están privados de la gloria de Dios,

both Gentiles and Jews were forgiven in the event of Christ's death on the cross that dissolved the "intermediate wall of separation," opening access to the Father for both of them, as St. Paul argued in his Letter to Ephesians (2:14–8). Therefore, as Alonso Díaz de Montalvo (1405–99) pointed out,<sup>51</sup> there are no longer visitors or new arrivals in Christian religion—we cannot tolerate those who distinguish between New and Old (Christians), for there is no Catholic who has not come to the faith recently: as nobody who stays in his mother's womb can be circumcised, so none can be baptized.<sup>52</sup>

Unique to Cartagena is his fourth and last theorem, which he explains as a consequence of a correct syllogism made of two major propositions contained in the first and second theorems and of a minor proposition enclosed in the third theorem: if both the Israelite and Gentile peoples are fully saved and, after they arrived to the faith, formed one people of God without any lineage differences, *ergo* they can aspire to all the merits they had previously possessed and can obtain the new ones within the unity of the new people.<sup>53</sup>

---

como acaba de decirse: ciertamente pecaron por el pecado original con el que todos nacemos hijos de la cólera, como se ha dicho; también pecaron con pecados actuales tanto los judíos como los gentiles en la misma crucifixión de Cristo, en la que se aliaron unos y otros contra él y la consumaron."

<sup>51</sup> See Sicroff, *Estatutos*, pp. 56–9.

<sup>52</sup> See Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, pp. 205–6; and Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz, cap. L: "De todo lo dicho resulta claro que de ninguna forma se puede llamar neófito a la persona que, una vez hecha adulta, por más que hubiera sido hijo de algún infiel ya judío ya gentil, sin embargo había sido bautizada mientras era niño, incluso aunque hubiera sido circuncidado antes del bautismo. Asimismo que mucho menos se le puede llamar o considerar neófito al que ha nacido de padres ya fieles y bautizado enseguida según la costumbre de la Iglesia, por más que ellos antes hubieran sido judíos o sarracenos. Asimismo que no se le puede considerar ni llamar neófito al que, aunque fuera adulto y persona mayor cuando se hizo cristiano, no obstante ya había vivido durante algún tiempo y por algunos años en la fe de Cristo después de haberse bautizado. Es bien clara la razón de todo esto y es porque ninguno de ellos sería «hace poco renacido» ni «nuevo en la fe», que es lo que se exige para que se le llame y sea neófito." See also Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 91.

<sup>53</sup> "Este teorema en realidad se depende de los teoremas anteriores como consecuencia lógica de un correcto silogismo, pues al ser tanto el pueblo gentil como el israelita salvados a cabalidad, como en el primero y en el segundo teorema se deduce a modo de una proposición mayor, y al formarse un solo pueblo y un nuevo grupo de estos dos pueblos llegados a la fe, como se demostró con el tercer teorema a modo de una consecuencia lógica; de tal manera que los procedentes de ambas partes, reunidos ya en un solo pueblo bajo la caridad cristiana y sin diferencia alguna de linaje, puedan aspirar a todos los méritos que tenían, y a conseguir otros dentro de la unidad del nuevo pueblo" (Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 213).

Based on this syllogism, the Roman Constantine the Great,<sup>54</sup> the Frank Clovis,<sup>55</sup> the Gothic Alaric,<sup>56</sup> or the Lithuanian Jagiełło,<sup>57</sup> who were all Gentiles before they accepted the Catholic faith, not only kept their attributes of majesty and nobility of lineage but also were further ennobled by the water of baptism. Moreover, Emperor Justinian<sup>58</sup>—in spite of being Christian—was proud to trace his lineage to the pagan Aeneas.<sup>59</sup>

Royalty and priesthood, the highest of dignities assigned to nobility, existed also in the history of the people of Israel, as the Scriptures testify abundantly. Beyond this nobility by lineage that was often combined with theological nobility in the great figures of Solomon or Samuel, Cartagena points out the presence of what he calls “*civic nobility*” in the Israelite people. Its most evocative example is Judas Maccabaeus.<sup>60</sup> Cartagena admits, however, that this civic nobility must have waned because of grave Jewish sins of infidelity and blindness in not recognizing Christ, as could be observed during the so-called Jewish war against Titus and Vespasian.<sup>61</sup> He confidently concludes his argument with an analogy:

As by divine mercy they were freed from the material Egypt through the passage across the Red Sea signaled to them by a column of fire, so will they be mercifully freed from the spiritual Egypt of infidelity and all their grief when they turn to the Catholic faith through the Red Sea of baptismal water reddened by the blood of Christ and signaled to them by the column of fire of love of the Holy Spirit.<sup>62</sup>

---

<sup>54</sup> Constantine I (c. 272–337) was the first Roman emperor to endorse Christianity as state religion (Edict of Milan, 313), even though he accepted baptism only on his deathbed.

<sup>55</sup> Clovis I (c. 466–511) was the founder of the Merovingian dynasty of Frankish kings. He converted to Catholicism under the sway of his wife, Clotilda.

<sup>56</sup> Alaric I (c. 370–410) was the king of Goths, who captured Rome.

<sup>57</sup> Jogaila, later Władysław II Jagiełło (c. 1362–1434), was Grand Duke of Lithuania and King of Poland. In 1386 he converted to Christianity and married Queen Jadwiga of Poland. See also Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 331.

<sup>58</sup> Justinian I or Justinian the Great (482–565) was Eastern Roman Emperor since 527. His major legacy, reflected in the Visigothic legislation, with which Cartagena as jurist must have been quite familiar, comes from his *Corpus Iuris Civilis*.

<sup>59</sup> See Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, pp. 214–7.

<sup>60</sup> See Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, pp. 221–5. Other biblical examples are from Deuteronomy 1:15; Numbers 1:16–7; 1 Samuel 9:6; 2 Samuel 23:18–9; Isaiah 34:12; Marc 15:43; and Acts of the Apostles 17:12.

<sup>61</sup> Cartagena alludes here to the first Jewish-Roman War, 66–73 C.E., known as The Great Revolt.

<sup>62</sup> “Y así como por la divina clemencia fueron librados del Egipto material a través del paso del Mar Rojo señalándoles el camino una columna de fuego, así serán

In other words, natural and civic nobility had been undermined by, as Cartagena puts it, the theological slavery of Hagar—whose womb symbolizes the Synagogue—which prevented the Jews from holding civic offices in Christian society. Yet, through the water of baptism the Jews are liberated from this kind of slavery to become sons of Sarah—whose womb represents the Church Militant—and their impurity is made purer than snow (Psalm 50:9).<sup>63</sup> Thus,

While the unfortunate Jews on account of the blindness of their hearts are filled with the misfortune, both spiritual and physical, of not seeing the light that enlightens every man who comes to this world, if their eyes are opened, once they have come to the Church, they receive the vision of the soul. There is no doubt that, freed from spiritual ills, they will also be freed from the weight of temporary ones. Who, then, will dare to say that the men purified by water of baptism are still marked by the stain of infamy of their ancestors, while their own sins are completely removed by the same water of baptism?<sup>64</sup>

To support his argument against “the malice of the envious,” about whose origins from Goths or Vandals nobody inquires,<sup>65</sup> Cartagena—like the jurist Díaz de Montalvo—quotes a law from the Civil Code<sup>66</sup> that contradicts what we would term today “biological determinism”: “a father’s sin or punishment cannot impress any stain on his child [unless it is the stain of original sin transmitted from Adam], for everyone is subject to his own responsibility and no one inherits crime.”<sup>67</sup>

---

misericordiosamente liberados del Egipto espiritual de la infidelidad, y de todas sus congojas, por el Mar Rojo del agua bautismal, enrojecidos por la sangre de Cristo al pasar a la fe católica y señalándoles el camino la columna de fuego del amor del Espíritu Santo” (Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 226). See also *ibidem*, pp. 241–3 and 277–9.

<sup>63</sup> See Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, pp. 237 and 263.

<sup>64</sup> “Como los infortunados judíos por la ceguera de su corazón son colmados de desgracias, tanto espirituales como corporales, al no ver la luz que ilumina a todo hombre que viene a este mundo, si abiertos los ojos, una vez llegados a la Iglesia, reciben la visión del alma, no cabe lugar a duda de que, al ser liberados de los males espirituales, serán también liberados del peso de los males temporales [...]. ¿Quien, pues, se atreverá a decir que al purificado por el agua del bautismo le ha quedado mancha alguna de la infamia de sus antepasados, cuando hasta sus propios pecados son completamente removidos por la misma agua del bautismo?” (Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 251).

<sup>65</sup> See Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 270.

<sup>66</sup> *Corpus Iuris Civilis*, “Digestorum liber XLVIII,” tit. XIX, “De poenis,” 26.

<sup>67</sup> “El pecado o el castigo paterno no puede imponer mancha alguna al hijo, ya que cada cual está sujeto a su propia responsabilidad y no se establece como sucesor del delito a nadie” (Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 252; see also *ibidem*, pp. 253–5).

Those Israelites who are regenerated by the water of baptism not only enjoy every privilege, exemption, and liberty—as the fathers of the Council of Basel unanimously stated (as we have seen earlier)—but also they have the right to be treated delicately,<sup>68</sup> following St. Paul’s recommendation to give the weak neophytes the milk of love and generous breasts rather than solid food [1 Corinthians 3:2], as a mother gives to her child. Newborns to the faith are like tender plants that have to be watered often with an abundance of water, for the Church is like “an enclosed garden, a sealed fountain” (The Song of Songs 4:12). They must be taken care of with brotherly love, so that they feel they are one, without any differentiation based on their ancient origin.<sup>69</sup> This kind of unity is desired by Christ himself, as was the unity that is between him and his Father (John 17:11), “for in Christ Jesus either circumcision or foreskin is worth nothing, but only faith which works through charity” (Galatians 5:6).<sup>70</sup>

The necessity of Christian unity in Spanish society, continues Cartagena, is built on the promise of equality without regard for lineage, as was well understood by King Alfonso X (the Wise) who inscribed it into the collection of laws known as *Partidas* [1256–65], which were subsequently confirmed by King Enrique:

We also order that, after any Jews become Christians, all persons in our dominions shall honor them; and that no one shall dare reproach them or their descendants, by way of affront, with having been Jews; and that

---

<sup>68</sup> Fernan Díaz de Toledo, a converso counselor and secretary of King Juan II, presented the same argument in his *Instrucción* (see Roth, *Conversos, Inquisition*, p. 95).

<sup>69</sup> “Éstos han de ser tratados de diferente manera que los demás, sino que bajo la unidad de un mismo cuerpo si advertimos que algunos son débiles, que los aliviemos con la leche de la caridad y con los pechos de la generosidad, como en un mismo jardín a las plantas más tiernas se las riega más a menudo con abundancia de buena agua. Porque la Iglesia es un jardín cercado y una fuente sellada bajo cuya unidad y sello todos cuantos se lavan con el agua de la fuente sellada, que es el bautismo, han de ser cuidados con mano fraterna y caritativa para que se sientan una sola cosa sin diferencia alguna motivada por la antigüedad de origen” (Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 262).

For a different use of the metaphor of milk as drink that feeds Christians coming either from Judaism or Paganism, see Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz, cap. XXXII: “Los dos senos son los dos pueblos, de los gentiles y de los judíos, porque, al vivir continuamente en amor fraterno se alimentan mutuamente con la leche de la piedad en la caridad, por lo que se denominan correctamente como dos crías mellizas de gacela, porque, al ser engendrados en la fe por la predicación de la sinagoga, se alimentan de sus escrituras atendiendo a la esperanza de eternidad, y así pacen concordes en los montes.”

<sup>70</sup> See Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, pp. 263–7.



they shall possess all their property, sharing the same with their brothers and inheriting it from their fathers and mothers and other relatives just as if they were Jews; and that they can hold all offices and dignities which other Christians can do.<sup>71</sup>

In Cartagena's (and Díaz de Montalvo's) opinion as a jurist trained in *utroque iure*, all the civil and ecclesiastical laws that he cited so far were broken by the Toledan anti-converso legislation of 1449, behind which—in Cartagena's view—stood Marcos [García de Mora].<sup>72</sup> Cartagena accosts him, arguing that García de Mora's statutes are against the divine law and heretical.<sup>73</sup> His "black envy" fueled his distortion of the Fourth Council of Toledo's legislation [633], which Cartagena personally consulted in Basel. According to García de Mora, this canon was supposedly incorporated into Gratian's *Decretum* (c. 1140)<sup>74</sup> and provided

---

<sup>71</sup> Alfonso X el Sabio, *Partidas*, "La Séptima Partida," tit. XXIV, ley VI (see Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, pp. 273–4). See also Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz, cap. XLIII. The Alfonsine legislation comprised, though, many restrictions on Jewish life: Jews were prohibited from intermarrying with Christians, visiting Christian baths, possessing Christians servants, holding any public office that would give them power over Christians, or seeking Christian converts to Judaism.

<sup>72</sup> In his *Memorial* (1449), which supported the purity-of-blood legislation of Sarmiento, García de Mora (known also as Marquillos de Mazarambroz) accused the conversos of Toledo of being responsible for the conspiracy against Old Christians during the 1449 revolt. He called for the persecution and murder of New Christians. For an analysis of this document, see Eloy Benito Ruano, "El memorial contra los conversos del bachiller Marcos García de Mora ('Marquillos de Mazarambroz'), *Sefarad* 17 (1957): 320–51; and Verdín-Díaz, ed., *Alonso de Cartagena*, pp. 31–57. For Cartagena's analysis of García de Mora's resentment, see Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, pp. 321–6.

<sup>73</sup> See Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, pp. 330 and 341–2.

"Pero de todo lo dicho aparece bien claro cuánta ha sido la temeridad y audacia de estas personas que quieren separar de la Iglesia de Dios a los que se habían convertido del judaísmo y hecho cristianos por el bautismo, y de los que se esfuerzan por excluirlos de los oficios y dignidades y de los demás honores de la Iglesia de Dios; por ser esto evidentemente contra la autoridad de la Iglesia universal, contra su sagrada Escritura y sucesión tácita, contra su uso y costumbre prolongado desde los santos apóstoles hasta ahora, y contra sus honorables concilios" (Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz, cap. XLVII).

<sup>74</sup> "Y esto solo debiera bastar como respuesta al argumento tomado de dicho concilio toledano. Sin embargo, para que con el honor debido a dicho concilio y a la veneración de aquellos santos padres se dé la respuesta, hay que decir que, aunque aquellos concilios de obispos no tenían validez para definir y establecer, especialmente en tan importantes y difíciles asuntos, no obstante eran válidos para corregir y castigar, y son necesarios para eso, como allí mismo dice Graciano, y así se hicieron y dispusieron aquellos decretos escritos entonces contra los delincuentes e impuestos y aplicados por aquellos santos padres reunidos en dicho concilio toledano, o sea, a modo de sentencia y reprehensión particular de corrección y castigo contra aquellos lapsos de entonces, como contra ciertas personas concretas atrapa-



a precedent to debar New Christians from holding office in Toledo. The astute lawyer Cartagena argues, however, that one should look at the different historical context of the reigns of Sisebuto [612–20] and Sisenando [633–6], under whom the legislation was promulgated and which Gratian omitted in his transcription of the decree.<sup>75</sup> Additionally, Toledo IV was the only council among the fifteen Visigothic councils that dealt with the *judaizantes*.<sup>76</sup> Moreover, Cartagena was unable to find this part of the council's legislation in Gratian's collection, for the only fragment related to the debarment of the Jews from public offices and those "ex Iudaeis" refers not—in his view—to the carnal descent but to the spiritual one:

The holy Council has ruled that the Jews, or those who are from the Jews [*ex Iudaeis*], in no way aspire to public offices, for by such activity they would do injustice to the Christians. Therefore, the judges of provinces, together with the bishops, prevent their fraudulently disguised infiltrations and not allow them to hold public offices. And if anyone permitted it, would have to be excommunicated as sacrilegious and who fraudulently attained office, would have to be put to death publicly.<sup>77</sup>

---

das en aquellas transgresiones y errores; y no a modo de ley o de estatuto general que habría de durar para siempre y que se imponía a todo el pueblo de Dios que entonces se había convertido del judaísmo o que se iba a convertir en adelante a la fe; y en esta forma lo relata y presenta Graciano, y no como estatutos de los concilios generales o decretos de los sumos Pontífices, que se consideran como leyes y son leyes, y como tales se veneran y se cumplen, sino como determinadas actuaciones concretas y correcciones hechas temporalmente para la reforma de las costumbres y enmienda de los que vivieron en aquel entonces, de lo que también en algunas cosas pueden tomar ejemplo los actuales y los futuros, con tal que no se tuerza del camino de la verdad y de la sana y recta doctrina de la santa madre Iglesia" (Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz, cap. LI).

<sup>75</sup> See Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, pp. 304 and 328–30; and Oropesa, *Luz*, ed. Díaz y Díaz, cap. LI: "Ya que si fuese verdad que dichos cánones abarcaban a todos los de raza judía que habían recibido o iban a recibir la fe de Cristo y a todos les aplicaban las penas allí contenidas, no exceptuaría este canon a sus hijos, al ser igualmente de la misma raza y vivir en la misma fe; pero, sin embargo, los excluye y los salva y dice que el hijo no cargará con la maldad de su padre, es decir, que no será castigado por los pecados de él, como está escrito y puesto en los sagrados cánones del mismo concilio toledano, donde dice: «Los judíos bautizados, si estuviesen condenados con cualquier pena después de haber prevaricado contra Cristo, no convendrá excluir a sus hijos fieles de los bienes de ellos, porque está escrito: El hijo no cargará con la iniquidad de su padre, ni el padre cargará con la iniquidad de su hijo»."

For the historical context of Sisebuto's and Sisenando's legislation concerning Jews and conversos, see, for example, Serrano, *Los conversos*, pp. 8–9.

<sup>76</sup> See Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, pp. 294–304. Fernan Díaz de Toledo argued similarly in his *Instrucción* (see Roth, *Conversos, Inquisition*, p. 94).

<sup>77</sup> "Constituít sanctum concilium ut iudaei aut hi qui ex iudaeis sunt, officia publica nullatenus appetant, qui sub hac actione christianis iniuriam faciunt. Ideoque iudices

Cartagena concludes this part of his work, addressing directly Marcos García de Mora, the true leader of the anti-converso party in Toledo, with the following provocative words:

Examine, therefore, so to speak your way, if by chance you are from the Jews, because, applauding their infidelity, you persecute with rancorous hate the faithful who descend from them up to the point that a door-woman could tell you, *You are one of them* (I do not know whether according to the flesh, but certainly according to the spirit). If you hold a position by which you are blamed, you are one of them, because your language betrays you, because you say huge things against God, as you were a beast going to die.<sup>78</sup>

The legislation of Toledo IV breaks, in Cartagena's view, with the long-running tradition of the Church, within which many Israelites became prestigious figures:

It never occurred that a person was rejected because of his Jewish blood. And we do not speak here just about the origins of the Church, when the pillars of the faith, the saint apostles, and after them, the disciples of our Redeemer as well as many other descendants of Jewish blood governed the Church of God, holding important offices (and some ennobled it with martyrdom or virtues).<sup>79</sup>

---

provinciarum cum sacerdotibus eorum subreptiones fraudulenter relictas suspendant et officia publica agere non permittant. Si quis autem hoc presumpserit velut in sacrilegium excommunicatio proferatur. Et qui subreperit, publicis cedibus deputetur."

A comparison of Cartagena's transcription of the Toledan decree with its original (see *Conciliorum Toletanum IV*, cap. LXV, "Ne iudaei, vel si qui ex iudaeis sunt, officia publica agant," quoted in Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 304), proves Cartagena's accuracy. The expression "ex Iudaeis," however, did apply in many writings of the period to those who descended from Jews by blood (see, for example, the text by the Jesuit Manuel Rodrigues that we shall analyze in Chapter Three). Thus, Cartagena's philological argument about the spiritual nature of the expression (Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, pp. 305–9 and 312–4) seems to be forced.

<sup>78</sup> "Examina, pues, para hablar a tu modo, si acaso tú eres de los judíos, porque tú, aplaudiendo su infidelidad, persigues con rencoroso odio a los fieles que descienden de ellos hasta el punto que una criada portera pudiera decirte, *Tú eres uno de ellos* [Mark 14:66–72], no sé si en la carne, pero sí ciertamente en el espíritu. Si mantienes esa posición que se te achaca, tú eres uno de ellos, porque tu lenguaje te delata, porque dices, como tocado de muerte por cuerpo de bestia, cosas enormes contra Dios" (Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 308).

<sup>79</sup> "Y jamás se ha descubierto que nadie hubiera sido rechazado por esta causa. Y no hablemos del origen mismo de la Iglesia en el que las columnas de la fe, los santos apóstoles y, después de ellos, los discípulos de nuestro Redentor, además de muchos otros descendientes de sangre judía, gobernaron la Iglesia de Dios bajo vestiduras de dignidades, y algunos la ennoblecieron con el martirio, y muchos con sus virtudes" (Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 320).

Thus, Evarist was a pope for ten years,<sup>80</sup> and Julian—known for his knowledge and virtue—held the primatial See of Toledo itself.<sup>81</sup> In the conclusion to the exposition of his fourth theorem, Cartagena continues to criticize García de Mora for manipulating the true meaning of the decrees of Toledo IV that pertain to the prohibition against Jews and “those who are from Jews” testifying in Christian courts of law.<sup>82</sup>

The third and last brief part of the work aims to interpret the turmoil caused by García de Mora as a pagan act of destroying Church unity and fomenting a heretical rebellion against the royal power of King Juan II, to whom the *Defensorium* is dedicated.<sup>83</sup>

Cartagena’s arguments—with the support of his converso colleague from Basel, the Dominican Cardinal Juan de Torquemada (1388–1468), uncle of the future Inquisitor General,<sup>84</sup> and the royal jurist Díaz de Montalvo<sup>85</sup>—found a benevolent hearing with Pope Nicholas V. The pope immediately issued three bulls against the Sarmiento legislation of 1449, the most important of them being the *Humani generis inimicus*

<sup>80</sup> See Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 320.

Evarist is traditionally regarded as the fifth bishop of Rome, successor to Clement I. He reigned between 100 and 109. He was the son of Juda from Bethlehem, who migrated to Antioch, where Evarist was born. He was martyred under Emperor Trajan (r. 97–117).

<sup>81</sup> See Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, p. 320. For other names of the converso prelates, see Fernan Díaz de Toledo’s *Instrucción* (see Roth, *Conversos, Inquisition*, p. 95).

Archbishop Julian (d. 690) was baptized in Toledo. Isidor de Beja and Pablo de Santa María acknowledged his Jewish origins, as did Alonso Díaz de Montalvo, an important jurist during the reigns of Juan II and Enrique IV. Julian opposed the violence of King Erwig against King Wamba, whose history he put in writing. He was behind the anti-Jewish legislation of the Twelfth Council of Toledo and author of *De comprobatione aetatis sextae contra Judaeos* (686), intended to compel Jews to convert (see Sicroff, *Estatutos*, p. 58; and Roth, *Conversos, Inquisition*, p. 67). Archbishop Silíceo denied Julian’s Jewish origins (see Sicroff, *Estatutos*, p. 156).

<sup>82</sup> See Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, pp. 327–42.

<sup>83</sup> See Sicroff, *Estatutos*, pp. 81–3.

<sup>84</sup> At the occasion, Torquemada wrote a treatise, *Contra Madianitas et Ismaelitas adversarios et detractores illorum qui de populo Israeli originem traxerunt*, which reflected the argumentation of Cartagena. It has two modern editions: by Nicolás López Martínez and Vicente Proaño Gil (Burgos: Seminario Metropolitano de Burgos, 1957); and by Carlos del Valle and Eloy Benito Ruano (Madrid: Aben Ezra Ediciones, 2002). See its analysis vis-à-vis Cartagena’s *Defensorium* in Rosenstock, *New Men*, especially pp. 53–68; and Roth, *Conversos, Inquisition*, p. 98. For the biography of Torquemada, see Stephen Lederer, *Der Spanische Cardinal Johann von Torquemada: sein Leben und seine Schriften* (Freiburg im Breisgau: Herder, 1879); and Thomas Izbicki, *Protector of the Faith: Cardinal Johannes de Turrecremata and the Defense of the Institutional Church* (Washington, D.C.: Catholic University of America Press, 1981).

<sup>85</sup> See Sicroff, *Estatutos*, pp. 56–9.

(its very existence would be questioned by Bishop Simancas, but not by the Jesuit García Girón de Alarcón, as we shall see below):

Bishop Nicholas, Servant of the Servants of God, that the matter may be perpetually known.

The enemy of humankind, once he saw the word of God fall on good field, engaged in sowing weeds, so that, rammed the seed, it would not produce fruit [Matthew 13:24–30]. Similarly, the Apostle Paul, vase of choice and principal extirpator of this weed, relates that at the beginning a disagreement was born over favoritism among the converted to the faith: some struggled for the precedence of Jews over Gentiles and others looked for other ways to arrive at a schism in the Church of God, when some claimed to be of Cephas and others of Apollo [1 Corinthians 3:22]. Predicting that it would happen in the beginning of the newborn Church, our Redeemer ruled that those who remove such weeds relieve also those who sinned out of human weakness or those who fell. The Apostle himself, writing to the Romans, undid with divine words any dissent over that favoritism; and Peter, Prince of the Apostles, turned away any chance of schism, once bishops were ordained in each diocese.

Following the example of our Redeemer and being His unworthy vicar on earth in removing these disagreements, illustrated by the above examples, We are obliged to use with much care our pontifical authority and challenge those who could engender some division among the faithful, so that charity, love, and unity reign among them. Nothing then is more convenient among the faithful than to have only one mind, as the Apostle said: “For just as the body is one, and yet has many parts, so all the parts of the body, though they are many, are only one body. So also in Christ. And indeed, in one Spirit, we were all baptized into one body, whether Jews or Gentiles, whether servant or free. And we have all drank in the one Spirit” [1 Corinthians 12:12–3]. “One Lord, one faith, one baptism, one God and Father of all” [Ephesians 4:5–6].

We have found out that some new sowers of weeds, who try to corrupt the salvific foundation of this unity and peace of our faith and renew the discord that had been extirpated by the Apostle Paul, vase of choice, especially in the realms of our dear son, the illustrious Juan, king of Castile and León, audaciously affirmed that those from Gentilism or Judaism or any other error, who learned the Christian truth and were baptized and even—what is graver—their descendants, may not be admitted to honors, dignities, offices, and public notaries or witness in cases of Christians, because of their recent reception of the faith, bringing them disgrace in word and deed.

This is alien to the teaching of our Redeemer as witnessed by the Apostle Paul who said: “Glory and honor and peace are for all who do what is good, the Jew first, and also the Greek, for there is no favoritism of persons with God” [Romans 2:10–1] and: “*Whoever believes in him shall not be confused*, for there is no distinction between Jew and

Greek, for the same Lord is over all, richly in all who call upon him” [Romans 10:11–2], and elsewhere: “For in Christ Jesus either circumcision or foreskin is worth nothing, but only faith which works through charity” [Galatians 5:6]). Those who have walked away from the truth of Christian faith and have exceeded in things said above, whom we desire to take to the path of the true faith and warn, are not only contradicted by the quoted divine testimonies, but also by the frequent sanctions of those illustrious princes, such as Alfonso, the so-called Wise, and Enrique, and our beloved son Juan, kings of Castile and León, which were aimed to increase the faith and supported by severe penalties. We have seen those sanctions in kings’ authentic letters, supplied with their seals, and we have pondered them wisely. They established that there was no preference between the newly converts to the faith, especially from the Jewish people, and the Old Christians to keep or receive honors, offices and dignities, both ecclesiastical and civil [...] and whoever sows falsehoods against the rule of Christian law, scandalizes neighbors, and acts against unity and peace, should confess his mistakes and be punished with appropriate penalties.

By our initiative, we consciously adopt, confirm, and—with the firmness of the apostolic authority—approve the orders and decrees of those princes regarding these issues as complying with the sacred canons and law. And under penalty of excommunication, we commend to each and every one of any status, rank or condition, either ecclesiastical or lay, to admit each and every one of the converts to the Christian faith and those who will convert in the future either from Gentilism or Judaism, or from any sect they may have come or will come, and their descendants of both the clergy and laity, as long as they live as good Catholics and Christians, to all dignities, honors, offices, public notaries, witness statements and everything else, to which all other older Christians are usually admitted. No difference should be made between them and other Christians, because of having recently received faith, nor should they disgrace them by word or deed, nor should they let others do such things; rather, they should contradict and oppose it with all their might; and with all their charity they should accompany them and honor without favoritism of persons. Additionally, we declare and decree that we Catholics are one body in Christ, according to the teaching of our faith, and that all those converted are part of it and that we all have to consider them as such.

However, if you find that some of them after baptism lost the sense of the Christian faith, or follow the mistakes of the Jews or Gentiles, or by ignorance or ill will do not uphold the precepts of Christian faith, in such cases goes into effect what was established in the Council of Toledo, especially in the chapter *Constituit*, and elsewhere, where against such apostates from the faith of Christ one says that they are not to be admitted to such honors at parity with the other good faithful, which is exactly what the quoted kings, correctly understanding the sacred canons, have applied to certain laws of their kingdoms in their mentioned constitutions—to think differently would be less than what is expected from a

Christian. Who suffers because of this scandal should go to a judge and demand that he fulfill what is right by the public authority of law and the established order, and that nobody intend, out of his own authority outside the established order, to do violence against all or any of them, which is contrary to the teaching of the divine and human laws. [...]

Given in Fabriano, diocese of Camerino, in the year 1449 of the Incarnation of the Lord, the 24th of September, in the third year of our pontificate.<sup>86</sup>

*Humani generis inimicus*, echoing strongly Cartagena's *Defensorium*, excommunicated "those who sowed zizania," but only temporarily, and it did not prevent other anti-converso riots and the dissemination of purity-of-blood laws beyond Toledo. Fiercely promoted by the Franciscan Alonso de Espina (d. 1469) in his malicious *Fortalitiium fidei* (c. 1464),<sup>87</sup> purity-of-blood laws were adopted by the city councils of Cordova and Jaén (1473), Ciudad Real, Valladolid, and Segovia (1474), Villena (1476), and others. Oropesa's religious order, the Jeronymites, introduced the anti-converso statutes at the end of the fifteenth century; the Franciscans accepted the statutes with a limitation up to the fourth generation in 1525, a restriction which was later abrogated (1583); and the Discalced Carmelites adopted them just two years after the Jesuits (1595). The Dominicans never applied the statutes universally, but individual convents did, such as Santo Tomás of Ávila (1496) or San Pablo of Cordova (1538). Also the military orders of Calatrava, Alcántara, and Santiago followed suit in the later fourteenth century, as did the Colegios Mayores, such as San Bartolomé in Salamanca or San Clemente in Bologna,<sup>88</sup> and the cathedrals of Badajoz, Cordova, Jaén, León, Oviedo, Seville, Sigüenza, and Valencia.<sup>89</sup> Yet, the con-

<sup>86</sup> See the original Latin text in Appendix II. For an analysis of Nicholas V's legislation regarding conversos (there were other two bulls), see V. Beltrán de Heredia, "Las bulas de Nicolás V acerca de los conversos," *Sefarad* 21 (1961): 22–47. Roth (*Conversos, Inquisition*, p. 101) criticized Heredia's argumentation concerning the causes that led to the creation of the Inquisition as reflecting Heredia's "anti-Jewish animus."

<sup>87</sup> *Fortalitiium fidei contra Iudaeos, Saracenos aliosque Christianae fidei inimicos* had numerous editions in various parts of Europe. For an analysis of the text, see Steven J. McMichael, *Was Jesus of Nazareth the Messiah? Alphonso de Espina's argument against the Jews in the Fortalitiium fidei (c. 1464)* (Atlanta: Scholars Press, 1994). See also Sicroff, *Estatutos*, pp. 100–1.

<sup>88</sup> See Baltasar Cuart, *Colegiales mayores y limpieza de sangre durante la edad moderna: el Estatuto de S. Clemente de Bolonia (ss. XV–XIX)* (Salamanca: Ediciones Universidad de Salamanca, 1991).

<sup>89</sup> See Kamen, *Crisis and Change*, p. 4; and Elvira Pérez Ferreiro, *El Tratado de Uceda contra los Estatutos de Limpieza de Sangre. Una reacción ante el establecimiento del*

versos continued to play important roles in both civil and ecclesiastical spheres, especially in Toledo, where one hundred years after the Sarmiento legislation the city's archbishop promulgated discriminatory laws against converso clerics.<sup>90</sup>

*Purity-of-blood statutes of Archbishop Silíceo (1547)*

In none of the anti-converso laws did the 1449 *Sentencia-Estatuto* of Toledo leave its unlawful mark more than in the *Pureza-de-sangre* Statutes (1547) of Juan Martínez Guijarro (1477–1557), Inquisitor General of Spain and Archbishop of Toledo. Even though Pope Paul IV and Guijarro's former pupil, King Philip II, ratified Guijarro's statutes in 1555 and 1556, respectively—in spite of the latter's earlier opposition to it—Jesuit leaders would adamantly oppose the archbishop's attempt to impose anti-converso laws on the Society of Jesus, which had been founded just a few years earlier (1540), as we shall see in the following chapter.

Juan Martínez Guijarro—who used the Latinized form of his name, Silíceo, in order to disguise his lower-class social background—was born into a poor peasant family near Llerena (Villagarcía), an origin that would guarantee his blood's purity.<sup>91</sup> As had Loyola and his first companions, Silíceo studied at the University of Paris for many years. Upon his return to Spain, he continued his academic career at Salamanca, where he resided at the College of San Bartolomé at the time it introduced purity-of-blood statutes. Subsequently, Silíceo became Prince Philip's Latin preceptor, an office that earned him in 1546 the most elevated episcopal office in Spain—the Primatial See of Toledo—and the cardinalate in 1554. Seeking a veiled pretext to act against the converso Cobos clan of Toledo, whose preeminent representative, Francisco de los Cobos y Molina (d. 1547),<sup>92</sup> was the royal secretary who opposed Silíceo's appointment to the archbishopric, and to sabotage the

---

*Estatuto de Limpieza en la Orden Franciscana* (Madrid: Aben Ezra Ediciones, 2000), pp. 25–9.

<sup>90</sup> For an analysis of the adoption of the *limpieza* statues versus their actual implementation, see Linda Martz, "Pure Blood Statues in Sixteenth Century Toledo: Implementation as Opposed to Adoption," *Sefarad* 54 (1994): 83–106.

<sup>91</sup> See Sicroff, *Estatutos*, pp. 126–7; and Serrano, *Los conversos*, p. 51.

<sup>92</sup> See Sicroff, *Estatutos*, pp. 127–8; and Hayward Keniston, *Francisco de los Cobos, Secretary of the Emperor Charles V* (Pittsburgh: University of Pittsburgh Press, 1960).



nomination of the converso Fernando Jiménez as canon of the Toledan Church,<sup>93</sup> Sarmiento's avatar promulgated the *pureza-de-sangre* statutes in his cathedral chapter.

Silíceo's *raison d'être* for his anti-converso legislation is shared with the 1449 Toledan statutes and, thus, does not need further analysis here: the converso, who inherits the bad moral inclinations of his Jewish ancestors, is unsuitable to hold any public office. Claiming the authority of the Scriptures and the Fourth Council of Toledo, he argues that the conversos "still hold on their lips the milk of their ancestors' recent perversity."<sup>94</sup> To Silíceo, this inclination to the vice of unfaithfulness takes roots in a man already at his birth.<sup>95</sup> A choice between pure and impure Christians was to Silíceo similar to a choice between bred and in-bred horses.<sup>96</sup> These arguments seemed absurd even to the non-converso clerics, Pero González de Mendoza from Guadalajara and Álvaro de Mendoza from Talavera, who—supported by the numerous converso clergy of Toledo—called for the immediate annulment of the statutes. But Silíceo viewed himself as the harbinger of the second Spanish *Reconquista* and made every possible effort, cunning conspiracy included, to have his anti-converso laws approved by both royal and papal authorities.<sup>97</sup> One of the major defenders of Silíceo's racial discrimination was Bishop Diego de Simancas.

---

<sup>93</sup> See Sicroff, *Estatutos*, p. 131. In his study of "the most infamous and representative" case of Cazorla in relation to the 1547 Statutes, Samson Alexander stressed that "although anti-Semitic prejudice played a role, it was predominantly about Toledan politics, opposed visions of the Church and contested notions of religious identity as either a genealogical category, something inhering in blood lines or something associated with virtue and personal piety" (see Samson Alexander, "The *adelantamiento* of Cazorla, *converso* Culture and Toledo Cathedral Chapter's 1547 *estatuto de limpieza de sangre*," *Bulletin of Spanish Studies*, 84/7 (2007): 819.

<sup>94</sup> "Tienen en los labios la leche de la reciente perversidad de sus antepasados" (quoted by Sicroff, *Estatutos*, p. 131). On Américo Castro's interpretation of the alleged Jewish-biblical origins of Silíceo's statutes, see Netanyahu, *Toward the Inquisition*, pp. 7–8.

<sup>95</sup> See Sicroff, *Estatutos*, pp. 131–2. As we have seen, this view was contrasted by Alonso de Cartagena, who—quoting Augustin—argued that a man who does not follow the vices of his parents, wherever he comes from, is honest and saved.

<sup>96</sup> It is interesting to note in this context that Covarrubias y Orozco's *Tesoro de la lengua castellana* (Madrid, 1611) defined the term *raza* as "the caste of pure-bred horses which are branded with an iron so that they may be recognized as such. *Raza* in [human] lineages is understood in a bad sense, such as having within oneself some of the lineage of Moors or Jews." See Yerushalmi, *Assimilation and Racial Anti-Semitism*, p. 15.

<sup>97</sup> See Sicroff, *Estatutos*, pp. 142–67.



Defensio Toletani Statuti of *Diego de Simancas* (1573)

An Old Christian nobleman from Cordova and a law student at the University of Salamanca and the College of Santa Cruz in Valladolid, Diego de Simancas (1513–83) held prominent positions in the bureaucracies of Crown, Church, and Inquisition: he was a judge, a bishop, and an inquisitor.<sup>98</sup> He published his *Defensio* in Antwerp under the pseudonym of Didacus (Diego) Velásquez, first in 1573 and again in 1575.<sup>99</sup> Simancas's anti-converso feelings were already known much earlier, however: he let them slip during the inquisitorial process of Archbishop Bartolomé Carranza (1503–76),<sup>100</sup> who—as we shall see—was defended by the converso Francisco de Toledo Herrera, the first Jesuit cardinal, and by Francisco de Borja, the third superior general of the Jesuits and a protector of conversos.

Simancas's defense of Silíceo's decree, which in the former's own words prohibited "those from the circumcision," Mahometans, or heretics from receiving benefices and offices in the Church of Toledo,<sup>101</sup> was a response to converso "machinations" against Silíceo's legislation, such as Alonso Lobo's preaching in Rome in the early 1570s, and a defense against "deceiving the pope and his ministers," which was the supposed goal of the "prolix" *Apologia pro Iudaeis Christianis* (Paris, 1553). This last work was written by the French Franciscan biblical scholar from the Sorbonne, Henri Mauroy, who—following the example of Cartagena and Oropesa—strongly opposed the *pureza-de-sangre* statutes. Among many things that scandalized Simancas was the fact that Mauroy made a connection between Spanish conversos and the biblical patriarchs, which was provocatively expressed in the very work's full title: *Apologia in duas partes divisa, pro iis, qui ex patriarcharum, Abrahae videlicet, Isaac, et Jacob, reliquiis sati, de Christo Iesu et fide catholica pie ac sancte sentiunt, in Archiepiscopum Toletanum, et suos asseclas* [The Defense

<sup>98</sup> For his biographical profile, see Kimberly Lynn Hossain, *Arbiters of Faith, Agents of Empire: Spanish Inquisitors and their Careers, 1550–1650*. Thesis (Ph.D.) (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University, 2006), pp. 121–5.

<sup>99</sup> For a brief presentation of the work's content, see Lynn Hossain, *Arbiters of Faith*, pp. 179–81.

<sup>100</sup> For a detailed analysis of Simancas's participation in Carranza's process, see Lynn Hossain, *Arbiters of Faith*, especially pp. 143 and 149.

<sup>101</sup> "Siliceus decreto sive statuto vetuit, ne ii qui ex circumcissione sunt aut ex Mahumetanis, vel Haereticis nati, beneficia et officia deinceps in eadem Ecclesia habere possent" (Simancas, *Defensio*, f. 2).

(divided in two parts) of those who descending from the patriarchs, that is Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, leaving apart others, piously and saintly feel about Jesus Christ and the Catholic faith, against the Archbishop of Toledo and his followers].

Indeed, one of the main arguments, which Simancas stressed, was the repudiation of the converso “trite prattle” about their consanguinity with Jesus’ Jewish humanity descending from Abraham. Following the argumentation of Baltasar Porreño,<sup>102</sup> Simancas claimed that the Toledan statutes concerned only the descendants of perfidious Jews, who had killed Christ the Lord, the Apostles, and other saints, and who—persisting for close to fifteen hundred years in their perfidy—blasphemed Christ God three times every day and wanted to kill and destroy all other Christians.<sup>103</sup> To Simancas, converso consanguinity with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob is impossible, for these names belong not to the flesh and nature but to grace, the promise, the faith, and the sacrament. These names pertain no more to the converso than to the Gentile faithful, who are from the faith sons of Abraham, as St. Paul wrote in his letters to Romans (4:11) and Galatians (3:7). The perfidious Jews cannot be sons of Abraham if they speak badly about the Savior. Moreover, their Talmud states that Abraham himself taught magic arts and diabolical inventions, as Hadrianus Finus had demonstrated.<sup>104</sup>

<sup>102</sup> See Sicroff, *Estatutos*, p. 214.

<sup>103</sup> “Statuta non tangunt nisi descendentes ex perfidis Iudaeis, qui Christum Dominum et Apostolos aliosque sanctos occiderunt et per mille quingentos circiter annos in sua perfidia persistentes, ter singulis diebus Deum Christum blasphemabantur et caeteros Christianos omnes occidere ac perdere vellent” (Simancas, *Defensio*, f. 15<sup>v</sup>).

<sup>104</sup> “Ad haec nomine Abraham, Isaac et Iacob, non sunt nomine carnis et naturae, sed nomine gratiae et promissionis et fidei et sacramenti: nec magis ad eos pertinent quam ad gentiles credentes: Nam qui ex fide sunt, ii sunt filii Abrahae, ut ad Romanos et Galatas divinus scribit Apostolus (Rom. 4, Gal. 3). Igitur quando parentes illorum Iudaei perfidi, maiores autem nostri christiani fideles erant, illi non veri filii Abrahae, sed nostri veri filii erant. Praeterea non solum de Salvatore Iudaei male loquuntur et sentiunt, sed de ipso etiam Abraham aiunt in suo Talmud docuisse magicas artes et inventiones daemonum: quo plane ostendunt se non esse veros Abrahae filios quam fabulam cum aliis impiis blasphemis ac deridendis retulit Finus Hadrianus lib. 9 cap. 8” (Simancas, *Defensio*, ff. 16<sup>r-v</sup>).

Hadrianus Finus (Fino, Fini d’Adria) from Ferrara was the author of *In Iudaeos Flagellum* (Venice, 1538), a long attack against Jewish practices contained in the Talmud. On other quotations from Finus regarding the Talmud as a source of laws against Christians, see Simancas, *Defensio*, f. 35<sup>v</sup>.

Through a detailed analysis of Jesus' relatives (Chapters 22 and 23), Simancas desires to convince the reader that because those relatives followed Christ faithfully, the Spanish conversos cannot be their descendants. Spanish conversos are the offspring of the Jews who killed Jesus and later found refuge in Spain after the destruction of Jerusalem.<sup>105</sup>

The association Mauroy makes between conversos and Jews, when he calls the former Jewish Christians or Jewish conversos or simply Jews, bothers Simancas.<sup>106</sup> At the same time, the common identification of the converso with the persona of the Jew is the anthropological backbone of Simancas's argumentation against conversos. The most frequent way Simancas refers to conversos in his *Defensio* is "those from the circumcision," which refers more to converso ancestry than to reality—only Judaizing conversos may have undergone the rite of circumcision. But to Simancas, the majority of conversos continue to celebrate Jewish rites, among them "the abominable circumcisions,"<sup>107</sup> as did "many rebellious people, mere talkers and deceivers, especially those of the circumcision group" in the primitive Church.<sup>108</sup> He echoes here Silíceo's claim that Jews who converted to Catholicism were motivated by fear and retained of the intent to go "back to their vomit" [as dogs do].<sup>109</sup>

"Those from the circumcision," continues Simancas, are fairly barred from the offices of the Church of Toledo, for they are stained

---

<sup>105</sup> "Addo quod novi isti Christiani non descendunt ex Iudaeis antiquis nobilibus, sed ex illis, qui excidio Hierosolymitano superfuerunt, qui, ut ait Aegesippus, viliores [...] in omnem terram ventilati sunt" (Simancas, *Defensio*, f. 29).

<sup>106</sup> See Simancas, *Defensio*, f. 2<sup>v</sup>. Alonso de Cartagena, quoting Isidor (*Etymologiarum liber octavus*, cap. X), opposed the use of the term *iudaei baptizati* for Christians of Jewish origins, since being a Jew demands a certain way of life. The term may be applied only to Judaizing Christians (see Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, pp. 336 and 339).

<sup>107</sup> "Plerique ex Iudaeis, qui dudum ad Christianam fidem promoti sunt, nunc blasphemantes Christum, non solum Iudaicos ritus perpetrasse noscuntur, sed etiam abominandas circumcisiones exercere" (Simancas, *Defensio*, f. 31<sup>v</sup>).

<sup>108</sup> This is the interpretation of the Pauline Letter to Titus (1:10) that, according to Simancas, was given by Aquinas: "Accedit et illud Pauli apostoli in epistola ad Titum cap. 1 dicentis: 'Sunt multi inobedientes, vaniloqui et seductores, maxime qui de circumcissione sunt.' [...] Et Divus Thomas enarrans verba illa 'maxime qui de circumcissione sunt' inquit, qui cogebant homines iudaizare" (Simancas, *Defensio*, f. 32). See Thomas Aquinas, *Contra impugnantes Dei cultum et religionem*, 5.4, where this interpretation seems to be missing.

<sup>109</sup> See Sicroff, *Estatutos*, p. 145; and Simancas, *Defensio*, f. 35<sup>v</sup>. Alonso de Cartagena too used this expression in his *Defensorium* (see Cartagena, *Defensorium*, ed. Verdín-Díaz, pp. 328, 332, 334, and 373).

by the blood of their Jewish ancestors, which is “like a poison that kills the entire human being.”<sup>110</sup> Therefore, as the Franciscan Alonso de Espina had noted in his *Fortalitiū fidei*,<sup>111</sup> conversos are heirs to Jewish bad moral inclinations that are transmitted through the generations. As Jews, they are prone to abuses (*proclives ad contumelias*) and are—in the Bible’s own words—“a stiff-necked people,” “a crooked and depraved generation,” “a brood of vipers,” “a wicked generation,” “a perverse generation, children who are unfaithful,” “an unbelieving and perverse generation,” and “a faithless generation.”<sup>112</sup> Simancas, who actually does not use Silíceo’s term of (perfidious and unfaithful) *raza*, concludes that the perception of recent Jewish conversos as ambitious, disobedient, idly talking, and deceiving is longstanding, and it is meritorious that they are barred or fired from some ecclesiastical benefices.<sup>113</sup>

Simancas ambiguously claims that “even though soul-illnesses (*animi morbi*) do not pass from parents to children, the latter, however, fall into those vices by which their parents had been affected.” He quotes some popular proverbs to prove his point: “Like mother, like daughter” (Ezekiel 16:44) and “Bad egg, bad bird.” Thus, “the children of the infidel seem to be prone to infidelity.”<sup>114</sup> Simancas’s predecessor, Inquisitor Silíceo, expressed this idea more eloquently (as we have seen above): “[The New Christians] still hold on their lips the milk of their ancestors’ recent perversity.”<sup>115</sup> The “hereditary vices,” especially ambition, conspiracy, and greed for power, are—according to Simancas—peculiar to

<sup>110</sup> Simancas, *Defensio*, f. 23<sup>v</sup>: “quasi venenum hominem totum inficere.”

<sup>111</sup> See Sicroff, *Estatutos*, pp. 100–1.

<sup>112</sup> “Iudaei semper fuerunt cervicis durissimae, generatio eorum prava et perversa, progenies viperarum, generatio pessima. [...] Accedunt et verba illa Scripturae divinae contra Iudaeos: Generatio perversa, et infideles filii; et illa Salvatoris, ‘O generatio incredula et perversa!’ Tum ille: ‘O generatio infidelis!’” (Simancas, *Defensio*, ff. 29<sup>r-v</sup>).

<sup>113</sup> “Vetus ergo et antiquus est recenter conversis ex Iudaeis ambitiosos, inobedientes, vaniloquos et seductores esse. Merito igitur a quibusdam ecclesiasticis beneficiis arcentur et eiiciuntur” (Simancas, *Defensio*, f. 32).

<sup>114</sup> Nam etsi animi morbi ex patribus in filios non transeant, saepe tamen filii solent in ea vitia incidere, quibus parentes fuere affecti. [...] Et ut alia praeteream, vetus proverbium est ab Ezechiele relatum: Sicut mater, ita filia eius et malum ovum, malus corvus [...], sic infidelium filii ad infidelitatem prona esse videntur (Simancas, *Defensio*, f. 29<sup>r</sup>). Elsewhere (f. 31<sup>v</sup>) Simancas stresses this point by quoting Cicero’s *De Officiis* (1, 32): “Plerique autem parentum praeceptis imbuti [filii], ad eorum consuetudinem moremque deducimur.”

<sup>115</sup> “Tienen en los labios la leche de la reciente perversidad de sus antepasados” (quoted by Sicroff, *Estatutos*, p. 131). The Anglican John Foxe (1517–87) expressed a similar idea in one of his sermons: “Jewish Infidelitie... seemeth after a certaine maner their inheritable disease, who are after a certaine sort, from their mothers wombe,

Jewish conversos and more frequent in them than in others. Moreover, even Muslims are less implacable and querulous, more truthful, and of better manners than Jews.<sup>116</sup>

This is the reason, as Silíceo had already argued,<sup>117</sup> why many Spanish ecclesiastical institutions had excluded them in order to preserve tranquility and peace and avoid schisms and quarrels.<sup>118</sup> Following Silíceo's Statutes, which had converso conspiracy as their leitmotiv—the conversos infiltrated the offices of importance in the Church of Toledo<sup>119</sup>—Simancas claims that the history of Judeo-converso conspiracy against the city of Toledo was very old. Jews helped the Muslim invaders occupy Toledo [711 C.E.];<sup>120</sup> they plotted against the Spanish king, as the documents of the Fourth Council of Toledo indicate; during the reign of King Juan [II], conversos conspired against the prefect of the city of Toledo [Pero Sarmiento] and other Old Christians in order to kill them and occupy the city, so that they could blatantly go back to Judaism; and they organized in Toledo the same kind of plot twice during the reign of Ferdinand and Isabella.<sup>121</sup> Converso intrigues were

---

naturally carries through perverse forwardness, into all malicious hatred, & contempt of Christ, & his Christians" (quoted in Adelman, *Blood Relations*, p. 66).

<sup>116</sup> "Cur magis queruli et implacabiles sunt quam hi qui ex Mahometanis descendunt? Quandoquidem Saraceni et veraciores et fortiores et meliorum morum quam Iudaei sunt" (Simancas, *Defensio*, f. 35<sup>v</sup>).

<sup>117</sup> See Sicroff, *Estatutos*, p. 162.

<sup>118</sup> "Habent maiori ex parte hi, qui ex circumcissione sunt, vitia quaedam peculiaris ac prae caeteris frequentiora quam ob rem non solum a quibusdam ecclesiis cathedralibus, sed etiam ab omnibus collegiis scholarium, ab aliquibus monasteriis et sodalitatibus iure quam optimo in Hispania excluduntur. Sunt enim ambitiosi atque dignitatum cupidi (ut iam ante dixi) quod vitium hereditarium fere illis inesse videtur. [...] Iure igitur statuta ea sunt, ut in collegiis et capitulis (ut vocant) sine istis cum tranquillitate et pace vivatur: tantum abest, ut propter statuta oriantur schismata vel dissensiones, ut isti fingunt" (Simancas, *Defensio*, f. 32<sup>v</sup>).

It is interesting to know that, as Silíceo and, after him, Simancas argued, a great number of ecclesiastical institutions closed their doors to candidates of Jewish ancestry. Others—like the Jesuit Diego de Guzmán—would not acquiesce by underscoring that only a few of them did so. See ARSI, *Instit.* 186e, f. 357.

<sup>119</sup> See Sicroff, *Estatutos*, p. 157.

<sup>120</sup> "Civitas Hispaniae nobilissima atque fortissima prodita fuit olim a Iudaeis, quando Mauri totam Hispaniam occuparunt multaque alia scelerata et nefaria in Hispania Iudaei perpetrasset traduntur" (Simancas, *Defensio*, f. 5).

<sup>121</sup> "Praetera conspirationibus, seditionibus et factionibus omnia inturbare solent. Neque id novum est: nam iam olim contra regem et regnum Hispaniae coniurarunt, ut in concilio Toletano IV constat, in cuius capite octavo hoc decretum exstat. Temporibus quoque Regis Ioannis eius nominis secundi Marrani coniuraverunt contra praefectum urbis Toletanae et contra veteres christianos, volentes eos occidere atque urbem ipsam occupare, ut palam ad Iudaismum redirent. Quod idem bis in eadem urbe commisisse dicuntur tempore Ferdinandi et Isabellae Regum vere catholicorum. Et nisi reiectae

unbearable in the Church of Toledo, for it was considered the most preeminent see in Spain, being the See of the Catholic Primate.<sup>122</sup>

This portrayal of the Spanish Judeo-conversos justifies, in Simancas's view, use of the term *marranos*, a term to whose meaning and origin he dedicates much space. Even though some maintain that the term *marranos* stands for any group of people descended from Jews and others claim that it refers to any infidels, Simancas stresses that the label *marranos* can be applied in neither way, for not all who are stained and contaminated by the Jewish blood can be called *marranos*, and not all infidels belong to this group, which—as Michael Ritus [1445–1515] wrote in his *De Hispaniae Regibus*—is composed only of those baptized Jews who are false Christians.<sup>123</sup>

But what is the origin of the word?—asks Simancas. Some argue that the Spanish Jews were named *marranos*, i.e., pigs—*marrano* commonly refers to a one-year-old pig and, thus, the same name was applied to those who descend from Jews and are suspected [of practicing Judaism]. But, according to Simancas, this explanation is unlikely, for Jews do not have anything in common with the quality of pigs, except the fact that when one grunts, all the others immediately run to help.<sup>124</sup>

The author of the *Defensio* subscribes instead to an older meaning of the term *marrano* that comes from the Hebrew word *mara*, which commonly means “to rebel.” This word is more appropriate, for Jews rebel against Christ the Lord, as Petrus Godofredus wrote under the

---

coniurationes fuissent, magnas caeterum christianorum strages edidissent” (Simancas, *Defensio*, f. 32<sup>v</sup>).

<sup>122</sup> “Plurimum quidem honoris detractebatur ecclesiae celeberrimae Toletanae cum eius praebendas ac dignitates illi occupabant, qui perfidiorum filii, vel hinc oriundi erunt quos iure vel iniuria Marranos appellare solent: proclives sunt hos homines ad contumelias” (Simancas, *Defensio*, f. 24<sup>v</sup>).

<sup>123</sup> “Ac primum quidem sunt qui dicant marranos vocari eos qui ex Iudaeis aliqua ex parte descendunt, alii aiunt marranos vocari quoslibet infideles. Sed neutrum verum est, nec enim omnes Iudaeorum sanguine maculati et contaminati sunt marrani, nec infideles omnes appellantur marrani. Sed eos Hispani marranos vocari solemus, qui ex Iudaeis descendentes et baptizati, ficti christiani sunt. Quod et Michael Ritus lib. 3 de regibus Hispaniae recte intellexit inquiring, ‘Qui Iudaeorum ritibus imbuti, nomine fenus sunt christiani, hi vulgo marrani dicuntur.’” (Simancas, *Defensio*, f. 24<sup>v</sup>).

<sup>124</sup> “Quidam dicunt Iudaeos ipsos ab Hispanis dictos fuisse Marranos, id est porcōs a nomine vulgari quo sues unius anni marranos vocant; atque inde fuisse nomine illo infami appellabor Marranos etiam eos, qui ex Iudaeis descendunt et suspecti sunt. Sed hoc verisimile non est, nihil enim commune habent isti cum qualitate porcorum, nisi quod uno gruniente, coeteri omnes ei ausiliaturi statim accurrunt (Simancas, *Defensio*, f. 24<sup>v</sup>).

entry “apostate:” “*Marranos* are those rebellious, contumacious, disobedient, and ambiguous men who under the name of Christianity are still attached to Judaism.”<sup>125</sup>

This sort of philological analysis is absent in the interpretation of St. Paul’s letters that Simancas employs to counter the converso contentions with regard to the ethnic, gender, and social structure of the Christian community. Contrary to what Cartagena and Oropesa argued, Paul’s expressions such as “there is no favoritism [*acceptatio personarum*] with God” (Romans 2:11); “there is no distinction between Jew and Greek” (Romans 10:12); “there is neither Jew nor Greek, servant nor free, male nor female” (Galatians 3:28); and “there is neither circumcision nor foreskin, Barbarian nor Scythian, servant nor free” (Colossians 3:11), are interpreted by Simancas as references to spiritual and not—as the New Christians claim—temporal things and, therefore, cannot be applied to condemn the Toledan purity-of-blood statutes that were aimed to deprive conversos of benefices and offices, which are temporal and not spiritual affairs.<sup>126</sup> Simancas abhors the idea of Christian society

---

<sup>125</sup> “Alii putant antiquiorem esse huius nomines originem et a verbo hebraico (mara) derivatum esse, quod inter alia signeat rebellare: cum enim isti rebelles sint contra Christum Dominum, recti Marrani sunt appellati quod et Petrus Godofredus in rubrica de Apostatis confirmare videtur, multa ex Haebraeis miscens ac demum concludens apostatas esse eos, quos Hispani Marranos vocant, qui sub nomine Christianismi, studiosi sunt Iudaismi, rebelles, contumaces, inobedientes, praevaricatores” (Simancas, *Defensio*, f. 25).

*The Encyclopedia Judaica* (13:559) explains the term *Marrano* as follows: “Term of opprobrium used to denigrate the New Christians of Spain and Portugal. Various origins for the term have been suggested. These include the Hebrew *marit ayin* (‘the appearance of the eye’), referring to the fact that the Marranos were ostensibly Christian but actually Judaizers; *mohoram attah* (‘you are excommunicated’); the Aramaic-Hebrew *Mar Anus* (‘Mr. Forced convert’); the Hebrew *mumar* (‘apostate’) with the Spanish ending *ano*; the Arabic *mura’in* (‘hypocrite’); and the second word of the ecclesiastical imprecation *anathema maranatha*. However, all such derivations are unlikely. The most probable, as clearly shown by Farinelli’s study, is from the Spanish word meaning swine, a word already in use in the early Middle Ages, though Y. Malkiel argues plausibly for a derivation from the late Arabic *barran*, *barrani*, meaning an outsider or stranger, and a coalescence of this word with the term *marrano* ‘pig, pork’ derived from Latin *verres* ‘wild boar.’ The term probably did not originally refer to the Judaizers’ reluctance to eat pork, as some scholars hold. From its earliest use, it was intended to impart the sense of loathing conveyed by the word in other languages. Although romanticized and regarded by later Jewry as a badge of honor, the term was not as widely used, especially in official circles, as is often believed.”

<sup>126</sup> “Paulus quidem Apostolus nihilominus in ea epistola tractat, quam de rebus terrenis: eius enim doctrina de spiritualibus est, componit dissidium ortum inter novos illos Christianos, qui se putabant meliores aut perfectiores esse propter praeputium, aut propter circumcisionem. Docet utrosque divinus Apostolus apud Christum



in which there would be “no distinction between noble and ignoble, between good and bad lineage, between honorable and humble.”<sup>127</sup>

This interpretation of Paul’s thought is contrary to what Pope Nicholas V expressed in his bull *Humani generis inimicus* (1449), to which Simancas dedicates Chapter 17. He questions there the authenticity of the bull that became a weapon of the converso counterattack against the Sarmiento legislation as contrary to the Catholic faith, as we have seen earlier, and against the Jesuit *de genere* decree, as we shall see in Chapter Three. Nevertheless, Simancas discusses a portion of the bull he probably read in Alonso de Oropesa’s *Lumen*. The copied paragraph (which happens to be authentic) refers to the addressee of the Sarmiento statutes: the New Christians and their descendants who “were not to be admitted to honors, dignities, offices and notaries, and testify in the trials of Christians, because of their recent receipt of faith, bringing dishonors of word and deed.” Simancas argues that the bull’s text refer not specifically to ecclesiastical benefices—as the Silíceo legislation did—but to all honors, dignities, etc. In addition—he underscores—Pope Paul IV, who confirmed the Statutes of Toledo, expressly abrogated Nicholas’s bull.<sup>128</sup>

---

Dominum nullam esse distinctionem Iudaei et Graeci, nullamque esse acceptionem personarum, quid inde contra statuta quae de rebus temporalibus sunt. [...] Quod si verba illa non est Iudaeus neque Graecus non est servus neque liber non est masculus neque femina, gentilis et Iudaeus, circumcisio et praeputium, barbarus et Scytha, servus et liber, sed omnia in omnibus Christus: si haec inquam et similia verba efficiunt, ut omnes Christiani in rebus temporalibus cunctis aequales esse debeant, iam servus et femina, Barbarus et Scytha nostra esse contra iura illa divina quae de spiritualibus, non autem de rebus terrenis loquuntur” (Simancas, *Defensio*, ff. 7<sup>r-v</sup>).

<sup>127</sup> “Iam hodie nulla distinctio erit nobilis aut ignobilis, boni aut mali generis, illustris aut vilis, denique nullus erit ordo reipublicae. Absit autem ab animis fidelium tam iniqua persuasio, ut apostoli doctrina tutius rectae pulitiae formam damnare, aut subvertere videatur (Simancas, *Defensio*, f. 7).

<sup>128</sup> “Proferunt contra statutum Toletanum bullam Nicolai quinti, ex qua colligunt, statutum esse contra fidem catholicam, quia, inquit, nos a veritate catholicae fidei aberrantes, ad viam veritatis deducere cupientes et Paulo post affectantes ut quisque quae recta sunt spiat: et qui contra christianae legis normam falsa seminare et proximos scandalizare, quae unitatis et pacis contraria sunt praesumpserunt [...]. Cui primo respondetur eam bullam authenticam non inveniri ideoque fide carere. Deinde longe aliud fuisse quod tunc tractabatur: nam ut in illa scriptura (qualisquaque tandem sit) continetur, illud est quod quidam asserebant novos Christianos et eorum filios non debere ad honores, dignitates, officia tabellionatus et ad testimonium in Christianorum causis perhibendum admitti, eos verbis et factis, contumeliis afficientes. Haec sunt verba illis chartae. Ex quibus perspicuum est, eos qui illa credebant et asserebant non de beneficiis quibusdam ecclesiasticis, sed generaliter ac universe de omnibus honoribus, dignitatibus, officiis publicis atque adeo de testimoniiis perhibendis egisse: novos christianos iniuriis etiam afficientes atque ea quidem omnia non aliam ob causam,



True, Pope Paul IV approved the Silíceo Statutes and issued the harshest anti-Jewish legislation (*Cum nimis absurdum*, 1555), which was supported by Ignatius of Loyola.<sup>129</sup> Conversely, under the sway of the same Loyola, his predecessor, Paul III, published in 1542 the bull *Cupientes Iudaeos* (1542), which—among other things—allowed Jewish catechumens to retain property after their conversion.

In conclusion, this chapter has provided a brief historical *excursus* of the intricate and rich literature on the concept of *pureza de sangre* and its adoption in civil and ecclesiastical life of fifteenth- and sixteenth-century Spain. We have discussed the most important and emblematic five texts that reflect the variety of approaches to the issue: Mayor Sarmiento's *Sentencia-Estatuto* (1449); Bishop Alonso de Cartagena's *Defensorium unitatis christianae* (1449–50); Fray Alonso de Oropesa's *Lumen ad revelationem gentium et gloria plebis Dei Israel, de unitate fidei et de concordia et pacifica aequalitate fidelium* (1450–66); Archbishop Silíceo's *Estatutos de limpieza* (1547); and Bishop Diego de Simancas's *Defensio Toletani Statuti* (1573). An analysis of these primary sources and their interpretation by contemporary scholars serves as a necessary framework to contextualize the discussion about the adoption and implementation of the same concept of purity-of-blood in the legislation of the Society of Jesus, which was founded by the Spanish nobleman Ignatius of Loyola and a group of his followers, many of whom were born and studied in Spain before meeting at the University of Paris and then moving to Italy to become an officially recognized new religious order. The following chapter traces Jesuit approaches to the Spanish policy of *pureza de sangre* and the role conversos played in the early Society of Jesus from the foundation of the Order in 1540 until the death of the third superior general, Francisco de Borja, in 1572, which marked a shift in the Jesuit policy towards conversos.

---

nisi quia novi christiani erant, ut bis in illa papyro relatum est, his verbis: propter novam assumptionem fidei. Iterum poppter novam fidei receptionem. Igitur [...] videri non debet, si dicantur illic eam opinionem erroneam esse, nec illos recta sensisse. In statuto autem nostro omnia prius diversa sunt, nec effici ullo pacto potest, ut id haeresis sit [...]. Postremo, illa bulla nominatim in hac parte revocata est a Paulo quarto in confirmatione statuti, his ipsis verbis: Non obstante recolendae memoriae Nicolai Papae quinti, similiter praedecessoris nostri, et aliis constitutionibus apostolicis, etc.” (Simancas, *Defensio*, ff. 13<sup>v</sup>–14).

<sup>129</sup> See Foa, “*Limpieza* versus Mission, p. 300.



## CHAPTER TWO

### EARLY JESUIT PRO-CONVERSO POLICY (1540–72)

*We [Jesuits] take a pleasure in admitting those of Jewish ancestry.*  
Jerónimo Nadal, S.J., 1554

The history of Jesuits of Jewish ancestry in the sixteenth century mirrors the earlier converso history in fifteenth-century Spain that we have traced in Chapter One: from the initial acceptance of “New Christians” and the rise of their influence and power to the consequent deep resentment of “Old Christians,” who had made increasing efforts to curb and possibly eliminate the converso presence first in the civil and then ecclesiastical institutions. Escaping from the persecuting civil society, a significant number of conversos had filled ecclesiastical ranks in Spain during the fifteenth century.<sup>1</sup> By the mid-sixteenth century, however, a number of Iberian church communities had closed their doors to them, especially the Order of the Jeronimites, which was characterized by its converso pro-Erasmist and *alumbrado* openness. Consequently, many conversos, who were rejected or feared that they would be discriminated against, found at least a temporary haven in the Society of Jesus, a new appealing religious order<sup>2</sup> that initially objected to lineage discrimination and whose spirituality in some aspects seemed akin to the Iberian movements of Erasmists and *alumbrados*, which had attracted many conversos.<sup>3</sup> Additionally, the Jesuits opened many new remote frontiers for missionary activities that often became to conversos and/or their superiors a veiled opportunity to avoid intolerance at home.

---

<sup>1</sup> See Rey, “San Ignacio de Loyola y el problema de los cristianos nuevos,” pp. 173–5.

<sup>2</sup> For an analysis of different motives by which the conversos may have been driven to enter the Jesuits, see Rastoin, “Les chrétiens d’origine juive,” pp. 357–63.

<sup>3</sup> See *DHCJ* 1:86. Kevin Ingram characterized the *alumbrados* as those who “rejected Catholic dogma for mystical and quietist religious practice” (see Ingram, ed., *Conversos and Moriscos*, p. 5), but their spirituality and doctrine was much more complex. See, for example, Pastore, *Un’eresia spagnola: spiritualità conversa, alumbradismo e inquisizione*.

This chapter shows why and how conversos played a key role in the Society of Jesus from its inception in 1540 through the generalates of Ignatius of Loyola, Diego Laínez, and Francisco de Borja. Historians have been aware of the presence of conversos in the Jesuit ranks (in the converso historiography fewer than five names of Jesuits of Jewish ancestry are usually quoted), but it has been insufficiently shown to what extent the early Jesuits richly, knowingly, and strategically benefited from their converso confreres. The presence of a prominent minority of Jewish ancestry in the Order was not always a peaceful *convivencia*, and its influence was periodically resented; furthermore, scholarship on early Jesuit history has minimized the importance of the internal struggle between “new” and “old” Christians in the development of the Society that reached its peak after the death of Borja in 1572. A key to comprehending the “Jewish question” in the Jesuit Order is first to be found in the approach to Jews and conversos of its founder, Ignatius of Loyola.

*Ignatius of Loyola as a “deep spiritual Semite”*

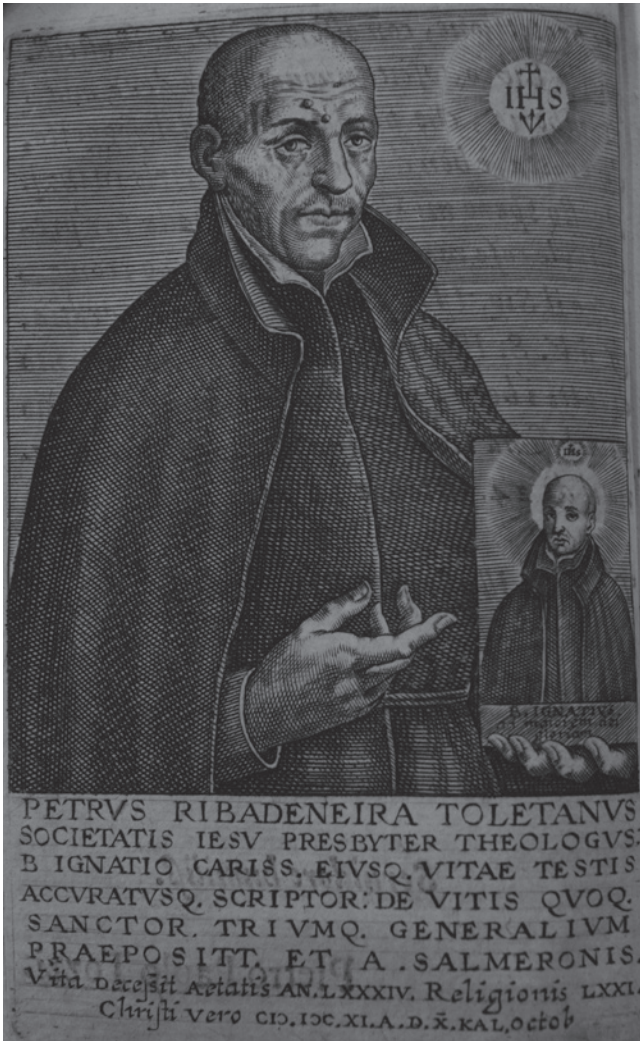
It is now a cliché to begin an account of Loyola’s Judeo-philia by quoting the testimonies of Pedro de Ribadeneyra about Ignatius’s desire to be an ethnic Jew. These testimonies come from a closet-converso Jesuit—a revealing detail that other scholars have often failed to point out—who may have been interested in spreading this information and concealing other information (as he not infrequently did on other occasions).<sup>4</sup> It will be helpful, therefore, to briefly introduce to the reader the author of these accounts.

Pedro Ribadeneyra, whose name derives from the Galician town of Riva de Neira in the province of Lugo, was born on 1 November 1527 to the converso Álvaro Husillo Ortiz de Cisneros (grandson of Queen Isabella’s page and later governor of Toledo, Hernando Ortiz de Cisneros), a legal of the city council in Toledo, and Catalina de Villalobos y Ribadeneyra.<sup>5</sup> As in the case of other converso Jesuit

---

<sup>4</sup> See below our discussion on the censorship of Ribadeneyra’s biography of Laínez. See also Bataillon (*Erasmus y España*, p. 217), who argues that Ribadeneyra falsified the account of Loyola’s judgment on Erasmus’s *Enchiridion*.

<sup>5</sup> See Gómez-Menor, “La progenie hebrea del padre Pedro de Ribadeneyra,” pp. 307–32.



Source: Pedro de Ribadeneyra, *Della religione del principe christiano* (Bologna, 1622). Courtesy of John J. Burns Library at Boston College.

Figure 1. Pedro de Ribadeneyra as *the* biographer of Ignatius of Loyola. Pedro de Ribadeneyra (1526–1611) from Toledo was the author of the first official biography of the Jesuit founder, Ignatius of Loyola, which has had numerous editions in various languages. The caption reads that Ribadeneyra was Ignatius’s accurate biographer. However, the French contemporary historian Marcel Bataillon charged Ribadeneyra with “the crime of the hagiographic deformation.” Indeed, Ribadeneyra, who was a closet-converso, concealed the fact that the Inquisition in Alcalá had accused Loyola of being a crypto-Jew.

Modern scholarship has established Ribadeneyra’s Jewish genealogy.

families, some of his siblings became men and women religious: his brother Alfonso de Villalobos, for instance, entered the Benedictines in Valladolid. After his studies of grammar under the masters Cedillo and Venegas at Toledo, in May 1539 Pedro de Ribadeneyra followed the opulent court of Cardinal Alessandro Farnese (1520–89), Pope Paul III's nephew, the future intermediary between the papacy and the Society, and its major benefactor. Pedro's widowed mother hosted him at the occasion of the funeral of Charles V's wife, Isabella of Portugal (1503–39). Watched by his converso uncle, Pedro de Ortiz, the emperor's ambassador in Rome, Pedro stayed at Farnese's Roman palace for fourteen months. Fearing punishment for an unrevealed transgression, he secretly escaped from there and found a refuge in Loyola's loving paternal arms,<sup>6</sup> despite his young age of thirteen. After having raised this charming yet restless lad in Jesuit spirituality for two years, Ignatius planned that Pedro should study in Paris (1542), but he ended up in Spanish Flanders (Leuven) due to the Franco-Imperial War. After having founded a college there, he returned to Rome with the Valencian Juan Jerónimo Doménech<sup>7</sup> in 1543. Subsequently, Ribadeneyra studied for four years in Padua (1545–9), where he became a friend of Juan Alfonso de Polanco,<sup>8</sup> whom Loyola later recommended supervise Pedro.<sup>9</sup> As Ignatius informed Ortiz about his protégé's progress, Pedro at Padua gained a solid foundation in the humanities.<sup>10</sup> Thereafter, he was ready to be sent to the newly opened college in Palermo, where he taught rhetoric (1549–52). He also preached in Sicily, even though

---

<sup>6</sup> Polanco testified to Loyola's special feelings towards Ribadeneyra: "El Padre Maestro Ignacio, por quererle tanto, no quiso determinar por sí acerca de sus cosas, y así las cometió al Padre Láinez y a mí" (*Mon Rib.* 2:264). See also John W. O'Malley and James P.M. Walsh, *Constructing a Saint Through Images: The 1609 Illustrated Biography of Ignatius of Loyola* (Philadelphia: Saint Joseph's University Press, 2008), pp. 12–3.

<sup>7</sup> Juan Jerónimo Doménech: \*1516 Valencia; SJ 1539; †1592 Valencia; priest in 1538; professed in 1555. His father, who was an affluent pharmacist, helped found the Jesuit College in his native city. He was active mostly in Sicily as its threefold provincial, where he also became the confessor of Viceroy Juan de Vega. In the meantime he was rector of the Roman College after the removal of Vázquez. Mercurian sent him back to Spain in 1576. His role in the vocations of Nadal and Miró was also pivotal. He was one of the major promoters of the Morisco apostolate and Arabic studies in the Society (see *DHCJ* 2:1135–6).

<sup>8</sup> Juan Alfonso de Polanco: \*1517 Burgos (Spain); SJ 1541; †1576 Rome; priest in 1546; professed in 1549. Palmio considered him the leader of the converso inner circle, and much space, thus, will be dedicated to him below.

<sup>9</sup> See *Mon Ign.* 1:519–26.

<sup>10</sup> See *Mon Ign.* 1:359.

he was still a student. Upon his return to Rome, where he was called to teach rhetoric at the newly opened Roman College and complete his studies there, he was ordained priest in 1553 and sent again to Flanders, with the mission to deepen the roots of the Society there by seeking the royal support of the Jesuit-averse Prince Philip,<sup>11</sup> who remained impressed by Ribadeneyra's oratory. There, he received the sad news about his spiritual father's death. In his *Confessions*, Pedro described the feelings that arose in him that day: "Oh, my beloved Father Ignatius. Yes, I call you my, for—even though you have been the father of the entire Society—you've been especially of mine, because you generated me in Jesus Christ."<sup>12</sup>

Among many episodes of his spiritual father's life he collected for Ignatius's hagiography, Ribadeneyra recounted that

One day when many of us were dining together, [Ignatius] speaking of himself about a certain topic, said that he would take it as a special grace from our Lord to come from Jewish lineage; and adding a reason, he said: "Why? Imagine that a man could be a kinsman by blood [*secundum carnem*] of Christ our Lord and of our Lady the glorious Virgin Mary!" He spoke those words with so much emotion that tears welled into his eyes. This is something that deeply impressed everyone.<sup>13</sup>

On another occasion, Loyola's hagiographer observed that

On hearing our Father make the same statement, which I recounted above, he crossed himself and exclaimed: "A Jew?!" And he spitted on the ground at this name. Our father said to him: "Now, Señor Pedro de Zárate, let us be reasonable. Listen to what I have to say." And then he gave him so many reasons for this that he really persuaded him to wish to be of Jewish lineage.<sup>14</sup>

<sup>11</sup> See ARSI, *Inst.* 117a, f. 159<sup>v</sup>.

<sup>12</sup> "Oh, mi querido Padre Ignacio! Sí, os llamo mío, pues aunque Padre de toda la Compañía, habéis sido más particularmente mío, pues me engendrateis en Jesu-Cristo" (*Mon Rib.* 1:197). I modernized spelling and interpunction in this and following quotations from the MHSI.

<sup>13</sup> See *Mon Rib.* 2: 375; and *Fontes Narr.* 2:476: "Un día que estábamos comiendo delante de muchos, a cierto propósito, hablando de sí, dijo que tuviera por gracia especial de nuestro Señor venir de linaje de judíos; y añadió la causa, diciendo:—¡Como! ¡Poder ser el hombre pariente de Cristo N[uestro] S[eñor] *secundum carnem*, y de nuestra Señora la gloriosa Virgen María!—Las cuales palabras dijo con tal semblante y con tanto sentimiento que se le saltaron las lágrimas y fue cosa que se notó mucho."

<sup>14</sup> "¿Judío?—y escupiendo a este nombre, nuestro Padre le dijo:—'Aora, S[eño]r Pedro de Zárate, estemos a razón: ógame V[uestra] M[er]ced.'—Y que le dio tantas razones para esto, que verdaderamente le persuadió a desear ser de linaje de judíos" (*Fontes Narr.* 2:477).



A much less-known confirmation of Ignatius's desire to be of Jewish stock comes from the testimony of Diego de Guzmán (about whom much will be told below), which was included in his letter to Claudio Acquaviva.<sup>15</sup> He refers there to a Jew who served Pope Paul III and later entered Loyola's community of catechumens, where he established a friendship with Ignatius:

Chatting with him one day, he told him: "I, my father Ignatius, would prefer, if God were served, not to be born of this lineage, for these people persecuted and crucified Jesus Christ our Lord." And our father answered him, "Do you want me to say what I feel about this? To tell you the truth, if our Lord would like me to choose this lineage to be born of, I would not choose other than yours. And the reason for this is that the Lord himself wanted to choose this lineage for him and to be son of Abraham and David and other patriarchs and kings; and of them was his most holy Mother, Virgin Mary, with her husband Saint Joseph, whom he used to call 'My Father.' And also the glorious Virgin, his mother, told him when they found him in the temple, 'Your father and I were looking for you with pain.'" And hearing this response from our blessed father Ignatius, the New Christian remained very surprised and greatly consoled.<sup>16</sup>

These expressions of Loyola's Judeophilia are usually juxtaposed with an account of an interrogation by the vicar general of the diocese of Alcalá, who suspected Íñigo of crypto-Judaism, most likely because

---

<sup>15</sup> Claudio Acquaviva: \*1543 Atri (Italia); SJ 1567; †1615 Rome; priest in 1574; professed in 1576. Pius IV appointed him *cameriere segreto partecipante* at the papal curia. Mercurian made him rector of the Roman College and of the college in Naples. In 1576 he was appointed provincial of Naples and in 1579 of Rome. General Congregation 4 (1580) elected him superior general at the age of thirty-seven. Under his generalate, anti-converso measures were adopted; we shall analyze them in the next chapter.

<sup>16</sup> "Habiéndose catequizado en nuestra casa profesá (según entiendo), donde estaba nuestro padre, quedó con grande amistad y agradecimiento con nuestro padre y, hablando un día con el le dijo, 'Yo, padre mío Ignacio, no quisiera, si Dios fuera servido, haber nacido de este linaje por haber esta gente perseguido y crucificado a Jesús Cristo nuestro Señor.' Y le respondió nuestro padre, '¿Queréis que os diga [...] lo que yo siento en esto? Yo os digo [...] y de verdad que, si nuestro Señor quisiera darme a escoger este linaje yo quisiera nacer, no escogería otro sino este vuestro; y la razón es por haber querido el mismo Señor escogerlo para si y ser Hijo de Abraham y de David y de los otros patriarcas y reyes; y de ellos nació su santísima Madre la Virgen María con su esposo el Santo José al cual llamaba 'el Padre mío': y también la gloriosa Virgen, su madre, le dijo cuando lo halló en el templo, 'Tu padre y yo os buscábamos con dolor.' Y oyendo esta respuesta de nuestro bendito padre Ignacio, el nuevo cristiano quedó muy maravillado y con gran consolación" (ARSI, *Instit.* 186e, f. 355<sup>r-v</sup>).





Source: *Vita Beati P. Ignatii Loiolae Societatis Iesu Fundatoris* (Rome, 1609), plate 36 (the engraving is most likely by Peter Paul Rubens). Courtesy of John J. Burns Library at Boston College.

Figure 2. Ignatius of Loyola incarcerated by the Inquisition in Alcalá. The caption reads: *Compluti primum, postea Salamanticae, calumnias pro Christo et carcerem passus, ex ipso etiam carcere animas lucratur magnoque spiritus fervore seccensus. Non tot inquit in hac urbe sunt compedes quin plures ego Christi causa percipiam* (“First in Alcalá, and then in Salamanca, having suffered calumnies and prison for Christ, from the same prison [Ignatius] gains souls and is inflamed with great fervor of spirit. He said that there were not enough shackles in that city that he would not desire still more for the sake of Christ”). Loyola was incarcerated because the vicar general of Alcalá suspected him of crypto-Judaism, most likely due to his numerous contacts with *alumbrados*/Erasmists who often were of converso background.

of his numerous contacts with *alumbrados*/Erasmists there.<sup>17</sup> Loyola's converso secretary, Polanco, retrospectively narrated that

When, after the time described, the Vicar Figueroa came to question him, and among other things asked him if he recommended observance of the Sabbath, he replied, "For Saturdays I recommend special devotion to our Lady, and I know of no other observances for Saturday. Moreover, in my country there are no Jews."<sup>18</sup>

This text often has been interpreted as a testament to Íñigo's Basque pride in his blood purity (*vizcaino* unfairly became a synonym of the Old Christian) and an expression of his "sixteenth-century Guipuzcoan soul,"<sup>19</sup> which later would be spiritually transformed into Ignatius's desire to be a Jew by blood.<sup>20</sup> That conversion would occur as a result of the close friendship Loyola established with the converso Diego Laínez<sup>21</sup> (and Nicolas Bobadilla)<sup>22</sup> during their encounter at the University of Paris, where all moved after their studies at the Renaissance-influenced University of Alcalá de Henares that was founded in 1499 by Cardinal Francisco Jiménez de Cisneros, the Inquisitor General.

Some authors also have suggested that Íñigo's *methanoia* was due to his lack of contact with Jews.<sup>23</sup> This might be true, if one does not take into consideration crypto-Jews and conversos (who were commonly still considered Jews)—Loyola was born just before 1492, the *terminus*

---

<sup>17</sup> See Bataillon, *Erasmus y España*, pp. 203–44; John E. Longhurst, "Saint Ignatius at Alcalá. 1526–1527," *AHSI* 26 (1957): 252–6; idem, *Luther's Ghost in Spain (1517–1546)* (Lawrence, Kans.: Coronado Press, 1964), pp. 103–16; and *DHCF* 1:86. Interestingly enough, some historians omitted the question posed by the vicar general in their detailed accounts of Loyola's trials in Alcalá. See, for example, Paul Dudon, *St. Ignatius of Loyola* (Milwaukee: Bruce, 1949), pp. 139–60; and Astrain, *Historia*, 1:49–55. The suspicion of Íñigo's converso background was raised not only by Vicar General Juan Rodríguez Figueroa but also by the inquisitors during Loyola's first trial on 19 November 1525. For the minutes of the interrogation by the Franciscan Francisco Ximénes, who testified in the process, see *Mon Ign.* (*Scripta*), 1:600.

<sup>18</sup> See *Fontes Narr.* 2:548; *Chron.* 1:37.

<sup>19</sup> See Rey, "San Ignacio," p. 177; Reites, "St. Ignatius and the Jews," p. 2; and idem, *St. Ignatius and the Peoples of the Book*, pp. 122–3. To Rey's list of anti-Jewish legislation in the Basque country, Medina adds another document, but he doubts whether Loyola was representing the same mentality ("Ignacio de Loyola," p. 3). For an interpretation of the statutes of Guipúzcoa by Américo Castro, see Netanyahu, *Toward the Inquisition*, p. 4.

<sup>20</sup> See Rey, "San Ignacio," pp. 178–9; and Reites, *St. Ignatius and the People of the Book*, p. 99.

<sup>21</sup> See Reites, *St. Ignatius and the People of the Book*, pp. 123–7.

<sup>22</sup> See Medina, "Ignacio de Loyola," p. 3.

<sup>23</sup> See Rey, "San Ignacio," pp. 177–8; and Reites, "St. Ignatius and the Jews," p. 6.

*post quem* no Jews were allowed in Spain. However, in his story of Loyola's interrogation in Alcalá, Polanco may have employed a rhetorical device aimed to suggest such a development to his fellow Jesuits, from whom he suffered discrimination because of his own converso background, as we shall see below. Indeed, Polanco wrote this text during the last two years of his life, after he was removed from his office in 1573 as part of Mercurian's anti-converso "house cleansing."<sup>24</sup> It contains Loyola's purity-of-blood-pride answer that is missing from both the paragraph describing the same episode in Polanco's much earlier *Summarium Hispanicum* (c. 1548) and in what Loyola would narrate shortly before his death in 1556 to his note-taker, the converso-phobic Gonçalves da Câmara.<sup>25</sup> A similar rhetorical rather than fact-based defense of Ignatius's purity of blood was made by Jerónimo Nadal in his *Apologia pro Exercitiis S. P. Ignatii* (1554):

Ignatius is a Spaniard from the foremost nobility in the province of Guipúzcoa in Cantabria. In this province the Catholic faith has been preserved so uncontaminated and its peoples' zeal and constancy in faith have been so great from time immemorial that they do not allow any neophyte to live there. There is no record from the very beginnings of Christianity of anyone who was minimally suspected of heresy. This should have been enough to ward off any suspicion from Ignatius.<sup>26</sup>

<sup>24</sup> Everard Mercurian: \*c. 1515 Marcourt; SJ 1548; †1580 Rome. 1552–7: rector of Perugia; 1558–65: provincial of Flanders; 1565–72: assistant general for Germany; 1573–80: superior general. For his most recent biographical sketch, see Fois, "Everard Mercurian," pp. 1–33. One of the early Mercurian's biographers was Antonio Possevino, who most likely was of Jewish origin (see below). The text has remained unpublished (ARSI, *Vita* 142, ff. 1–15). Mercurian's election and anti-converso policy will be subject of the next chapter.

<sup>25</sup> The main source of the *Summarium* (see *Fontes Narr.* 1:146–256) is Láinez's letter-biography requested by Polanco, which does not mention, however, the question about the observance of the Sabbath (see Robert Maryks, ed., *Giacomo Láinez. Prima biografia ignaziana* [Naples: Centrum Ignatianum Spiritualitatis, 1996], pp. 33–4). Loyola's so-called *Autobiography* dictated to Câmara mentioned briefly that the vicar interrogated him about many things, even whether he "had observed Saturday" (see *Acta* [61], in *Fontes Narr.* 1:448). While writing the *Summarium*, Polanco was Loyola's secretary and likely gathered this information from Ignatius himself. Ribadeneyra, who was accused by Bataillon of "the crime of the hagiographic deformation" (*Erasmus*, pp. 207–8), concealed in his official biography of Ignatius this episode by reporting that nothing heretical was found during the process. Additionally, in 1585 Ribadeneyra censored this part in Maffei's *Vita S. Ignatii*, which made Acquaviva happy (see *Fontes Narr.* 3:220). For the immense printing success of Ribadeneyra's *Vita* and its numerous translations, including the Spanish one by Ribadeneyra himself, see O'Malley and Walsh, *Constructing a Saint Through Images*, pp. 14–5.

<sup>26</sup> *Mon Nadal* 4:825–6: "Est Ignatius hispanus, e prima nobilitate totius provinciae hipuscuae [sic] in Cantabria, in qua provincia adeo incontaminata fides catholica

Whatever the motive was for defending Loyola's purity of blood by his two closest converso associates, Ignatius's positive attitude towards judeo-conversos—developed by numerous contacts with them before being processed at Alcalá—seems to be irreconcilable with the image of Íñigo being proud of his pure-blood lineage.

Struck by the supposedly unusual benevolence of a Basque towards Jews and conversos,<sup>27</sup> some scholars even speculated about the potential converso background of Loyola himself. Kevin Ingram has hypothesized in his recent Ph.D. dissertation the converso origins of Íñigo's maternal grandfather, Dr. Martín García de Licona, who “was not just a merchant, [but] a man of letters and a financial advisor at court—that is to say his profile is very much that of a converso merchant professional.” Consequently, Íñigo too would be considered a converso.<sup>28</sup> More well documented is Ingram's claim about the converso stock of many individuals who surrounded Loyola in his “pilgrim years”: the *alumbrado* sympathizer of possible converso background, Juan Velázquez de Cuéllar (d. 1517)—chief treasurer (*contador mayor*) of King Ferdinand of Aragon (1479–1516), at whose court in Arévalo Loyola served as page for twelve years (1505–17); I[g]nés Pascual from the Barcelonese merchant family and her pious circle that supported Íñigo's stay in Manresa, Barcelona, and Paris;<sup>29</sup> his two roommates at Alcalá, Lope de Cáceres and Calixto de Sá [Saa],<sup>30</sup> the *alumbrado*-Erasmist friends there, his confessor Manuel Miona and the pub-

---

conservatur, antiquissime ea fidei constantia ac zelo sunt homines, ut nullum admittant neophytum, qui inter eos habitare possit, nullus post christianorum memoriam ex illis hominibus de minima haeresis suspicione sit notatus. Hinc fuit consequens nullam debuisse surripere suspicionis opinionem de Ignatio.” For the negation of the myth claiming there were no Jews or conversos in Guipúzcoa, see José Luis Orella Unzué, “La Provincia de Guipúzcoa y el tema de los judíos en tiempos del joven Íñigo de Loyola (1492–1528),” in Plazaola, ed., *Ignacio de Loyola y su tiempo*, pp. 847–68; and idem, *Las raíces de la hidalguía Guipuzcoana. El control de los judíos, conversos y extranjeros en Guipúzcoa durante el siglo XVI* (San Sebastián: Universidad de Deusto, 1995).

<sup>27</sup> See Rey, “San Ignacio,” pp. 177–8.

<sup>28</sup> See Kevin Ingram, *Secret lives, public lies: The conversos and socio-religious non-conformism in the Spanish Golden Age*. Ph.D. Thesis (San Diego: University of California, 2006), pp. 87–8.

<sup>29</sup> Along with Inés Pascual, it was Isabel [Ferrer] Roser (future first female Jesuit) and her husband Pere Joan Roser, a merchant from Barcelona, who took care of Íñigo's financial needs. See ACA, DIVERSOS, Monistol, Pergaminos, núm. 1043; and Polanco, *Summarium Hispanum*, 2:45.

<sup>30</sup> One wonders whether he was related to the converso brothers whom Loyola would later admit to the Society, Manuel and Gaspar de Sá (Saa).

lisher of Erasmus, Miguel Eguía;<sup>31</sup> and his financial patrons during the Parisian period, Juan de Cuéllar in Antwerp and Gonzalo de Aguilera in Bruges.<sup>32</sup> Apparently, the court of the Duke of Nájera and Viceroy of Navarre, Antonio Manrique de Lara (r. 1516–21), whom Íñigo served until his accident-turned-conversion at Pamplona in 1521, also had converso ties.<sup>33</sup>

The *alumbrado* environment of Loyola's sojourn at the Complutensian University (which he later denied)<sup>34</sup> was more extensively studied by Ignacio Cacho Nazábal in his *Íñigo de Loyola el heterodoxo*—without assigning it a specifically converso character, however.<sup>35</sup> Besides pointing out the *alumbrado* sympathies of the Duke of Nájera and analyzing the close relationship that Loyola established with the Erasmists, Miona and Eguía, Cacho has noticed the ramifications of the connections that the converso brothers Ortiz (who were related to Ribadeneyra) had with the *alumbrado* circle at Alcalá. The accomplished Parisian and Salmantican biblicist, Pedro Ortiz (d. 1548), had defended his Franciscan brother, Francisco,<sup>36</sup> from the Inquisition's accusations in Alcalá that stemmed from the latter's intimate spiritual relationship with the *beata* Francisca Hernández.<sup>37</sup> She had found protection at the court of Velázquez de Cuéllar, where Íñigo had served as page a few years earlier, before his arrival in Alcalá. In this town, Francisca Hernández had numerous followers, whom Loyola met. It

---

<sup>31</sup> See also Loyola, *Autobiography* [57]; Ignacio Cacho Nazábal, *Íñigo de Loyola el heterodoxo* (San Sebastián: Universidad de Deusto, 2006), pp. 155–6; Longhurst, "Saint Ignatius at Alcalá," pp. 254–5; and Bataillon, *Erasmus*, pp. 215–7. Manuel de Miona (c. 1477–1567) from Algarve (Portugal) followed Loyola to Paris and became his confessor there. He eventually entered the Society in Rome in 1544 and worked later with Juan Jerónimo Doménech in Sicily (see *DHCJ* 3:2683). Miguel de Eguía y Jassu's brothers, Diego and Estéban, befriended Loyola in Alcalá and joined the *íñigistas* group in Venice in 1537. They were from Estella (Navarra) and related by blood to the Jesuit Francis Xavier. Diego (c. 1488–1556) later became Ignatius's confessor (see *DHCJ* 2:1220–1).

<sup>32</sup> See Ingram, *Secret lives, public lies*, pp. 98–9.

<sup>33</sup> See Ingram, *Secret lives, public lies*, pp. 88–9.

<sup>34</sup> See his letter to King John III of Portugal from 1545 in *Mon Ign.* 1:296–7.

<sup>35</sup> See especially pp. 149–91.

<sup>36</sup> Francisco, Pedro, and Juan (the secretary of Admiral of Castile, Farique Enríquez) were born to Sancho Ortiz e Ysabel Yáñez of Toledo. Francisco entered the Franciscans in 1521, where he achieved notoriety, but as a result of the endorsement of the purity-of-blood legislation by his Order in 1525, he suffered discrimination.

<sup>37</sup> See Angela Selke, *El Santo Oficio de la Inquisición. Proceso de Fr. Francisco Ortiz (1529–32)* (Madrid: Ed. Guadarrama, 1968); and Camilo M. Abad, "Unas 'Anotaciones' del doctor Pedro Ortiz y de su hermano fray Francisco sobre los Ejercicios espirituales de san Ignacio," *AHSI* 25 (1956): 437–54.

was Pedro who accused Íñigo before the Inquisition in Alcalá and who would accuse him again of seducing students (his relative, Pedro de Peralta, among them)<sup>38</sup> at the University of Paris, but he later would become Loyola's defender and the Society's benefactor in Rome, where he functioned as the ambassador of the Holy Roman Emperor to the pope. Indeed, in 1537 he introduced Ignatius's companions to Pope Farnese (Paul III), who gave his blessing for their never-to-be-accomplished proselytizing mission in Jerusalem. In 1538, Ortiz secluded himself with Loyola for forty days in the Benedictine monastery of Monte Cassino to make the Spiritual Exercises, but he eventually discerned not to enter the Society.<sup>39</sup> Nevertheless, he advised his younger relative, Pedro de Ribadeneyra, to do so. Years later, Pedro Ortiz's homonymous nephew also entered the Society.<sup>40</sup>

If we combine the results of the aforementioned studies with those of Francisco de Borja Medina—virtually the only Jesuit historian who has explored the socio-ethnic background of the early Jesuits—we can tentatively reconstruct a large web of Loyola's converso connections. Medina, for instance, pointed out the interdependence among the cities of Burgos, Segovia, and Medina del Campo that Ignatius visited while serving at the peripatetic court of King Ferdinand (and, thus, his treasurer Velázquez) and his financial supporters during the Parisian studies: Aguilera, Cuéllar, and Cuadrado.

Gonzalo de Aguilera from Burgos was one of the major merchants and ship-owners in Bruges (the Spanish Netherlands). During his business trips to Paris, Loyola hosted him in his own room. A few decades later Aguilera would financially support the foundation of the Jesuit College in Bruges. When Loyola, in turn, went to Bruges in 1529 to seek money for his bed-and-board expenses in Paris, he dined with the renowned converso humanist from Valencia, Joan Lluís Vives, who was living next to Aguilera's home (Hôtel den Pynappel on Langhe Winkle Street). It is interesting to note that the account of this meeting comes from the Jesuit Juan Alfonso de Polanco via his friend and Vives's disciple, Álvaro de Maluenda (from the converso clan in Burgos, to which Polanco's grandmother and her ancestors belonged), who

---

<sup>38</sup> One wonders whether this Peralta is the later converso master of the cathedral school in Toledo, one of the principal opponents of the Silíceo statues, decrified by Samson in his "The *adelantamiento* of Cazorla," pp. 823 and 832–3.

<sup>39</sup> See Loyola, *Autobiography* [96].

<sup>40</sup> See ARSI, *Hisp.* 116, ff. 129–30.





Source: *Vita Beati P. Ignatii Loiolae Societatis Iesu Fundatoris* (Rome, 1609), plate 38 (the engraving is most likely by Peter Paul Rubens). Courtesy of John J. Burns Library at Boston College.

Figure 3. Íñigo accused of seducing students at the University of Paris

happened to be also Loyola's acquaintance in Paris. Aguilera's wife, Ana, was closely related to Juan de Castro, one of the first roommates and disciples of Íñigo in Paris (before forming the future nucleus of the Society). After earning his doctorate, Castro moved back to Burgos and entered the Vall de Cristo *Cartuja* near Segorbe, where Loyola visited him during his last trip to Spain in 1535.<sup>41</sup>

During another fund-raising trip to Flanders, this time to Antwerp, Ignatius was hosted in the house Den Roozenkrans of Juan de Cuéllar from Segovia, who had moved to Antwerp and had become one of the most affluent merchants in town. He was likely related to Juan Velázquez de Cuéllar, chief treasurer of King Ferdinand of Aragon, to whom Íñigo had lent his services.<sup>42</sup> The *contador's* family was known for his *alumbrado*/converso ties, as we have seen above. In the house of Juan de Cuéllar, Loyola was introduced to another merchant, Pedro Cuadrado from Medina del Campo, who years later would provide for the foundation of the Jesuit College in his native town, where the converso Jesuits, the brothers Loarte,<sup>43</sup> the brothers Acosta,<sup>44</sup> Baltasar de Torres,<sup>45</sup> Gregorio de Valencia, and José de San Julián<sup>46</sup> also were born.<sup>47</sup>

---

<sup>41</sup> See Francisco de Borja Medina, "Íñigo de Loyola y los mercaderes castellanos del Norte de Europa. La financiación de sus estudios en la Universidad de París," *AHSI* 51 (1999): 177 and 189.

<sup>42</sup> See Medina, "Íñigo de Loyola y los mercaderes," p. 186.

<sup>43</sup> For more on him, see below.

<sup>44</sup> José de Acosta: \*1540 Medina del Campo (Valladolid); SJ 1552; †1600 Salamanca; priest in 1566; professed in 1570. He was one of five sons of a converso merchant from Medina del Campo who entered the Society. In 1572 he reached Lima, where he became superior provincial (1576–82) and wrote important works on Amerindians. Acosta died in Salamanca in 1600. See *DHCJ* 1:10; *Enciclopedia Cattolica* 1:228–30. For the discussion of Acosta's Jewish ancestry, see Claudio M. Burgaleta, *José Acosta, S.J. (1540–1600). His Life and Thought* (Chicago: Loyola University Press, 1999), pp. 126–7. He played an important role in the convocation of General Congregation 5 (1593), as we shall see below.

<sup>45</sup> Baltasar de Torres: \*1518 Medina del Campo (Valladolid, Spain); SJ 1553; †1561 Naples; priest in 1553 (see *DHCJ* 4:3818).

<sup>46</sup> José de San Julián: \*c. 1544; SJ 1561 Salamanca; priest 1569 Loreto; professed 1570 Messina. He was dismissed by Acquaviva in 1589 (he belonged to the *memorialistas* movement), but later readmitted. He died in Naples on 29 April 1605 (see *DHCJ* 2:2616).

<sup>47</sup> On other conversos who received training from the Jesuits of the town but returned to Judaism, see Miriam Bodian, *Dying in the Law of Moses: Crypto-Jewish Martyrdom in the Iberian World* (Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 2007), p. 58.



In the context of the converso background of so many individuals by whom Ignatius was surrounded until his sojourn in Paris, Loyola's acceptance of Bobadilla, Rodrigues, and especially of Laínez into the group of disciples whom he attracted at the University of Paris seems to be quite logical, unless his disciples' converso ancestry was absolutely unknown to him. That may have been true with respect to Simão Rodrigues [de Acevedo], whose possible Jewish ancestry still needs to be explored, but Bobadilla's and especially Laínez's converso origins were fairly known.

Had Loyola's mythic anti-Jewish Basque pride been real, it is unlikely that the twenty-one-year-old Laínez would have followed Loyola up to Paris by way of Almazán and thoroughly submitted to his spiritual guidance and apostolic plans of proselytizing among Muslims in the Holy Land. To the contrary, even though Íñigo had already left Alcalá by the time Laínez arrived there,<sup>48</sup> Laínez must have heard about Loyola's troubles with the Inquisition, his forty-two-day imprisonment, his interrogation by the diocese's vicar general who suspected Loyola of marranism, and the contacts he had established at the university with so many *alumbrados* and/or Erasmists. Laínez chose to study theology not in Alcalá but in Paris, for he was driven by Loyola's "mysterious fluid"—his name only sounded like a challenge.<sup>49</sup> With his best friend, Alfonso Salmerón,<sup>50</sup> he joined Loyola's group (composed

---

<sup>48</sup> See Georg Schurhammer, *Francis Xavier; His Life, His Times* (Rome: The Jesuit Historical Institute, 1973), vol. 1, p. 205.

<sup>49</sup> See Scaduto, *Governo*, pp. 125–6; Cereceda, *Laínez*, 47–8; and James Brodrick, *The Origin of the Jesuits* (Chicago: Loyola University Press, 1960, 1940), p. 1.

<sup>50</sup> Alfonso Salmerón: \*1515 Olias (Toledo); priest in 1537, professed 1541; †1585 Rome. Son of Alonso Salmerón and Marina Díaz, he was a close friend of Laínez from adolescence, with whom he studied in Sigüenza, Alcalá, and Paris. He was the brother of the Jesuit Diego Salmerón and was probably related also to the Jesuit Baltasar Salmerón. Together with Laínez and Favre, he participated in the Council of Trent. He was the first provincial of Naples (1558–76) and vicar general during Laínez's absence in Rome in 1562. He eagerly supported the converso lobby during General Congregation 3, as we shall see below. He authored eleven volumes of commentaries on gospels. Some scholars have claimed that had converso ancestry: see Friedman, "Jewish Conversion, the Spanish Pure Blood Laws and Reformation," p. 3; Gómez-Menor, "Lo progenie hebrea del Padre Pedro de Ribadeneira," p. 308; and José Gonçalves Salvador, *Cristãos-novos, Jesuítas e Inquisição (Aspectos de sua atuação nas capitanias do Sul, 1530–1680)* (São Paulo: Livraria Pioneira Editora, 1969), p. 3.



Source: *Vita Beati P. Ignatii Loiolae Societatis Iesu Fundatoris* (Rome, 1609), plate 39 (the engraving is most likely by Peter Paul Rubens). Courtesy of John J. Burns Library at Boston College.

Figure 4. *Īnigistas* in Paris: the nucleus of the future Society of Jesus  
 The caption reads: *Iuvenes ex Academia Parisiensi novem eligit ac socios consilij sui destinat* (“[Ignatius] chooses nine young men from the University of Paris and makes them companions of his project”). Loyola’s first nine companions in Paris became the nucleus of the future Society of Jesus (among them Favre, Xavier, Laínez, Bobadilla, and Rodrigues). Nadal and Polanco, Ignatius’s future closest collaborators, did not join the group at that time, despite being in contact with the *Īnigistas* during their studies in Paris.

until then of Pierre Favre<sup>51</sup> and Francis Xavier<sup>52</sup> in 1533, after having made the Ignatian Spiritual Exercises under Loyola's direction.

Although we can only speculate about it, it is quite unlikely that Láinez would have not revealed his Jewish ancestry to Loyola, with whom he established such an intimate relationship.<sup>53</sup> Láinez's family from Castilian Almazán (Soria) had been Christian already for four generations, but the awareness of its crypto-Judaic elements must have been vivid in Diego's mind, for his father's sister, Luisa Láinez, was tried by the Inquisition of Cuenca still in 1537,<sup>54</sup> and quite a number of his other relatives were actually sentenced for judaizing,<sup>55</sup> a fact that Jerónimo Nadal may have not known (or concealed) when he defended Láinez's family as exemplary Christian:

Our Father [Láinez], even though he comes from that lineage, he knew his parents, grandparents, and great-grandparents as good Christians and noble in the world; their customs, life, and privileges were such that his family was never known for the mark of its lineage or for the danger of inconsistency in the faith.<sup>56</sup>

Certainly, the Parisian companions must have had a better knowledge of Láinez's family: Loyola paid a visit to Diego's father, Juan, in Almazán, and his schoolmaster in Sigüenza, Dr. Gasca, where he traveled from his native Guipúzcoa at the end of 1535;<sup>57</sup> and Favre

---

<sup>51</sup> Pierre Favre: \*1506 Villaret (Savoie); †1546 Rome; priest 1534 Paris; professed 1541. After a short period of ministries in Italy, he accompanied Pedro de Ortiz (see below) to Worms and Ratisbone, and then to Spain, where they laid foundations for a number of Jesuit colleges. Subsequently he worked in German lands, Portugal, and Flanders. Destined to participate in the Council of Trent, he died prematurely in Rome at the age of forty (see *DHCJ* 2:1369–70).

<sup>52</sup> Francis Xavier: \*1506 Javier (Spain); †1552 Shangchuan Island (South China Sea); priest in 1537; professed in 1541. Sent by Loyola to India in 1541, he operated also in Indonesia (1542–9) and Japan (1549–51). On his policy towards conversos, see below.

<sup>53</sup> Possevino makes this argument in his *Bibliotheca selecta* (Cologne: apud Joannem Gymnicum sub Monocerote, 1607), Liber IX: “De Iudaeis, et Mahometanis, ac ceteris gentibus iuvandis,” pp. 436–41.

<sup>54</sup> See Carrete, *Judeoconversos de Almazán*, p. 136.

<sup>55</sup> See Enrique Sanz, “Los Láinez y la limpieza de sangre,” *Perficit* 17 (1993): 65–71.

<sup>56</sup> “Nuestro Padre [Láinez], aunque venga de dicho linaje, conoció sin embargo a sus padres, abuelos y bisabuelos buenos cristianos y nobles según el siglo, y en sus costumbres, vida y privilegios, tales, que nunca su casa tuvo nota alguna por parte de su linaje por el peligro de inconstancia en la fe” (*Mon Láinez* 8:831). See Rey, “San Ignacio,” pp. 187–8, where he insists very much on the “cristanía” of Láinez by quoting the above text of Nadal.

<sup>57</sup> See Loyola, *Autobiography* [90].

visited Laínez's family in Almazán in 1542.<sup>58</sup> There, Loyola and Favre encountered, among others, Diego's two younger brothers, Marcos and Cristóbal, who would later enter the Society. Perhaps at those occasions they also met Diego's sister, María Coronel, who later married Juan Hurtado de Mendoza—a member of one of the most prominent families in Seville—and bore him two sons who would follow their uncle Diego's vocation in the Society.

We possess very little information about these Jesuit relatives of Diego, except for Cristóbal (born in 1528), who entered the Jesuit Order no fewer than three times and often was of embarrassment to his distinguished older brother. Loyola admitted him to the Order in Rome on 27 December 1547. Restless and inconstant, Cristóbal moved from one Jesuit house to another: from Rome to Venice, to Padua, to Bologna, to Loreto, to Florence, and back to Rome. In spite of Diego's negative judgment about his poor scholastic and spiritual proficiency, Cristóbal was ordained priest in Palermo in April 1556, but his own brother, now in the role of superior general, dismissed him three years later.<sup>59</sup> Even though to Nadal he was a buffoon and to Salmerón he was staining the good memory of his older brother, Borja readmitted him in 1567, only to dismiss him four years later. Finally, Claudio Acquaviva—despite his anti-converso policy—let Cristóbal reenter for the third and last time in 1582. He eventually died as a Jesuit in 1592, just a year before Acquaviva's anti-converso decree was promulgated.

Cristóbal Laínez's case shows that to the early Jesuit leadership the most important criterion for admitting a candidate was his spiritual and educational suitability, regardless of his lineage, even though the question of the converso background of Jesuit candidates was, of course, relevant to Loyola (and any Iberian of the time)—he would later insert it in the *General Exam*, which describes the admission of Jesuit candidates, as we shall see below. In this perspective, Loyola's request that Diego Laínez preach at the baptism of the first converted Jew from the catechumen house (*Casa dei Catecumeni*) he had founded can be seen as a public confirmation of his incontrovertible sympathy for the converso background of Laínez, or any other New Christian, Jesuit or non.

---

<sup>58</sup> See *Mon Fabri*, pp. 152 and 435; and Cereceda, *Laínez*, p. 87.

<sup>59</sup> See William V. Bangert, *Claude Jay and Alfonso Salmerón: Two Early Jesuits* (Chicago: Loyola University Press, 1985), pp. 262–3 and 320; and Scaduto, *Governo*, p. 124.



Source: Pedro de Ribadeneyra, *Vita P. Jacopo Laynis* (Cologne, 1604). Courtesy of John J. Burns Library at Boston College.

Figure 5. Diego Laínez (1512–65), the most prominent converso Jesuit. The converso-phobic Italian Jesuit Benedetto Palmio portrayed Laínez as “an Israelite indeed—as he admitted publicly—but in whom there was no deceit” (see Appendix I, *Memorial* [6]). Unlike Sacchini’s, Ribadeneyra’s biography of Laínez, from which this portrait comes, silenced his Jewish ancestry. Modern scholarship has established Laínez’s Jewish genealogy, which had been already known to his contemporaries.





Source: *Vita Beati P. Ignatii Loiolae Societatis Iesu Fundatoris* (Rome, 1609), plate 66 (the engraving is most likely by Peter Paul Rubens). Courtesy of John J. Burns Library at Boston College.

Figure 6. Ignatius of Loyola converting a Jew

The caption reads: *Obstinatum Iudaeum tribus hisce verbis conuertit: Mane nobiscum Isaac* (“With these three words [Ignatius] converts an obstinate Jew: ‘Stay with us, Isaac’”). One of the first foundations of Loyola in Rome was the House of Catechumens (*Casa dei Catecumeni*), which hosted Jews willing to convert. The first Jew of that community who was baptized on Sunday, 18 September 1541, was a wealthy thirty-two-year-old man of “nice appearance and good habits,” just as the Jew represented in the center of this engraving. The two Jesuits in the rear might be Diego Laínez, who preached at the baptism, and Alfonso Salmerón, who administered the sacrament.

The Jew who was baptized by Laínez's teen-friend, Salmerón, was a wealthy thirty-two-year-old man of "nice appearance and good habits." The circumstances that led to his conversion were quite intriguing. He was dating for several weeks a Christian prostitute, who—charged with mingling with a Jew—was put into jail. The man himself avoided arrest by hiding in the Jesuit house for catechumens. When the Jesuits learned about his misfortune, they were able, with a support of influential people, to get the poor woman out of jail within five hours and put her into the community that Loyola ran for Roman prostitutes—St. Martha House. Soon the couple expressed their desire to marry, and the Jesuits set up a wedding that would immediately follow the baptism of the Jew. The ceremony that was held on Sunday, 18 September 1541 (not even one year after the official approval of the Society), was the kick-off event for Loyola's earliest project of proselytizing among Roman Jews. It was celebrated with fanfare—among the guests who attended the ceremony were not only their *Madama*, Margaret of Austria (the wife of the pope's grandson Ottavio Farnese),<sup>60</sup> who gave her soul to the project, but also the cardinals of Santiago and Burgos, the ambassadors of the emperor [Charles V] and of Portugal, and many bishops and nobles. Loyola reported these facts two days after the event in a letter to Favre, who was accompanying the converso Imperial Ambassador Pedro Ortiz on his mission to Worms and Ratisbone.<sup>61</sup> The latter's nephew, Ribadeneyra, who was present in Rome in those years and likely at the baptism-matrimony ceremony itself, was happy to narrate in his later biography of Loyola the development of the project that regarded the coreligionists of his ancestors:

Many Jews, moved by the love of our fellow Jesuits or the good example of some of their own who were already baptized, were converted to our faith. Among them were some of the most respected Jews who were highly important for converting others because they could clearly and forcefully persuade the other Jews, showing them from Scripture that Jesus Christ our Lord is the real promised Messiah.<sup>62</sup>

---

<sup>60</sup> For her portrayal and correspondence with Loyola, see Hugo Rahner, *Saint Ignatius Loyola. Letters to Women* (Freiburg: Herder, 1960), pp. 75–92.

<sup>61</sup> See *Mon Ign.* 1:181–4. From there Favre accompanied Ortiz to Spain, where the latter helped the former found the Jesuit colleges in Barcelona, Saragossa, Medinaceli, Madrid, Ocaña, and Toledo (see *DHCJ* 2:1369).

<sup>62</sup> See Polanco, *Vita* 3:9; and *Fontes Narr.* 4:404.

This family chain of conversions worked, for example, in the case of a twenty-five-year-old Jewish man who had been imprisoned. His mother (who had been Christian for four years), excusing her son, asked the Cardinal of Trani [Giovan Domenico de Cupis] to give her a hand in getting her son out of jail. The cardinal turned to Ignatius, who offered a sly solution: the young Jew would be freed, if he promised to have his two-year-old son baptized and his teenage brother catechized. The promise was kept: the Jew left the prison and subsequently entered the Jesuit community of catechumens, where his son already was being prepared for baptism. Additionally, as a circular letter to all Jesuits from 1544 related,<sup>63</sup> the young man's wife, his sister-in-law with her husband, and his mother-in-law also promised to convert. Loyola's secretary concluded the letter by asking God to "illuminate all other infidels, so that they abandon the darkness and receive the true light."<sup>64</sup>

One way to illuminate the Jews was to herd them forcefully into a church and preach to them, a practice that would be legally reinvigorated by Gregory XIII's bull *Vicus eius nos* in 1577.<sup>65</sup> In response, the Jesuits provided preachers at the Confraternity of the Holy Trinity, where Roman Jews were forced to attend sermons. One of them would later become Antonio Possevino, who after his appointment as secretary of the Society (1573) was actively engaged in the *Casa dei Catecumeni*.<sup>66</sup> His predecessor, Polanco, wrote a circular letter to the Society in 1561, in which he reported that the vicar of Rome ordered all Jews to attend the two-hour-long sermon preached by Láinez. The latter's zeal in converting the coreligionists of his great grandfather also was witnessed in his sermon at an auto-da-fé celebrated in Palermo.

In order to make his apostolate among Jews more successful, Loyola pressed Pope Paul III to change the papal policy towards converted Jews and to issue in 1542 the bull *Cupientes Iudaeos*, which allowed catechumens to retain their property after their conversion.<sup>67</sup> Through

<sup>63</sup> See *Mon Ign.* 1:288–9.

<sup>64</sup> "Nuestro Señor le dé gracia para ello y a todos los otros infieles se digne iluminar para que, dejadas las tinieblas, reciban la verdadera luz" (*Mon Ign.* 1:289).

<sup>65</sup> Pope Gregory XIII (1502–85), born Ugo Boncompagni, was pope from 1572 to 1585. Much on his role in the Society's affairs below. On his relation with the Jesuits, see also *DHCJ* 3:2974–5.

<sup>66</sup> See Donnelly, "Antonio Possevino and Jesuits of Jewish Ancestry," p. 6.

<sup>67</sup> See Reites, "St. Ignatius and the Jews," p. 12. For the text of the bull, see *Bullarium Romanum* (Turin: Seb. Franco et Henrico Dalmazzo editoribus, 1890), vol. 6, pp. 336–7.



another bull, *Illius qui pro dominici*, the same pope officially established on Loyola's request the Confraternity of San Giuseppe, which—made up of twelve priests with Giovanni da Torano as their head—would financially support the House of Catechumens. In its seat, the San Giovanni del Mercato church (today nonexistent), the Jesuits—urged on by some prominent patrons and by the Roman synagogues themselves from which Pope Julius III (1550–5) requested an annual tencucat contribution—gave them bed, board, and instruction. By 1558 the Confraternity was sustaining nearly 200 catechumens and neophytes.<sup>68</sup>

As James Reites has observed,<sup>69</sup> Loyola's open-mindedness towards Jewish converts must be contrasted with his support of the anti-Jewish papal legislation during the pontificate of the feared and disliked (by the first Jesuits) Pope Paul IV. Indeed, Loyola had many copies of Carafa's most discriminatory bull, *Cum nimis absurdum* (1555), shipped to Jesuit houses, and he ordered that it be observed.<sup>70</sup> Among the many economic and religious restrictions for Jews in the Papal States, the pope's document established the first Roman ghetto and forced Jews to wear a distinctive yellow hat (males) or kerchief (females), for "it is completely senseless and inappropriate to be in a situation where Christian piety allows the Jews (whose guilt—all of their own doing—has condemned them to eternal slavery) access to our society and even to live among us."<sup>71</sup>

Loyola, despite his reservations, obeyed the Vicar of Christ unconditionally, but the logical consequence of his acceptance of Jewish converts into the Catholic Church was his non-discrimination policy towards candidates of Jewish origin who desired to join the Jesuit Order. It seems that Loyola's firm refusal to incorporate the Iberian purity-of-blood concept into the Jesuit *Constitutions* was the result of a long discernment. Láinez's report of Ignatius's pro-converso policy in the Society may suggest such a progress: "The reason why we cannot exclude them is that, if you remember, Your Reverence wrote about

<sup>68</sup> On the further development of this project, see Lance Gabriel Lazar, *Working in the Vineyard of the Lord: Jesuit Confraternities in Early Modern Italy* (Toronto: Toronto University Press, 2005), especially pp. 112–8.

<sup>69</sup> See Reites, "St. Ignatius and the Jews," pp. 13–7.

<sup>70</sup> See *Mon Ign.* 1:351, 362–3, 374, 385, 388, 455, 463, and 544. See also Reites, "St. Ignatius and the Jews," p. 10.

<sup>71</sup> See Keneth R. Stow, *Catholic Thought and Papal Jewry Policy 1555–1593* (New York: Jewish Theological Seminary, 1977).

this to our Father [Ignatius], and then our Father, *after carefully considering the matter and recommending it to our Lord* [emphasis mine], decided against it [the exclusion], and this is what he put into the *Constitutions*.<sup>72</sup>

The Jesuit historian Francisco Borja de Medina brought to light a couple of Loyola's early instructions given to his companions that confirm an evolution of the Jesuit superior general's thought on the matter.<sup>73</sup> In 1545 (just five years after the Society's papal approval), he ambiguously wrote to one of his first Parisian companions, Pierre Favre, that the question of accepting some New Christians is being cautiously evaluated in Rome, for the Society is called to edify everybody, a goal that requires people who are not "on the files" [of the Inquisition], so that the Order's spiritual outcome remain uncompromised.<sup>74</sup>

As far as accepting New Christians, what we do here is as follows: we take well into account that the Society's aim is to be able and to know how to edify all persons in all things. This requires people free from any mark [*nota*], which could hinder the spiritual fruit. However, they might do this with much more glory, talent, mortification, and good example of life. All of this would make up for and even clear up the defect [*falta*], and in some ways would give even greater glory to God our Lord.<sup>75</sup>

Favre was given much freedom, however, in making his choices according to the local circumstances. Nine years later, Polanco (himself a converso) wrote to Diego Mirón, the Spanish superior of the Portuguese province, that Loyola was reminding him that being of New Christian lineage is not an impediment that would exclude a man from the Society, for there is no distinction between Jews and Greeks

<sup>72</sup> Laínez to Araoz, in Reites, "St. Ignatius and the Jews," p. 33.

<sup>73</sup> See Medina, "Ignacio de Loyola," pp. 6–7.

<sup>74</sup> In another text, Loyola explained the reason for the Society's caution—"por la enfermedad humana y tanta indisposición de los que deben recibir la palabra divina" (*Const.* [250–1]).

<sup>75</sup> "Cuanto al aceptar algunos cristianos nuevos lo que acá hacemos es bien mirado que la Compañía es para en todo poder y saber edificar a todos, por lo cual requiere personas ajenas de toda nota que impida el fruto espiritual, y esto máxime en las partes donde han de fructificar, bien fuese ya con mucha mayor gloria, talento, mortificación, y ejemplo de vida, lo que supliría y esclarecería la falta, y antes en alguna manera daría más gloria a Dios N.S., etc. Podréis hacer en esto como os parecerá según las costumbres de la tierra y condición, etc. que lo que hiciéredes y como sintiéredes ser mayor, aquello mismo tendremos por bien" (*Mon Ign.* 1:334–6).

united in the same spirit of the divine service,<sup>76</sup> even though one must be more cautious in receiving New Christians, because they are usually difficult men. Loyola advised additionally through his secretary that subjects of this kind should not be overwhelmed by too much interrogation about their lineage, and if there was local difficulty in accepting them, they could be sent elsewhere, provided they were good subjects.<sup>77</sup>

Loyola's instruction was originated by the case of Enrique Enríques [Henrique Henriques],<sup>78</sup> who entered the Society in 1552. He was born in Oporto (Portugal) to the physician Simão Lópes and Isabel Enríques, who both converted from Judaism. Like Ribadeneyra's brother, he reversed the order of his paternal and maternal names, a standard converso practice in the sixteenth century aimed to conceal the converso identity.<sup>79</sup> Indeed, his brothers, Manuel and Baltasar, who also entered the Society, bore the name of their father (Manuel was able to become the superior provincial of Toledo until Mercurian's anti-converso conspired election). Diego Mirón followed Ignatius's non-discrimination instruction—since Enrique had no impediment, he was kept in the Society but sent to Spain, where he became a leading professor of casuistry and authored the first Jesuit manual of moral theology, *Theologiae moralis summa* (Salamanca, 1591). Difficulties with its approval by General Congregation 5 in 1593 (the same assembly

---

<sup>76</sup> See Paul's Letter to Galatians 3:27–9, which was abundantly quoted in the pro-converso writings, as we have seen in the previous chapter.

<sup>77</sup> “Y advierta V[uestra] R[everencia] que el ser de linaje de cristianos nuevos no es impedimento que excluya de la Compañía, aunque hace abrir los ojos más para el recibir los tales con pruebas suficientes, por lo que suele muchas veces hallarse en semejantes hombres, que es ser difíciles; y desto en fuera, en la Compañía *non est distinctio jud[a]ei et gr[a]eci, etc.*, cuando son unidos en el mismo espíritu del divino servicio con los otros. Y advierta V.R. que es notado de mirar mucho en esto, o por mejor decir, de tratar dello algo más que convendría al descubierto, lo cual sería para desconsolar y aún tentar no ligeramente algún bueno supósito, a quienes toca algo desto. Es verdad que, si por la disposición de los ánimos de una tierra no fuese cosa edificativa aceptar alguno tal, diestramente se podría enderezar a otra parte, si fuese buen supósito” (*Mon Ign.* 12:569).

<sup>78</sup> Enrique Enríques: \*1536 Oporto, †1608 (Tivoli). See AHN, Inquisición, lib. 580, f. 147<sup>r</sup>; *DHCJ*, 1:1900–1; Robert A. Maryks, “Census of the Books Written on Sacramental Confession (1554–1650),” *Annali di storia moderna e contemporanea*, anno X (2004): 460–1; Astrain, *Historia*, 3:370–2; and *The Catholic Encyclopedia* (<http://www.newadvent.org/cathen/07220a.htm>).

<sup>79</sup> See Antonio Domínguez Ortiz, “Los conversos de origen judío después de la expulsión,” in Carmelo Viñas y Mey, ed., *Estudios de historia social de España* (Madrid: Instituto Balmes de Sociología. Consejo Superior de Investigaciones Científicas, 1955), p. 375.

that issued the anti-converso decree) caused Enríques's temporary transfer to the Dominicans. Upon his return to the Society and with the support of his former converso disciple, Francisco Suárez,<sup>80</sup> and Gregorio de Valencia,<sup>81</sup> he participated in the Iberian separatist movement against Superior General Acquaviva known as *memorialistas*, as we shall see in the next chapter.

The most irresistible example of how much credit Loyola gave candidates of Jewish ancestry was his decision to admit in 1551 Giovanni Battista Eliano (Romano), the grandson of the famous grammarian and poet Rabbi Elijah Levita (1468–1549) who settled in Venice, whose older brother, Vittorio, also converted to Catholicism and became a censor of Jewish books in Cremona.<sup>82</sup> He entered the Society at the age of twenty-one, just three months after his baptism,<sup>83</sup> which had been administered by the renowned Jesuit humanist, André des Freux, or Frusius (c. 1515–56).<sup>84</sup> After ten years of training, he was ordained priest and was given one of the most delicate ecumenical missions that the sixteenth-century papacy arranged—to the Copt patriarch in Cairo, Gabriel VII (r. 1526–69), and to the Lebanese Maronites. The former mission took place in 1561–2 under Laínez, who—probably bearing in mind the Mediterranean Jewish network—chose Eliano to accompany Cristóbal Rodríguez, a converso Jesuit from Hita in

<sup>80</sup> Francisco Suárez [de Toledo]: \*1548; †1617. For more on him, see below.

<sup>81</sup> Gregorio de Valencia: \*1549 Medina del Campo; SJ 1565; †1603 Naples. He had been a renowned theologian in Ingolstadt, Dillingen, and Rome. See *Elogia virorum insigniorum Germ. Sup. S.J. 1552–1651*, in Arch. Prov. Germ. Sup., Mscr. V, 57, ff. 57–8; Jozsef Fejér, *Defuncti primi saeculi Societatis Iesu* (Rome: Institutum Historicum Societatis Iesu, 1982), 2:236; and *Mon Nadal* 4:726–7.

<sup>82</sup> See Shlomo Simonsohn, *The Jews in the Duchy of Milan. A Documentary history of the Jews of Italy* (Jerusalem: Israel Academy of Sciences and Humanities, 1982), pp. 1324–5 and 1354.

<sup>83</sup> See ARSI, *Vitae* 15, f. 7<sup>v</sup>.

<sup>84</sup> André des Freux entered the Society after having made his Spiritual Exercises together with his close friend Polanco under the guidance of Laínez. With Nadal and Palmio, he was part of the first Jesuit group to found the College of Messina. As a renowned Latinist, he rendered Ignatius's *Spiritual Exercises* from the Spanish original into Latin. He edited (1558), among others, the Roman poet Martialis—the very first book printed by the Jesuits in Rome (see *DHCJ* 2:1537).

For the instrumental role of Freux and Polanco in the conversion of Eliano, see Guzmán's letter to Acquaviva (ARSI, *Instit.* 186e, f. 354<sup>v</sup>): “[...] el Padre Bautista Romano, el cual se había convertido y bautizado en Venecia muy poco antes que lo recibiesen; y los padres que estaban allá que fueron el medio de su conversión eran el Padre Juan de Polanco y Padre Andrea Frusio de nación francés, los cuales escribieron a Roma a nuestro Padre Ignacio sobre su conversión y vocación a la Compañía y así lo llamó a Roma y luego lo recibió.”

Guadalajara who had earned his doctorate in theology at Alcalá and had been rector of the College of Gandía founded by Borja.<sup>85</sup> The second mission took place in the late 1570s at the request of Gregory XIII. Because of his linguistic acumen (he was a professor of Hebrew and Arabic at the Roman College), Eliano was commissioned to translate the documents of the Council of Trent into Arabic and was appointed—as were many of his converso confreres—a member of St. Peter’s Penitentiary. Eliano narrated in his autobiographical letter to Claudio Acquaviva, composed in Italian, many colorful details of his first mission to Cairo, where he went *incognito* because of the fear of Jews that prevailed there.<sup>86</sup> The most intriguing episodes—picked up by the Jesuit historian Sacchini in his history of the Society<sup>87</sup>—concern the encounter with his mother, who lived in Cairo as a Jewish woman. During the encounter, she expressed her disappointment with her son’s conversion, arguing that he was too educated and good to let the Christians deceive him. Helpless to change her son’s mind and crying, Eliano’s mother let him go, but—he suspected—subsequently caused him many troubles through the Jews she knew in Alexandria, where Eliano headed after his sojourn in Cairo. As a result, the two Jesuits had to escape from Egypt, Eliano covering his face with a handkerchief so that the Jews could not recognize him.<sup>88</sup> As Ribadeneyra put it evocatively, Giovanni Battista Romano “was a servant of God who worked and suffered a lot for the Society and God’s Church.”<sup>89</sup> Guzmán, in his letter to Acquaviva, underscored a similar idea of distinctiveness of this Jew-turned-Jesuit:

[Giovanni Battista Romano] came out so distinctive with all his virtues, especially in the zeal to convert and win the souls of infidels as well as Christian sinners, and with so much fruit in all his endeavors, that they used to call him in Rome a portrait of St. Paul the Apostle. Fascinatingly, our Lord converted through him an entire nation of schismatics called Maronites (from the name of one whose name was Marón who perverted

<sup>85</sup> See more on Rodríguez below.

<sup>86</sup> See José C. Sola, S.J., “El P. Juan Bautista Eliano, un documento autobiográfico inédito,” *AHSI* 4 (1935): 191–221. See also *DHCJ* 2:1233–4; *Mon Rib.* 2:279; and Lazar, *Working in the Vineyard of the Lord*, pp. 118–25.

<sup>87</sup> See Francesco Sacchini, *Historiae Societatis Iesu* (Antwerp: Ex officina filiorum Martini Nutii, 1620), vol. 2: [Layne]. I have used the edition printed in Rome (Typis Dominici Manelphii, 1652), p. 252.

<sup>88</sup> *Ibidem*, pp. 131–6.

<sup>89</sup> See *Mon Rib.* 2:379.

them with a special appearance of holiness; these were under the rule of Turks). And our Lord gave Father Bautista Romano such a grace that by his doctrine and persuasion all converted to the obedience of the Apostolic See. And he brought to Rome some of them, elderly and children, in time of Pope Gregory XIII, who founded a school for them, which was entrusted to the Society (and later was confirmed by Pope Sixtus V). I could say many other things about this blessed father, but suffice to know that he eventually died in Rome in a holy manner, always engaged in these and other holy works.<sup>90</sup>

Another example of the boundless trust that Loyola gave to converso Jesuits was the appointment of his and the Society's secretary, Juan Alfonso de Polanco, who became Ignatius's "memory and hand" until the latter's demise. He was born 24 December 1517 in Burgos (Castile) to Gregorio, *regidor* of the city, and *doña* María de Salinas. Polanco bore the name of his paternal grandfather Alfonso (d. 1491), who married Costanza de Maluenda (d. 1520).<sup>91</sup> The latter was a daughter of Juana García de Castro and Martín Rodríguez de Maluenda (1454–1530), whose homonymous father (1387–1476) was a cousin of Juan Garcés Maluenda, who married María Nuñez (d. 1423), the sister of the rabbi-turned-bishop of Burgos, Salomon ha-Levi/Pablo de Santa María, and aunt of Alonso de Burgos, whose writings we have studied in Chapter One.<sup>92</sup> As in the case of Diego Laínez and Francisco Suárez, most of his sisters were nuns, but Juan Alfonso was the only male to choose an ecclesiastical career. With this goal in mind, he studied humanities and philosophy in Paris (1535–8) under his converso fellow countryman, Dr. Francisco de Astudillo,<sup>93</sup> who had met Ignatius there in previous years. In Paris, Polanco lived in the same college as Martín de Olave (1507/8–56), who had met Loyola at Alcalá and later would become his close friend and future Jesuit collaborator.<sup>94</sup> There he also met the

<sup>90</sup> See ARSI, *Instit.* 186e, f. 354<sup>v</sup>.

<sup>91</sup> The tombs of both parents and grandparents of Juan Alfonso are located in the St. Nicolas Church in Burgos (see *Mon Polanci* 2:836 and M.<sup>a</sup> Jesus Gómez Barcena, *Escultura gótica funeraria en Burgos* (Burgos: Diputación Provincial de Burgos, 1988), pp. 151–4.

<sup>92</sup> On Polanco's Jewish ancestry, see Baroja, *Judíos en la España*, p. 233 (quoting Sicroff's *Les controverses*, pp. 271, 273, 278, and 279–80); Jean Lacouture, *Jesuits: A Multibiography* (Washington, D.C.: Counterpoint, 1995), pp. 161–76; *DHCJ*, p. 1004; and Cantera Burgos, *Alvar García de Santa María y su familia de conversos*, p. 403.

<sup>93</sup> See Ricardo García Villoslada, *Universidad de París durante los estudios de Francisco de Vitoria O.P. (1507–1522)* (Rome: apud Aedes Universitatis Gregoriana, 1938), pp. 379–86.

<sup>94</sup> See *Chron.* 1:34.

*inígitas*, but—like Nadal—did not join the group. Instead, a few years later he went to the papal court in Rome to work as a notary (*scriptor apostolicus*). Through his fellow countryman, Francisco de Torres, he met *in Urbe* Lainez and, after making the Spiritual Exercises with him, Polanco entered the Society in August 1541. After a few years of studying theology in Padua (where he met Pedro de Ribadeneyra), his sacerdotal ordination in 1546, and subsequent ministries in Tuscany, he was summoned by Loyola to Rome and appointed in 1547 secretary of the Society of Jesus, an office that he would hold for twenty-six years. In that position he built an efficient Jesuit web of communication between the Roman headquarters and the provinces around the world. More than 20,000 letters on behalf of Loyola, Lainez, and Borja were written by his ink-stained fist.<sup>95</sup> He scrupulously filtered, summarized, copied, and catalogued outgoing and incoming letters and other pertinent documents in the curial archives.<sup>96</sup> *Padre Cobos*—as he was nicknamed after the converso royal secretary, Francisco de los Cobos y Molina (d. 1547)—became the best informed and, thus, most influential Jesuit in the Society. As Ribadeneyra put it, Polanco “seemed to sustain on his shoulders the entire Society.”<sup>97</sup> Some fellow Jesuits would later resent the power of this short but strong man, and during General Congregation 3 they would conspire successfully to deprive him of his governmental posts, as we shall see below.

As soon as he was appointed secretary, Polanco began collecting information from the first companions (especially Lainez), and probably Loyola himself, about the life of the Jesuit founder and the origins of the Society. He used this information in his *Summarium Hispanum* that, thirty years later, would be partially incorporated into his “extremely prosy but invaluable” *Chronicon*.<sup>98</sup> On almost 5,000 pages it tells the story of Ignatius and his first companions from their arrival to Venice in 1537 until Ignatius’s death in 1556. Polanco also

<sup>95</sup> See Scaduto, *Governo*, p. 183.

<sup>96</sup> On the duties of the secretary, see Polanco’s own treatise, *Del officio del secretario* (Mario Scaduto, “Uno scritto ignaziano inedito. Il ‘Del officio del secretario,’” *AHSI* 29 (1960): 305–12; and idem, *Francesco Borgia*, pp. 65–7).

<sup>97</sup> See Pedro de Ribadeneyra, *Catalogus scriptorum religionis Societatis Iesu* (Antwerp: ex officina Plantiniana, apud viduam & filios Io. Moreti, 1613), p. 154.

<sup>98</sup> See Brodrick, *Origin of the Jesuits*, p. 97.



helped to compose the Jesuit *Constitutions*<sup>99</sup> and was commissioned by Loyola to translate them into Latin.

Another commission that Loyola gave Polanco and his confreres in the *casa professa* in Rome was to write a compendium for Jesuit confessors. *Breve directorium ad confessari ac poenitentis recte obeundum* was first printed in Rome and in Leuven at the very beginning of 1554. It was the only book on the Jesuit preeminent ministry of sacramental confession for twenty years—until 1574, when the first Jesuit manual for penitents, the converso Gaspar de Loarte’s “Comfort of the Tormented,” was published in Rome. The *Directory* had its publishing boom in the 1570s and its decline in the 1590s, when it was replaced by the works of another two converso Jesuits: Manuel de Sá’s *Aphorisms* (80 editions) and Francisco de Toledo’s *Instruction for Priests and Penitents* (166 editions) at the end of the sixteenth century. The *Directory* was the fourth most published Jesuit book on confession, with at least seventy-six editions (reprints and translations included). It was the only book translated into Illyrian and Slovenian, and one of the only two Jesuit confessional manuals translated into Portuguese. Ignatius of Loyola wanted every Jesuit confessor to have a personal copy of it. True, the manual was subsequently used in Jesuit ministries and even in lectures on cases of conscience. An influential *Directory to the Spiritual Exercises* (1555) by the converso Juan Alonso de Vitoria<sup>100</sup> recommended Polanco’s text as useful in preparation for general sacramental confession. However, it is to be noted that the exclusivity of the *Directory* on the Jesuit penitential book market ceased in 1573 with the election of the Walloon Everard Mercurian, when Polanco was removed from the government, along with other converso Jesuits. It is not unreasonable to infer, then, that the publishing success of the *Directory* may well have been related to Polanco’s position of authority rather than to the manual’s intrinsic usefulness to confessors or students of cases of conscience. Indeed, even though the *Directory* was designed to be just a compendium to accommodate

---

<sup>99</sup> See *Diccionario de Espiritualidad Ignaciana [DEI]* (Madrid: Manresa/Sal Terrae, 2007), pp. 1464–5.

<sup>100</sup> Juan Alonso de Vitoria: \*1538; SJ 1558; †1578. He was rector of the college in Vienna and procurator general. For a study of the conversos of Vitoria, from where the famous founder of the School of Salamanca, Francisco de Vitoria, came, see Rosario Porres Maríjuan and Teresa Benito Aguado, “El Estatuto de limpieza de sangre y sus repercusiones en Vitoria en tiempos de Felipe II,” *Hispania* 60/2, núm. 205 (2000): 515–62.



the needs of the first Jesuits who were too busy with their ministries to dedicate much time to academic activities, it lacked a basic awareness of important shifts operative during that century. Consequently, the official edition of the *Directory to the Spiritual Exercises* from 1599 suggested a non-Jesuit contemporary text: *Enchiridion* by Martín Azpilcueta (1493–1586). The popular and authoritative *Navarrus*, as it was briefly called, was more comprehensive and reflected important socio-economic changes brewing in the sixteenth century. The Jesuits, who were consulted about the *Ratio Studiorum* (1599), overwhelmingly called for a new manual that could be used in the Society for lectures on cases of conscience. This time, Francisco de Toledo's *Instruction*, rather than Polanco's *Directory*, would be the answer to that need. Even though the Polish Jesuits would reprint the *Directory* more than 300 years later, by the end of the sixteenth century it was already outdated. Indeed, it employed the conservative Tutorism of major thirteenth-century scholastics, which the Jesuits abandoned in the last quarter of the sixteenth century by enthusiastically espousing Probabilism, which a new generation of converso Jesuits would make the Jesuit ethical system throughout the next century.<sup>101</sup>

In spite of these many duties, Loyola put on Polanco's shoulders an additional responsibility towards the end of his life (1555)—that of assistant general. This endorsement would make Polanco the key person in the transition of power after Loyola's death, as we shall see below. In the last stage of his acute illness, Loyola put his life in the hands of a converso physician despite the widespread diffidence in Christian circles toward doctors of Jewish lineage.<sup>102</sup> The physician's name was Baltasar de Torres,<sup>103</sup> and he had been physician to the viceroy of Sicily, Juan de Vega, before entering the Society after making his *Spiritual Exercises* with the viceroy's Jesuit confessor, Juan Jerónimo Doménech. Polanco obtained for him a special dispensation from the papal curia<sup>104</sup> so that he could practice as physician even after his ordination to priesthood (which was prohibited by canon law).

---

<sup>101</sup> For the detailed analysis of the *Breve directorium*, see Maryks, *Saint Cicero and the Jesuits*, pp. 49–58.

<sup>102</sup> See, for example, Diego de Simanca's *Defensio statuti Toletani*, ff. 5<sup>v</sup>–6, which we have analyzed in the previous chapter; and Sicroff, *Estatutos*, p. 129.

<sup>103</sup> See his biographical note above.

<sup>104</sup> See ARSI, *Inst.* 187, f. 362.

Loyola's trust in conversos apparently was not shared by the superior provincial of Portugal and one of Loyola's first companions, Simão Rodrigues. Rodrigues wrote an instruction to his subjects, *Modo que se ha de ter nos collegios da Companhia en o receber dos estudantes d'ella* (1546–50), which in its third paragraph asked them to refuse to admit New Christians or those who had been publicly suspected of heresy.<sup>105</sup> Yet the evidence shows that Rodrigues, himself likely a descendant of the converso clan of Acevedo (probably blessed Ignacio de Acevedo included),<sup>106</sup> followed the practice suggested by Loyola in the aforementioned letter to Mirón. A number of Portuguese conversos were admitted by him into the Society and/or sent to the Far East. Among them were: Anrique Anriques who—despite his juridical impediment of being earlier a Franciscan—entered the Jesuits in 1545 and was sent to Pesquería via India, where he worked for fifty-five years and composed the first grammar of Tamil;<sup>107</sup> Afonso de Castro, who was born to an affluent jeweler from Lisbon and sent in 1547 to Xavier in India, from where he was dispatched to the Moro Islands, a mission that concluded a decade later with his death by crucifixion and decapitation;<sup>108</sup> the expert in canon law, Antonio Gomes, who in 1548 was

---

<sup>105</sup> “3. Se por alguma via descende de cristãos novos. Se há tido alguma opinião, polla qual aja sido reprovado por herege o conhecido publicamente portal” (*Mon Broet*, p. 861).

<sup>106</sup> See below.

<sup>107</sup> Anrique Anriques: \*1520 Vila Viçosa (Évora, Portugal); SJ 1545; †1602 Punnaikayal (India); priest in 1551; professed in 1560. Received in the Society by Rodrigues in 1545, he was sent to India, from where Xavier destined him for Pesquería. After the death of Antonio Crimalini in 1549, he was elected superior regional but his appointment was opposed by Antonio Gómes because of his Jewish ancestry. His grammar of Tamil is lost (see *DHCJ* 1:178; and Medina, “Ignacio de Loyola,” pp. 5–6).

<sup>108</sup> Afonso de Castro: \*1520 Lisbon; SJ 1547; †1558 Hiri (Moluccas, Indonesia); priest in 1549; professed in 1552. As a young man he began to converse with Simão Rodrigues and Xavier before the latter's departure for India. Later he became a Franciscan, but he was not fully accepted into the Order because of his origins. Therefore, he embarked in 1547 for India, where Xavier admitted him into the Society. Destined for the Moluccas, he arrived there as priest in 1549. In 1551 he was sent to the Moro Islands, where he succeeded in 1555 the superior of the mission, Juan de Bera. There, he faced conflict with Antonio Vaz, whom he expelled from the Society. In December 1557, while navigating from Moro to Ternate he was captured by the natives of Ternate, who crucified and decapitated him a few weeks later on the island of Hiri (see *DHCJ* 1:706–7). On his missionary activities, see Hubert Jacobs, ed., *Documenta Malucensia* (Rome: Institutum Historicum Societatis Iesu, 1974–84); Diogo Barbosa Machado, *Memorias para a historia de Portugal, que comprehendem o governo del rey D. Sebastião, unico em o nome, e decimo sexto entre os Monarchas Portuguezes* (Lisbon: na Officina de Joseph António da Sylva, 1736), vol. 1, pp. 159–67;

sent by Rodrigues to India and perished in the sea near Madagascar six years later;<sup>109</sup> Baltasar Gago, who same year was sent from Lisbon to Goa with Gaspar Berze;<sup>110</sup> and Manuel de Távora from Coímbra, who, admitted by Berze in 1552, worked in the Moluccas and then passed to Brazil.<sup>111</sup>

In the Far East, an ambiguity similar to Rodrigues's can be traced in Xavier's approach to the vexed converso question. On the one hand—as in Rodrigues's case—we have a written testimony from 1552 that Xavier advised debarring candidates of “Hebraic lineage”; on the other hand there is evidence that he actually did accept such subjects. Not only did the aforementioned Anrique Anriques (Enrique Enríquez)<sup>112</sup> and Afonso de Castro enter the Order, but also many others, among them Gaspar Rodrigues, who—in spite of being a former Dominican—entered the Society in 1548 in Goa,<sup>113</sup> where Miguel da Nobrega also joined in 1550;<sup>114</sup> Pedro de Alcáçova, who had left

---

and John Villiers, “Las Yslas de Esperar en Dios: The Jesuit Mission in Moro 1546–1571,” *Modern Asian Studies* 22/3 (1988): 593–606.

He should not be confused with another converso Jesuit, Alonso de Castro: \*1552 Seville; SJ 1566; †1637 Seville; priest in 1579; professed in 1589. He was born to Hernando de Castro and Juana de Aranda, benefactors of the Jesuit College of Seville. His two brothers, Gaspar and Melchor, also entered the Society. He worked as confessor and preacher in Jérez de la Frontera (1585, 1587) and Malaga (1591, 1593). In 1596 he functioned as vice-rector of Jérez and 1596–9 as vice-rector and rector of Trigueros. He participated in the defense of Cádiz, which was attacked by the English. Alonso built a church in Trigueros, designed by the Jesuit Bartolomé de Bustamante. That project produced a conflict with Acquaviva, who removed him from office in 1598/9. Consequently he moved to Montilla, Cordova, and Seville (see *DHCJ* 1: 707–8).

<sup>109</sup> Antonio Gomes: \*c. 1520 Isla de Madeira; SJ 1544; †23 April 1554. He entered the Society in Coímbra after having earned his doctorate in theology. Xavier nominated him rector of the college in Goa, the government of which produced much controversy. Therefore, Xavier fired him in 1552 and sent him back to Rome, where he never arrived (see *DHCJ* 2:1771).

<sup>110</sup> Baltasar Gago: \*c. 1518 Lisbon; SJ 1546 Lisbon; †9 January 1583(?) Goa. He entered the Society as priest and was sent to India in 1548. He accompanied Viceroy Noronha as military chaplain in his expedition to Sri Lanka in 1551. Javier appointed him to Japan, where he joined the Jesuit Torres and helped to compose the Japanese catechism. He returned to India in 1562 (see *DHCJ* 2:1549–50).

<sup>111</sup> Manuel de Távora: \*1534; SJ 1552 Goa; dismissed in 1578 (see Wicki, “Cristãos-Novos,” p. 348; Medina, “Ignacio de Loyola,” p. 83; and Mario Scaduto, *Catalogo dei Gesuiti d'Italia, 1540–1565* [Rome: IHSI, 1968], p. 144).

<sup>112</sup> See Medina, “Ignacio de Loyola,” pp. 5–6.

<sup>113</sup> Gaspar Rodrigues: SJ 1548; †1552. He was a lay brother working as missionary in Goa (see Fejér, *Defuncti*, 2:200; Wicki, “Cristãos-Novos,” p. 347; and Medina, “Ignacio de Loyola,” p. 588).

<sup>114</sup> Miguel da Nobrega: SJ 1550; †1558 (see Fejér, *Defuncti* 2:161; and Wicki, “Cristãos-Novos,” p. 348).

the Society in Portugal but was readmitted by Xavier;<sup>115</sup> Gomes Vaz (whose grandparents the Inquisition burned in Serpa), who spent his energies as missionary in Goa;<sup>116</sup> and Antonio Dias, who worked in Goa for thirty years.<sup>117</sup>

In Medina's view, Xavier's ambivalence may have originated from his uncertainty—perhaps because of Rodrigues's instruction that could have been brought to him by one of the many Jesuits who traveled from Portugal to Asia—above what Loyola had decided in respect to converso candidates. At any rate, except for minor incidents, the openness towards converso candidates continued after Xavier's death. For example, in 1556 Luis de Almeida, a merchant and surgeon from Lisbon, joined the Jesuit mission in Funai, where he founded a hospital and worked later in other parts of Japan, as several monuments to him testify today in the cities of Nagasaki, Hondo, and Oita;<sup>118</sup> Fernão de Narbona was admitted in 1557 and worked as a pharmacist in Goa;<sup>119</sup> in 1561 Antonio Belo entered the Society in Goa and became a renowned professor of music;<sup>120</sup> beginning in 1565 Gabriel Oliveira operated the Goan mission;<sup>121</sup> in 1569 (the year of death of his converso relative, Juan de Ávila) Antonio Francisco de Critana was admitted and destined for the Philippines, where he perished in the sea four decades later;<sup>122</sup> Baltasar Dias traveled from Coímbra to the Moluccas

<sup>115</sup> Pedro de Alcáçova (Alcáçeva, Alcaçava): SJ 1543. His converso ancestry might be suggested by his name and vocation story. See *DHCJ* 1:39; Juan Ruiz-de-Medina, ed., *Documentos del Japón (1547–1562)* (Rome: Institutum Historicum Societatis Iesu, 1990–5), vol. 1, p. 429 (letter of Pedro de Alcáçova to the Jesuits of Portugal, Goa, March 1554).

<sup>116</sup> Gomes Vaz: \*1542 Serpa (Beja, Portugal); SJ 1562; †1610 Lisbon; priest in 1568; professed in 1584 (see *DHCJ* 4:3910).

<sup>117</sup> Antonio Dias: SJ 1551; †1581 (see Fejér, *Defuncti* 2:61; and Wicki, "Cristãos-Novos," p. 350).

<sup>118</sup> Luis de Almeida: \*1525 Lisbon; SJ 1556; †1583 Kawachinoura (Kumamoto, Japan). See *DHCJ* 1:81–2.

<sup>119</sup> Fernão de Narbona: \*c. 1536; †1579 (see Wicki, "Cristãos-Novos," p. 350).

<sup>120</sup> Antonio Belo: \*1523; SJ 1561 Goa; †1571. (see Wicki, "Cristãos-Novos," p. 351; and Fejér, *Defuncti*, 2:25).

<sup>121</sup> Gabriel Oliveira: \*c. 1534 Plasencia; SJ before 1564; professed 1584; †1599 (see Fejér, *Defuncti* 2:164; and Wicki, "Cristãos-Novos," p. 351).

<sup>122</sup> Antonio Francisco de Critana: \*1548 Almodóvar del Campo (Spain); SJ 1569; †1614 in the sea in front of Luzon (the Philippines); priest in 1573; professed in 1592. After he had studied Japanese in Yamaguchi, he worked in the college Todos los Santos in Nagasaki (1598–1614), from where he was expelled by the Japanese government. He embarked on a small ship towards the Philippines and perished at sea. His body was transferred to the San Ignacio College in Manila. His beatification process was opened in 1901 (see *DHCJ* 2:1005).

before 1559 and worked for ten years in India and Malaysia;<sup>123</sup> and in 1570 Pedro Ramón from Saragossa entered the Society to become a missionary in Japan, where he died as martyr.<sup>124</sup>

It cannot be denied, however, that there was a certain ambivalence among the early Jesuits that testifies to their unease over the converso question that the young Society of Jesus unavoidably had to face. The assurance of Loyola's true spirit that inspired the Jesuit practice comes from the most authoritative legal Jesuit document, the *Constitutions*, which he composed over time almost until his death in 1556. In this he was assisted by his secretary Polanco and frequently consulted his trusted converso companions Nadal, Cristóbal de Madrid, and Manuel de Sá.<sup>125</sup> The part that addresses the question of converso admissions is contained in the *General Exam*. Contrary to the interpretation given to this text by the converso-phobic Italo-Portuguese lobby in the twenty-year period between General Congregations 3 and 5 (1573–93), the jurist García Alarcón argued (as we shall see in the last chapter) that being of Jewish origin did not constitute a legal impediment for Jesuit candidates and that the goal of the question inserted into the *General Exam* was merely to supplement the information about the candidate. Indeed, this text is found not in the section on impediments but in the one that lists questions that should be asked by the candidate's examiner.<sup>126</sup> Moreover, Medina pointed out that in the 1550 version of the text on which Loyola was working, such a question was taken out, probably at the request of Alfonso Salmerón.<sup>127</sup> Just before his death, however, Loyola added the question again (this is in the so-called text B of 1556), with a slight change of wording but without changing its non-discriminatory intent: "si viene de christianos antiguos o modernos."<sup>128</sup>

If anybody had doubts about how to interpret the converso question in the Jesuit *Constitutions*, which were not binding until their

<sup>123</sup> Baltasar Dias: \*c. 1508 Portugal; SJ 1549 Coímbra; priest before 1549; professed 1559 Moluccas; †21 August 1571 Goa (*DHCJ* 2:1112).

<sup>124</sup> Pedro Ramón: \*1549; SJ 1570; †1611 (see Fejér, *Defuncti*, 2:190; *DHCJ* 4:3289; and Donnelly, "Antonio Possevino," pp. 10–1). His Jewish ancestry was revealed by Possevino in his memorial to Acquaviva (see *AHSI, Inst. 184/II*, f. 351<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>125</sup> On Sá and Madrid, see the following paragraphs in the text.

<sup>126</sup> See *ARSI, Instit. 184 I*, ff. 304<sup>r-v</sup> and Reites, "St. Ignatius and the Jews," p. 180.

<sup>127</sup> "Véase si aquella demanda (si viene de cristianos viejos o nuevos) se ha de dejar" (see Medina, "Ignacio de Loyola," p. 7).

<sup>128</sup> In Medina's opinion, this formulation would differentiate now between the candidates coming from all non-Christian religions and not just from Judaism.

promulgation in 1558, Loyola—physically stuck to his chair at the Roman curia—made clear its meaning through his envoys to the Jesuits in the provinces across Europe, most of whom had never met Loyola in person. The most prominent among them was Ignatius’s plenipotent commissary, Jerónimo Nadal Morey.

*Jerónimo Nadal’s opposition to the purity-of-blood legislation*

The Jesuit career of the Majorcan Jerónimo Nadal is fascinating, so let us emphasize in this paragraph those biographical details that help us understand his support of Loyola’s pro-converso policy.<sup>129</sup> For twenty years before his decision to become a Jesuit he resisted Loyola’s efforts to make him part of the *ínigistas* group in Paris: “The fish escaped his hook,” as he put it in his *Diary*.<sup>130</sup> Nadal resisted Loyola’s indirect and direct attempts to win his commitment due to his fear that he would be reported for heresy in his native city of Majorca (later called Palma),<sup>131</sup> a fear that had kept him far from Loyola already during his studies at the University of Alcalá nine years earlier (1526–7). Nadal’s fears were not allayed even after a personal meeting with Loyola in Paris, during which he was told a story of Loyola’s trial by the Inquisition of Salamanca: waving the New Testament in his hand, Nadal made himself aloof from Loyola and his group.

The reasons for this fear that Nadal provided in his diary are incongruous.<sup>132</sup> On the one hand he denied that he avoided Loyola because of his troubles with the Inquisition in Salamanca, but on the other he confessed that he feared being reported at home by a Franciscan friend from his native Majorca, who was living in Paris. Nadal’s decision to join the Jesuits only after he learned that the Holy See legally recognized them would suggest that he feared being denounced to the Majorcan Inquisition for being part of a group that had no official approval and was tainted by Loyola’s contacts with (converso) *alumbrosos*/Erasmists. One is impelled to ask, however, why Loyola’s com-

<sup>129</sup> See Robert A. Maryks, “Abnegación en los escritos de Jerónimo Nadal (1507–1580),” *Manresa* 73 (2001): 87–96; and “Jerónimo Nadal” in *DEI*, pp. 1315–9.

<sup>130</sup> Jerónimo Nadal, *Chronicon* [39], in *Mon Nadal* 1:14: “Itaque elapsus est ab eius hamo tunc piscis” (the numbers between the brackets refer to editor’s paragraphs).

<sup>131</sup> Nadal, *Chronicon* [10]: “Sensus animi mei sic fuit: nolo his me adiungere: quis scit an incident aliquando in inquisitores?”

<sup>132</sup> See Nadal, *Chronicon* [1], [8], and [10].





Source: Alfred Hamy, *Galerie Illustrée de la Compagnie de Jésus* (Paris, 1893), #144. Courtesy of John J. Burns Library at Boston College.

Figure 7. Jerónimo Nadal (1507–80)—Loyola’s plenipotentiary emissary. Initially Jerónimo Nadal [Morey] was suspicious of Ignatius’s orthodoxy and he refused to join his group in Paris but a decade later he became one of Loyola’s most influential collaborators. Invested with delegated power, he traveled throughout Europe, explaining the Jesuit Constitutions. He stressed that they did not discriminate against candidates of Jewish ancestry and thus adamantly opposed the purity-of-blood policy of Archbishop Silíceo. Most probably Nadal was a descendant of Majorcan Jews.

panions did not share Nadal's fear. Indeed, the first *inígitas* whom Loyola sent to Nadal's in Paris were Manuel de Miona and Laínez,<sup>133</sup> who may have had more reasons to fear accusations of heresy, as we have seen earlier.

Due to the anti-Spanish atmosphere in Paris, Nadal departed for Avignon (1537), where he received his doctorate in theology and was ordained priest (1538).<sup>134</sup> From there he finally returned to his native Balearic island, where he experienced a long spiritual crisis that was deepened by an uneasy relationship with his wealthy family and the death of his mother.<sup>135</sup> Once Nadal was assured by a circular letter from Francis Xavier that the Society of Jesus was formally recognized by the papacy, he decided to go to Rome (1545), where one of the first Jesuits he met was Diego Laínez, whom he had dismissed ten years earlier in Paris. The latter did not become any less adamant and tried again to convince the former to make Spiritual Exercises in order to discern his vocation. In his unyielding efforts, Laínez was aided by Alfonso Salmerón, who may have shared with Nadal his excellent knowledge of Hebrew that the former learned as a boy in his native Toledo (perhaps in the same Judeo-converso community where his future close friend and biographer, Pedro de Ribadeneyra, had been born eleven years later).

Nadal did not appreciate Laínez's and Salmerón's dogged determination, yet the persistence of another Jesuit, a son of a wealthy pharmacist from Valencia, Juan Jerónimo Doménech, who was Loyola's secretary at that time and with whom Nadal could speak in his native Catalan, led him to meet Loyola again. Four months later, Nadal gave up his resistance by engaging in the Spiritual Exercises, during which he eventually decided to enter the Jesuit Order (November 1545).

<sup>133</sup> See Maryks, *Giacomo Laínez. Prima biografía ignaziana*, pp. 38–40.

<sup>134</sup> See Gabriel Codina Mir, "La ordenación y el doctorado en teología de Jerónimo Nadal en Aviñón (1537–1538)," *AHSI* 36 (1967): 247–51.

<sup>135</sup> Nadal, *Chronicon* [19–20]: "No me encontraba bien con mi tío Morey. Murió mi madre y me vieron en un luto indecoroso por ella. Mi hermano se casó no solamente sin que yo lo supiese y sin consultarme, sino que tampoco me invitó" (translation from Latin into Spanish is mine). On the nobility of Nadal's family, see Joaquin Maria Bover, *Nobiliario Mallorquin* (Barcelona: José J. De Olañeta Editor, 1983), pp. 258–9. J.N. Hillgarth in his *Readers and Books in Majorca 1229–1550* (Paris: CNRS, 1991), vol. 2, p. 700, published an inventory of the rich library of Nadal's father, notary Antoni Nadal. For the association of various Nadals with the profession of notary public, see ACA, Diversos, Monistrol, Pergaminos, núm. 0629, 0632, 0703–5, 0710–2, 0721–2, and 2055.



After just four months, Loyola appointed Nadal minister of the Jesuit headquarters (which in Jesuit jargon means the person in charge of the administrative-economic care of a community), and as such he had to bury Pierre Favre (August 1546), who had tried after Láinez to convince Nadal to join their group in Paris. Some months later (March 1547), Nadal welcomed to the community the new secretary of the Society, Juan Alfonso de Polanco, who had entered the Order just a few years earlier.

Nadal got to know Polanco well during one year of daily meetings that were held in the Jesuit headquarters, but then he was appointed the superior of a group destined to open the first Jesuit school in Messina, and he left Rome on 18 March 1548. After four years of work in Sicily, Nadal returned briefly to Rome to take his solemn religious vows. Those four years had been a period of intensive work on the Jesuit *Constitutions* by Loyola and Polanco. Nadal received the task of explaining them upon his return to Sicily in May 1552, but especially upon his appointment to the Commissary for the Iberian Jesuit provinces a year later (1553). This appointment made him the most authoritative interpreter of the Jesuit way of proceeding to Jesuits who had never met Loyola in person. And Nadal had been a Jesuit for only eight years.

It is during this one-year mission to Iberia that Nadal had to face the issue of admitting Judeo-conversos into the Order. Upon his arrival in June 1553 at Alcalá, Nadal met a Jesuit for whom he—and Polanco—had little respect but who was the first superior provincial of Spain and a relative of Loyola: Antonio de Araoz.<sup>136</sup> Loyola himself knew about Araoz's questionable demeanor and especially his love for the courtly life (he used to spend more time at court than in his provincial office), yet he judged it necessary to keep Araoz in charge precisely because of his good contacts with the Spanish courts—which were vital in order to support the Society's expansion in the region.<sup>137</sup> (Only Loyola's successor Láinez would suggest, in a letter written by his secretary Polanco to Nadal, that Araoz should be removed from his office.)<sup>138</sup> From that court, and especially from his penitent, the Prince

<sup>136</sup> On Araoz's anti-converso sentiments, see Medina, "Ignacio de Loyola," pp. 8–9.

<sup>137</sup> Nadal wrote in his report to Loyola on 14 May 1554: "El doctor Araoz restará en su provincia, y spero en el Señor nuestro mirará más a los particulares que antes, y se apartará más de negocios seculares que trata muchos" (*Mon Nadal* 1:252).

<sup>138</sup> See *Mon Nadal*, 1:786 (where Polanco sarcastically calls Araoz "el amigo"); see also *ibidem*, p. 470.

of Éboli, Ruy Gómez de Silva (c. 1516–73), Araoz heard voices increasingly requesting that the Society refuse candidates of Jewish ancestry, and he made himself the Jesuit harbinger of the Iberian policy of *pureza de sangre*. The Basque Jesuit viewed the Jesuit leadership's pro-converso policy as poison,<sup>139</sup> and it disturbed him so much that at some point he was close to leaving the Society.<sup>140</sup>

Replying to Araoz, Loyola's converso secretary wrote:

About not accepting New Christians, our Father is not persuaded that God would be served this way. But it seems good to him that one ought to be more circumspect with them. If over there [in Spain] the attitudes [*humores*] of the court or of the king are against admitting them, send them here if they are worthy candidates, as we have written other times. Here one does not look at the matter so closely in the light of what is the race of one who is seen to be a good person, just as nobility does not suffice for admission if the other qualifications are lacking.<sup>141</sup>

Araoz's anti-converso attitude was stubbornly rebutted by Nadal. In Spain, he received much support in his objections to Araoz's anti-converso campaign from Francisco de Borja, whom his assistant Benedetto Palmio would accuse of excessive love for and credit to New Christians, as we shall see below.<sup>142</sup> This conflict—underestimated by the Italian Jesuit historian of the period, Mario Scaduto<sup>143</sup>—can be well observed in the case of admission to the Society of two disciples of Juan de Ávila, who himself was of Jewish ancestry: the converso

---

<sup>139</sup> “Father, until the Society is somewhat better known and established in Castile, it would seem very appropriate to think over the matter of receiving New Christians [*gente verriac*], for, in the opinion of many, this alone is a poison” (see *Epp. Mixtae* 1:241).

<sup>140</sup> See Miguel Mir, S.J., *Historia interna documentada de la Compañía de Jesús* (Madrid: Imprenta de J. Ratés Martín, 1913), vol. 1, p. 333.

<sup>141</sup> See *Mon Ign.* 5:335. Loyola's opposition to Araoz's discrimination against converso candidates became a weapon in Jesuit pro-converso writings. See, for example, Guzmán's letter to Acquaviva (ARSI, *Instit.* 186e, f. 354<sup>v</sup>): “Saber que el espíritu y el sentimiento de nuestro Bendito Padre Maestro Ignacio de su santa memoria fue muy continuo a esto, lo cual se sabe evidentemente por claros testimonios. Uno es que escribiéndole sobre ello el Padre Antonio de Araoz (el cual era entonces único provincial en toda España fuera de Portugal) por alguna duda que el tenía, le respondió tan sacudidamente, diciéndole: ‘*Absit*, Dios nos guarde de pensar tal cosa,’ como si le propusiera una cosa contra la fe católica; y así también se confirma esta su voluntad y sentimiento.”

<sup>142</sup> See ARSI, *Instit.* 106, f. 102.

<sup>143</sup> See Scaduto, *Azione*, pp. 617–9.

Dr. Gaspar de Loarte (d. 1578) from Medina del Campo;<sup>144</sup> and Don Diego de Guzmán (d. 1606) from the high nobility of Seville.<sup>145</sup> From a report Nadal sent to Loyola in July 1553 we learn that Francisco de Borja eagerly admitted the two,<sup>146</sup> but somehow secretly—they were working for the bishop of Calahorra, Juan Bernal Díaz de Lugo, but nobody knew of their affiliation. Araoz insisted that they had to be expelled<sup>147</sup> and was supported in it by another Jesuit official, Bartolomé de Bustamante (1501–70),<sup>148</sup> who talked about the issue to Don Diego de Tavera, an inquisitor and relative of Guzmán, arguing that the latter should not belong to the Society because of “that imperfection [*tacha*].”<sup>149</sup> Guzmán objected that there was no reason to refuse their admission and that the Jesuits would act wrongfully if they expelled the two men. Nadal ordered Bustamante not to take any decision until he received further instructions. As he informed Loyola, his plan was first to show a chapter of the Jesuit *Constitutions* to the Inquisition’s Council, or to explain them orally, so that Guzmán could remain in the Society. And Loarte made it clear that if Guzmán could not stay in the Society, neither would he.

Nadal was following here what Ignatius had expressed in a letter addressed to the Jesuit Francisco de Villanueva (whom Silíceo considered a converso):<sup>150</sup> in no way would the Jesuit *Constitutions* assimilate

<sup>144</sup> As were the mentioned earlier families Acosta, Torres, Valencia, and San Julián.

<sup>145</sup> Guzmán was the son of Don Rodrigo Ponce de León (Count of Bailén) and Doña Blanca de Sandoval (ARSI, *Hist. Soc.* 177, 284<sup>r</sup>–287<sup>v</sup>). See also *Chron.* 2:328, 420, 647; 3:340 and 345; *Litterae Quadr.* 4:645, and Fray Luis de Granada de la Orden de Santo Domingo, *Vida del Padre Maestro Juan de Ávila y las partes que ha de tener un predicador del Evangelio* (Madrid: Edibesa, 2000), p. 153.

<sup>146</sup> After they did their Spiritual Exercises with Borja at the end of 1552 in Oñate (see *Mon Borgia* 3:132; *Chron.* 3:331, 340; *Epp. Mixt.* 3:123). Borja also received there another one of Ávila’s disciple, Antonio de Córdoba, the son of Marquise de Priego.

<sup>147</sup> See Scaduto, *Azione*, p. 617.

<sup>148</sup> Before entering the Society he was secretary to the cardinal archbishop of Toledo, Juan de Tavera (see *DHCJ* 1:580).

<sup>149</sup> It seems that the same reason made Bustamante begrudge Ávila’s admission to the Society. Bustamante’s judgment suggests Guzmán’s converso lineage, even though it has been doubted by the majority of experts who wrote on this episode (see, for example Rey, “San Ignacio,” p. 184; and Medina’s article on Guzmán in *DHCJ* 2:1857–9).

<sup>150</sup> See Reites, “St. Ignatius and the Jews,” p. 25. Silíceo’s claim was probably not groundless. Francisco de Villanueva (1509–57) from Villanueva de Placencia (Cáceres) entered the Society in Rome in 1541. Loyola employed him in the affair of the converso Juan de Ávila’s entrance to the Society. See Baldomero Jiménez Duque, “Juan de Avila en la encrucijada” *Revista Española de Teología* 29 (1969): 445–73; M. Ruiz

the policy of the archbishop, who should take care of his own business rather than interfere with the internal issues of the Society.<sup>151</sup> The problem was that the flourishing College at Alcalá—a hotbed of Jesuit (converso) vocations—was located within Silíceo’s diocesan jurisdiction. Ironically enough, it was Francisco de Villanueva, together with the converso Manuel López and Maximiliano Chapelle,<sup>152</sup> who inaugurated this college in 1546, and Beatriz Ramírez and Mencía de Benavente—the old *alumbrado* friends of Loyola from Alcalá—had financially supported its foundation.<sup>153</sup>

This part of Nadal’s report to Loyola is of extreme importance in the history of Jesuits of Jewish ancestry, for it confirms what we have observed above: according to Loyola, Nadal, and later on Ribadeneyra, Possevino,<sup>154</sup> Guzmán, Mariana,<sup>155</sup> and Alarcón—and contrary to the anti-converso party that would prohibit the admission of conversos forty years later<sup>156</sup>—the Jesuit *Constitutions* did not consider Jewish ancestry an impediment for admission to the Society.<sup>157</sup>

---

Jurado, “San Juan de Ávila y la Compañía de Jesús,” pp. 153–72; and *DHCJ* 4:3976–7, where the article’s author, M. Ruiz Jurado, avoids the true motive of the conflict between the Society and the Inquisitor.

<sup>151</sup> [Rome], 2 January 1552, in *Cartas de San Ignacio de Loyola* (Madrid, 1874–89), vol. 3, pp. 13–21.

<sup>152</sup> Perhaps it is Maximilián Capella, who pronounced his four vows in January 1566 (ARSI, *S. Andr. Germ. 1*, ff. 34–5), who represented the Lower German Province at the Congregation of Procurators in 1568 and took part in General Congregation 3. Sometimes his name has a French form, Maximilien de la Chapelle, and he is said to be originally from Lille (Fois, “Everard Mercurian,” p. 10) or from Flanders (*DHCJ* 4:3977). Palmio mentions in his memorial a certain Capilla [16], but it is uncertain whether the two are the same Jesuit.

<sup>153</sup> See also an unpublished text related to the College of Alcalá composed by Ribadeneyra, *Vida de doña María de Mendoza, fundadora del Colegio de la Compañía de Jesús de Alcalá de Henares*.

<sup>154</sup> Ribadeneyra, “De Prognatis genere Hebraeorum Societatis aditu non excludendis,” in *Mon Rib.* 2:374: “Es contra nuestras constituciones, las cuales non excluyen a los tales, ni por impedimento esencial, ni por secundario ser de tal o tal generación.”

<sup>155</sup> Juan de Mariana: \*1536 Talavera de la Reina; SJ 1554 Alcalá de Henares; †16. xi.1624 Toledo; priest in 1562; professed in 1564 (*DHCJ*, 3:2506–7). We shall analyze Ribadeneyra’s, Possevino’s, Guzmán’s, García de Alarcón’s, and Mariana’s texts in Chapter Four.

<sup>156</sup> In his letter to General Congregation 5 asking for the exclusion from the Society of subjects of Jewish ancestry, Manuel Rodrigues, an assistant general for the Province of Portugal and a leader of the anti-converso party (see Chapter Three), argued as follows: “Petitur a Congregatione ut decretum conficiat, quo statuatur ut confessi (id est homines qui ex Iudaeorum sanguine emanant) in Societatem admitti non possint. Quam [...] haec petitio sit, constare ex eo potest quod confessorum admissio pugnat cum bono Societatis nomine, cum realitate ista atque cum Constitutionibus” (ARSI, *Inst.* 184/II, f. 356).

<sup>157</sup> See Rey, “San Ignacio,” pp. 181–2.

The final solution Nadal adopted in this case was what Loyola boldly suggested for other morasses of the kind: to object to the discriminatory anti-converso policies in Iberia by sending converso candidates to Rome, where—as Polanco proudly stressed in a letter commissioned by Loyola—such discrimination did not exist:

As to your suggestion to our Father to remove the distinction between New and Old Christians in the Society, he had already removed it, for those who are good and suitable to our institute are accepted here without distinction; but there in Spain, being things of the Society still tender, in order not to excite many contradictions, which impede foundations and the course of the divine service, it is necessary to use somehow these distinctions, not being clarified outside what is clear inside, that is, that there is no favoritism of peoples or lineages. However, we have written there, and this is the intention of our Father, not to bar any good subject because of his descent from Jews or Moors; and if an outrage is feared in one place, the subject can be moved elsewhere; and if he does not fit well in Spain, send him to us in Italy, where there are not such biases, which certainly seem unworthy of such good and intelligent Christians who are in Spain.<sup>158</sup>

Nadal explained this Jesuit policy to the converso-phobic Archbishop Silíceo,<sup>159</sup> who was willing to burn all Jesuits for their alleged converso

---

<sup>158</sup> “Quanto al quitar nuestro Padre la distinción de christianos nuevos y viejos en la Compañía, ya la tiene quitada, porque sin distinción se aceptan por acá los que son buenos y aptos para nuestro instituto; pero allá en España, por ser las cosas de la Compañía aún tiernas, por no excitar tantas contradicciones, que inpidan las fundaciones y el curso del divino servicio, es menester usar así algún modo de estas, no se aclarando tanto en lo de fuera, quanto se siente en lo de dentro, que no hay aceptación de personas ni linajes [Romans 2:11]. Todavía se ha escrito allá, y esta es la intención de nuestro Padre, que no se deje de aceptar ningún buen supósito por descender de moros o judíos; y si se teme desedificación en una parte, que le muden a otra; y no cabiendo bien en España, nos los envíen a Italia, donde no hay esos respectos, que, cierto, parecen bien indignos de christianos tan buenos y de tan buenos entendimientos como los hay en España” (*Mon Ign.* 9:150).

See also Guzmán’s letter to Acquaviva against the 1593 decree: “Pues vimos los que nos hallamos en su tiempo que se recibían en Roma algunos sujetos sin hacer dificultad ninguna el ser de este linaje, por muy cercano o fresco que fuese antes en cierta manera por ellos, los recibían más fácilmente, si tenían las otras partes convenientes para ser recibidos” (*Instit.* 186e, f. 355”) and Ribadeneyra’s opinion on the issue in *Mon Rib.* 2:279: “Entre los hombres más insignes en santidad, letras, prudencia y raros dones de la Compañía, algunos ha habido deste linaje.” Alarcón, Guzmán, and Ribadeneyra follow here an old argument that had been made in the fifteenth-century pro-converso writings by, for example, Alonso Díaz de Montalvo and Alonso de Cartagena, as we have seen in Chapter One.

<sup>159</sup> See *Chron.* [501].

background,<sup>160</sup> when the two reluctantly met head-on in Toledo in February 1554.<sup>161</sup> In his much later letter to Acquaviva against the 1593 decree, Guzmán would remind him that Silíceo had offered Nadal a sly deal: “If you bar in your Constitutions the converso candidates, I shall build you a great college.” Accosting the archbishop, Nadal had abjured it as contrary to Ignatius’s will and intention.<sup>162</sup>

Consequently, Nadal sent a message to Medina [del Campo], where Loarte’s family lived, inviting Loarte and Guzmán to come with him to Rome, after having pronounced their first religious vows. Nadal justified his decision in his report to Loyola in May 1554: neither Loarte nor Guzmán had any impediment. Furthermore, he expressed his hope that the Lord be served not only in Spain by their spiritual work but also in Rome by their financial support for the Jesuit projects there—Guzmán and Loarte were carrying with them 300–400 ducats and held approximately 9,000 *maravedíes* of benefits.<sup>163</sup>

Nadal’s wish was fulfilled. Loarte, who was already fifty-six when he entered the Society and who died after twenty-four years of working mostly in Italy, became one of the most prolific, published, and translated spiritual writers of the first generation of Jesuits. He was particularly interested in writing on the distinctive aspects of Catholicism: Christ’s passion, devotion to Mary Mother of God, and sacramental confession. He published *Esercizio de la vita Christiana* (Genoa, 1557), *Instuttione et avisi, per meditare la Passione di Christo* (Rome, 1570), [*Trattato*] *delli rimedii contr’ il gravissimo peccato della bastemia* (Venice, 1573), *Istruttione e avvertimenti per meditar i misteri del Rosario* (Rome, 1573), *Conforto de gli aflitti* (Rome, 1574), *Trattato delle sante peregrinationi* (Rome, 1575), *Antidoto spirituale contra la*

---

<sup>160</sup> See *Mon Nadal* 1:233: “El arzobispo dice que todos somos cristianos nuevos”; and a letter to Loyola by Francisco de Villanueva from 1551, quoted by Astrain, *Historia*, p. 353: “[Silíceo] comenzó a decir que nos quemaría a todos.”

<sup>161</sup> At the occasion, Nadal delivered in Toledo some letters to the converso family of Pedro de Ribadeneyra.

<sup>162</sup> “Y por proseguir esta razón de la intención y voluntad de nuestro bendito padre Ignacio acerca de este punto se confirma con lo que sucedió al padre Jerónimo Nadal cuando vino a España a publicar las Constituciones por orden de nuestro padre, que fue cuando el arzobispo de Toledo Silicio se mostró contrario a la Compañía, especialmente porque entendió que se recibían también los de aquel linaje como los demás; y dijo al padre Nadal lo cual yo se lo oí, ‘Haced constitución de no recibirlos y yo os fundaré un gran colegio de vuestra Compañía.’ Y le respondió el padre Nadal, esto no se dará en ninguna manera, entendiendo que tal cosa sería contra la intención y voluntad de nuestro padre Ignacio” (ARSI, *Instit.* 186e, ff. 354<sup>v</sup>–355).

<sup>163</sup> See *Mon Nadal* 1:257.

*peste* (Genoa, 1577), and *Avisi di sacerdoti et confessori* (Parma, 1579).<sup>164</sup> He was followed in the Society by his brother Baltasar, also a disciple of Juan de Ávila, who left Nadal a telling auto-biographical note: “I have [also] two widowed sisters in Medina and two married brothers in Granada, all rich. [...] I had a very good library that I left to the Society, in which I studied the Scripture and sacred doctors.”<sup>165</sup>

Diego de Guzmán, after being trained by Loyola in Rome, where he was immediately named minister of the *casa professa* (1554–5), became a confidant of Leonora Álvarez de Toledo (1522–62), Duchess of Tuscany,<sup>166</sup> while taking care of the Jesuit College in Florence. In 1562 he replaced his old friend Loarte as rector of the college in Genoa. Subsequently, he taught catechism in many parts of Italy. Based on this and prior experience with Juan de Ávila, Guzmán wrote *Modo per insegnar con frutto la dottrina christiana* [A Way of Teaching Christian Doctrine Successfully] (1585).<sup>167</sup> He desired to go to Brazil as a missionary, but because of his impaired hearing and ignorance of the local language, Borja instead required his presence in Rome (1567), where he directed the House of Catechumens. Twenty years later he returned to Seville, where he spent the last two decades of his life. Guzmán would oppose the anti-converso decree of 1593 in an unpublished letter to Ribadeneyra that we shall analyze in Chapter Four.<sup>168</sup>

Nadal was so far from discriminating against Judeo-converso candidates that, after Loarte and Guzmán, he admitted other disciples of Juan de Ávila, removing in this way the last doubts of the latter that the anti-converso policy of Iberian Jesuits was contrary to the course of Loyola and the Jesuit *Constitutions*. Nadal reported to Loyola from Valladolid in March 1554 that after he and Ávila met in Cordoba, Father [Diego] Santa Cruz from Lisbon,<sup>169</sup> Father [Cristóbal] Carvajal from Valencia,<sup>170</sup> and another two of Ávila’s unnamed disciples

<sup>164</sup> See *DHCJ*, 3:2402–3.

<sup>165</sup> See *Mon Nadal* 1:605.

<sup>166</sup> See Scaduto, *Governo*, pp. 579–82.

<sup>167</sup> See ARSI, *Opp. NN.* 55, ff. 135<sup>v</sup>–137.

<sup>168</sup> “Después que hay este decreto, se han retirado muchos sujetos que tienen partes muy esenciales y de grande estimación y que fueran muy estimados y de gran fruto en la Compañía” (Diego de Guzmán, “Las razones que hay para que el decreto de la Quinta Congregación General se haya de abrogar y deshacer que determina que no sean recibidos los que son de linaje de Judíos o de Moros,” in ARSI, *Inst.* 186e, ff. 353–8).

<sup>169</sup> He was born in Granada in 1518 and died in 1594.

<sup>170</sup> He was born in Talaván in 1518 and died in Placencia in 1557.



entered the Society.<sup>171</sup> One of the latter was taken by Nadal, together with Loarte and Guzmán, to Rome, and from a joyful letter by Polanco to Francisco de Borja one infers that his name was Manuel de Sá.<sup>172</sup> He was born in 1528 into a converso family from Villa de Conde (Portugal). Still as a novice, Sá was asked by Loyola to examine the Jesuit *Constitutions* before their promulgation. As a professor of theology and exegesis at the *Collegio Romano* (1556–72) he contributed with the converso Diego de Ledesma<sup>173</sup> to the elaboration of the *Ratio Studiorum*. Like his other converso confreres (Loarte, Polanco, and Toledo), he became a prolific author of manuals for confessors: his *Aphorismi Confessariorum* (Venice, 1592) had at least eighty editions, including its Japanese translation issued in Nagasaki in 1605.<sup>174</sup>

No doubt, Nadal was sincerely convinced that Jewish ancestry was not an impediment for Jesuit candidates.<sup>175</sup> In a passionate discussion over the admission of a converso candidate by the name of Santander,<sup>176</sup>

<sup>171</sup> See *Mon Nadal* 1:226–7. M. Ruiz Jurado, in his “San Juan de Ávila,” p. 158, lists twenty-eight of Ávila’s disciples who entered the Society. One of these two must have been either Luis de Santander or Alonso Ruiz, about whom much will be said below.

<sup>172</sup> “La presente es para hacer saber a V[uestra] R[everencia] que el P[adre] M[aestro] Nadal llegó con sus tres compañeros, el D[octo]r Loarte, D[on] Diego y M[aestro] Manuel a Roma, sanos todos por la gracia divina. Hémonos consolado mucho en el Señor nuestro con ellos, y con las buenas nuevas que de allá traen del divino servicio, por ministerio de la Compañía...” (*Mon Nadal* 1:269).

<sup>173</sup> Diego de Ledesma: \*1524 Cuéllar (Segovia); SJ 1556; †1575 Rome; priest in 1557; professed in 1560. For more on him, see below.

<sup>174</sup> See Maryks, “Census,” pp. 483–91.

<sup>175</sup> A further confirmation of Nadal’s view on the issue is his letter to Loyola about the acceptance of Ávila himself to the Society: “El P. Doctor Torres se ha partido para Córdoba... Va animado mucho con esperanza que el Mtro. Ávila mismo ha de entrar en la Compañía, y yo le dije que me parecía bien, habida la dispensación, porque ha sido fraile, y no he sabido aún si profesó. Hanme movido a conceder esto dos cosas. Lo uno lo que me dicen Villanueva y otros, que ha deseado V[uestra] P[aternidad] traerle cuando le mandó visitar, etc.; la otra el juicio de D. Antonio, que muy especialmente lo desea, y también el P. Francisco y el doctor Torres, todos lo tienen por gran cosa que entrase: por el contrario, hay el impedimento dicho, ser viejo y enfermo, *crisiano nuevo*, y perseguido en tiempo pasado por la Inquisición, aunque claramente absuelto; y después de los suyos ha tomado la Inquisición algunos, no sé si de todo absueltos. [...] Tiene grandes partes, gran entendimiento, mucho espíritu y letras muchas, y talento grande de predicar y conversar, gran fruto, especialmente en Andalucía, y está en gran crédito de todos” (*Mon Nadal* 1:249). Pedro Ribadeneyra in his stubborn criticism of the Jesuit anti-converso policy brought an example of Ávila: “El P. Mtro. Ávila dijo que por dos cosas se podría perder la Compañía: la primera, por admitir a ella mucha turba; y la segunda por hacer distinción de linajes y sangre” (*Mon Rib.* 2:381).

<sup>176</sup> It must have been Luis (Diego) de Santander (1527–99) from Écija (Seville). Like Loarte and Guzmán, he was a disciple of Juan de Ávila. With Baltasar Piñas, he

he replied: “We [Jesuits] take a pleasure in admitting those of Jewish ancestry.”<sup>177</sup>

In this context, a narrative of Nadal’s alleged strong anti-Jewish sentiments reported by his secretary Diego Jiménez in the *Commentary on the life and virtues of Fr. Nadal*, written in the 1560s, must raise historians’ eyebrows. Jiménez naively recounts that during his stay in Avignon, Nadal was offered a position of chief rabbi by the Jewish community there, for he knew Hebrew so well. But he categorically refused the offer with indignation by calling the Jews “marranos,” and “diabolical spirits and heretics in the Law of Moses.” The French soldiers, hearing Nadal arguing with the Jews in Hebrew, called Nadal himself a “marrano.”<sup>178</sup> However, in his personal diary, Nadal presented a quite different version of this episode. He narrated that during the turmoil that resulted from the war between France and Spain, one of the French soldiers took Nadal, who was holding in his hand a Hebrew Pentateuch, by his beard and exclaimed: “You, Jewish dog!” Nadal did not report that he responded to that offence.<sup>179</sup>

It is, thus, hard to reconcile Nadal’s supposed Judeo-phobia, as portrayed by his secretary Jiménez, with his alacrity to admit into the Society candidates of Jewish ancestry, as portrayed in his own writings.<sup>180</sup> What was Jiménez’s purpose, then, in informing his Jesuit readers

---

worked with *moriscos* (see Medina, “La Compañía de Jesús y la minoría morisca,” *AHSI* 57 (1988): 3–136) and was confessor of the converso Teresa de Ávila, whom he helped found her convents in Medina del Campo (1567) and Segovia (1574), where he was rector of the first Jesuit college. Alonso Rodríguez was his disciple in Valencia. Santander was an outspoken opponent of the anti-converso decree, whose consequences he personally experienced—Baltasar de Santofimia (likely himself a converso) opposed his appointment as rector of the college in Écija, and Cristóbal Méndez contested his nomination as rector in Seville. Also his two brothers, Jerónimo (1541–74) and Antonio (b. 1539), entered the Society (see *DHCJ*, pp. 3499–500).

<sup>177</sup> “Disputavi etiam acriter contra opinionem Soti, quod ordo correptionis evangelicae non esset servandus in crimine haereseos: conquestus est apud me quod non recipereamus, qui ducunt a judaeis originem; se id scire de Araozio et Mirone. Respondi ita non esse; sed habere nos delectum in illis recipiendis” (*Mon Nadal* 2:21). This and other stories show clearly that the early Jesuit leadership’s opposition to the converso discrimination was one of principle, for it was against the Jesuit Constitutions, contrary to what Foa suggests in her “*Limpieza versus Mission*” (pp. 307–8).

<sup>178</sup> See *Mon Nadal* 1:29–31.

<sup>179</sup> See *Mon Nadal* 1:4–5.

<sup>180</sup> Jesuit documents on the subject show that Jesuit Judeo-phobia and converso-phobia, as well as Judeo-philea and converso-philea, went hand in hand, even though one could object that a converso-phobe could be at the same time a Judeo-phile, or vice versa. Apparently it was not so among early Jesuits, because of the common genealogical identification of conversos with Jews.

about Nadal's anti-Jewish invectives in Avignon, the veracity of which cannot be uncritically accepted, although a few historians who commented on it do consider Jiménez's version reliable?<sup>181</sup> Is it possible that Jiménez's account was an attempt to assure his Jesuit confreres that Nadal himself was not of Jewish descent? One way of answering that question is by exploring Nadal's likely converso background. In addition to the connection made earlier, there are a number of additional hints that might point to Nadal's Jewish origins, which he, as almost all other converso Jesuits, may have kept strictly undisclosed.

The first tip comes from the topography of the city of Majorca. Nadal's native home and that of his mother's family were located next to the church of Santa Eulalia—the center of the converso (*chueta*) quarter in the City of Majorca throughout the sixteenth century.<sup>182</sup> Still today, the two streets in that neighborhood, Carrer Pare Nadal and Calle Morey, testify to Jerónimo Nadal's family roots.<sup>183</sup>

The second hint comes from the archives of the Spanish Inquisition. At least four conversos who bore the name of Nadal were tried by this tribunal at the end of the fifteenth century (Gaspar in 1489, the dyers Pablo and his wife Martina in 1497, and Pau, who was a tailor),<sup>184</sup> and

---

<sup>181</sup> See William Bangert, *Jerome Nadal, S.J. 1507–1580: Tracking the First Generation of Jesuits* (Chicago: Loyola University Press, 1992), p. 1; O'Malley, *The First Jesuits*, p. 190; Codina Mir, "La ordenación y el doctorado en teología de Jerónimo Nadal," p. 247; Joan Nadal Cañellas, *Jerónimo Nadal Morey, la seva vida i la seva contribució a la cultura europea del s. xvi* (Palma de Mallorca: Promomallorca Edicions, 2002).

<sup>182</sup> The *chueta* quarter is to be distinguished from the Jewish one that was adjacent to it, even though both pertained to the same parish of St. Eulalia. I personally confused the two quarters in my "Jerónimo Nadal" (*DEI*, p. 1315), following M. Ruiz Jurado in his "Jerónimo Nadal" (*DHCJ* 2:2793).

<sup>183</sup> In the past, there was another street in the Santa Eulalia quarter, Calle de Nadals (today Calle de la Campana), named after the family of Nadal, who owned a house there in the second half of the sixteenth century: "El Magnífico Antonio Nadal, Ciudadano militar, que fue el último poseedor de la casa, la vendió a Bernardo Barrera [...] en 10 de mayo de 1599. El Antonio Nadal citado, las había adquirido de Pedro Jerónimo Nadal [...] en 4 de Julio de 1563, y este a su vez por compra a la Magnífica Beatriz Dezcallar [...] en 24 octubre de 1560" (Diego Zaforteza y Musoles, *La ciudad de Mallorca. Ensayo histórico-toponímico* [Palma de Mallorca: Ajuntament, 1960], vol. 4, pp. 321–2). I have not yet been able to establish the connection of these Nadals to Jerónimo. When the latter departed from Majorca in 1545, he left on the island his only brother, Esteban Nadal (see Nadal, *Chronicon* [35]: "Navegué solo hasta Barcelona, dejado el cuidado de los asuntos familiares a mi hermano Esteban, bajo la supervisión de mi tío Morey"). At any rate, this information indicates the bond of various Nadals with the *chueta* quarter of the city.

<sup>184</sup> See Lorenzo Pérez, ed., *Anales Judaicos de Mallorca* (Palma de Mallorca: Ripoli, 1974), p. 237; and Pérez, *Inquisición de Mallorca, Reconciliados y relajados, 1488–1691* (Barcelona: [M. Perdigó], 1946), Index.

at least one in the seventeenth century (Rafael Nadal Pomár de Benito in 1679).<sup>185</sup>

The third hint involves possible converso associations of the surname Nadal.<sup>186</sup> Bishop Bernardo Nadal Crespi (bishop 1794–1818) was the first head of the Majorcan Church to allow *chuetas* candidates to enter the priesthood. Jaume Nadal, together with the well-known prominent converso families of Valls, Aguiló, Fuster, Pomár, and Segura, in 1672 was a co-founder of the Majorcan Sociedad de Seguros de Transportes Marítimos.<sup>187</sup> With such strong circumstantial evidence, little doubt remains about Nadal's Jewish ancestry.

Nonetheless, when the life of Ignatius of Loyola began reaching its zenith, the professed Jesuits in Rome elected Jerónimo Nadal vicar general, as soon as he returned from his trip to Spain, accompanied by Diego de Guzmán, Gaspar de Loarte, and Manuel de Sá (November 1554). Because he was often away visiting the Jesuit provinces across Europe, the daily duties of the government were fulfilled by his converso collaborators, Polanco and Madrid.

The latter was born in 1503 to a converso family of Daimiel near Toledo. He arrived in Rome as a theologian of Cardinal of Trani, Giovan Domenico de Cupis (1493–1553), who would become one of the major supporters of Loyola's apostolate with Roman Jews. Remaining the cardinal's guest and associate, Madrid began collaborating in the Jesuit project for the Roman prostitutes, the St. Martha House. In 1550, his brother Alfonso entered the Society, and Cristóbal followed suit in 1554. Only one year later Loyola appointed him his assistant general for Italy, while entrusting him with the care of the *Casa Professa* and the supervision of colleges, even though he had not yet pronounced his final vows and thus was not *de iure* a full Jesuit. These numerous duties did not prevent Madrid from fulfilling Ignatius's request (which Salmerón and Andrés de Oviedo had failed to fulfil)<sup>188</sup> to compose

---

<sup>185</sup> See AHN, Inquisición, lib. 364, f. 249<sup>r</sup> and Lleonard Mutaner i Mariano, ed., *Ralación de los Sanbenitos 1755* (Mallorca: Miquel Fonf, 1993), pp. 20–1. Note that the surname Pomár is a typical name among Majorcan *chuetas*, who practiced endogamy. Thus, it is very unlikely that Raphael's mother, Pomár, would have married a non-*chuetas*.

<sup>186</sup> See *Dicionário Sefaradi de sobrenomes* (Rio de Janeiro: Fraiha, 2003), p. 337.

<sup>187</sup> Gabriel Cortés Cortés, *Historia de los Judíos Mallorquines y de sus descendientes cristianos* (Miquel Font: Mallorca, 1985), vol. 1, p. 182; and Cortés Cortés, *Origen Genealógico de algunos Apellidos existentes en Mallorca e Historia de los Judíos de España* (Valencia: Ediciones Franva, 1965), Index.

<sup>188</sup> For more on Oviedo, see below.

a kind of Eucharistic directory, *Libellus de frequenti usu sacramenti Eucharistiae*. Its first anonymous edition appeared in Naples already in 1556, and the official one was printed by the Jesuits in Rome in 1557. Later editions of Madrid's booklet were often bound with Polanco's *Breve directorium* that we have analyzed above. Cristóbal de Madrid was one of the only two Jesuits (the other one was André de Freux) who were present at Ignatius's death 31 July 1556.

*The converso triumvirate: the election of Diego Laínez*

When Ignatius died, his vicar general, Nadal, was far away in Spain—the news about Loyola's death, transmitted by Ribadeneyra, reached Nadal only in September 1556 at Alcalá. It was his task now to organize a general congregation that would elect a new superior general of the Society. However, according to the Society's secretary Polanco, Nadal's appointment expired with Loyola's death. Thus, Polanco informed Nadal that the professed Jesuits in Rome had congregated and elected a new vicar general, Diego Laínez. Even though Nadal may have had some legal ground to claim that he still had the right to exercise his office, he embraced and recognized immediately the election of Laínez. He rushed back to Rome by horse to support the latter in his difficult task of convoking the congregation—a task that would be delayed for two years due to the war being waged between King Philip II and Pope Paul IV. During this interregnum period, the Society was governed by Laínez and his devoted collaborators Polanco, Nadal, and Madrid.

The accumulation of power in the hands of these few was profoundly resented by one of Ignatius's early companions, the eccentric Nicolás Bobadilla. He campaigned against the triumvirate at the papal court and elsewhere, arguing that Laínez was being manipulated by his associates. He also claimed that the Jesuit *Constitutions* had to be approved by the ten founding fathers (and not just by Ignatius, whom he accused of being a "malign sophist"),<sup>189</sup> and that until then the three men had no legal authority. In his memorial to the governor of Loreto, Gaspare de' Dotti, sent from Rome in 1557, Bobadilla wrote: "Laínez is good, but he allows himself to be governed by his two sons, who have fallen

---

<sup>189</sup> See *Mon Nadal* 2:53.

into many errors, as you will see in the attachment.”<sup>190</sup> The attached document is Bobadilla’s *Disordini fatti in poco tempo in questo malo loro governo* [Disorders made in a brief time in this bad government of theirs]. Among the thirteen accusations, its author wrote in the first paragraph that “the three, Laínez, Polanco, and Nadal [...] secluded themselves for many days and discussed among them certain things and not in public with the [general] congregation.”<sup>191</sup> It is interesting to note that this accusation is similar to what Benedetto Palmio would write later about the role of conversos during General Congregation 3, as we shall see below.

Bobadilla’s argumentation was harshly criticized by Nadal, who accused him of being ambitious, worldly, seditious, and an unquiet soul (these epithets are typical in the anti-converso writings of the period, as we have seen in the previous chapter). Then Bobadilla reached for another type of weapon. Benedetto Palmio suggested that Bobadilla, in his attempt to dismantle the New Christian “triumvirate” in Rome,<sup>192</sup> pointed out to Pope Paul IV (who was known for his antipathy toward Jews and Spaniards and, therefore, also toward Laínez)<sup>193</sup> that Laínez and many of his collaborators were of Jewish lineage, even though Araoz and Palmio claimed that Bobadilla himself belonged to the same stock. Perhaps Bobadilla made these charges in order to veil his own *Morisco* background.<sup>194</sup> A hint that this is so is that Bobadilla was not Nicolás’s real name. His family name was Alonso y Pérez, and Bobadilla [del Camino] was a town in Placencia where he was born c. 1509. This “rough and rustic like his native land”<sup>195</sup> Spaniard studied rhetoric and logic in Valladolid and then philosophy at the University of Alcalá, where he earned his baccalaureate. There, like Laínez and Salmerón, he must have heard of Ignatius. Subsequently

<sup>190</sup> “Laínez è buono, ma lasciarsi governare di due figliuoli suoi, i quali l’hanno precipitato in tanti errori, come vedrà per l’allegata” (*Mon Nadal* 4:105).

<sup>191</sup> “Li tre, Laynez, Polanco et Natal [...] si separorno per parecchi giorni, et trattavano tra loro le cose, et non in publico con la congregazione” (*Mon Nadal* 4:105–6).

<sup>192</sup> To my knowledge, Palmio’s memorial is the only document that interprets the crisis after Loyola’s death in terms of the converso conflict. On different interpretations of Bobadilla’s discontent, see *DHCJ* 1:464–5; and Scaduto, *Governo*, pp. 45–7.

<sup>193</sup> See Scaduto, *Governo*, pp. 31–2.

<sup>194</sup> See S. Pey Ordeix in his *Historia crítica de San Ignacio de Loyola... Estudio analítico de la vida e historia del santo fundador de la Compañía hecho directamente sobre los documentos de los archivos nacionales y extranjeros, especialmente de los secretos del Vaticano, de la inquisición y de la Compañía* (Madrid: Impr. de A. Marzo, 1916), p. 222; and ARSL, *Vitae* 164, f. 17<sup>r-v</sup>.

<sup>195</sup> See Schurhammer, *Francis Xavier*, p. 207.



NICOLAUS BOBADILLA.  
Non confundar in  
æternum.



P. NICOLAUS BOBADILLA *Palentinus,*  
*vnus è primis decem IGNATII Socijs. Obijt Laureti*  
*IX. Kalend. Octobris, anno Domini CIO. IO. XC,*

*Hic Parcas sine mente sonos, Sceptrumq; Tiaram*  
*Inmoto ridet cuncta supercilio.*

Source: Alfred Hamy, *Galerie Illustrée de la Compagnie de Jésus* (Paris, 1893), #313. Courtesy of John J. Burns Library at Boston College.

Figure 8. Nicolás Bobadilla (c. 1509–90)—the converso opponent of the “converso triumvirate”



he began studying theology, first in Alcalá under Juan de Medina and then back in Valladolid under Diego de Astudillo (both masters were of probable converso ancestry), but he eventually followed the fame of Loyola up to Paris, where he joined the *ínigistas*. In the context of his anti-converso conspiracy at the papal court, which—according to Benedetto Palmio—was the beginning of how “the worms infested the apple,”<sup>196</sup> one ought not be surprised to learn that Bobadilla eagerly assisted at the burning of the Talmud (“and other heretic”) books in Ancona in 1554.<sup>197</sup>

In spite of Bobadilla’s conspiracy, however, the pope was assured through his envoys, Cardinal Alberto Pio di Carpi and Cardinal Michele Ghislieri, that all Jesuit priests in Rome, except for Bobadilla and his French confrere Ponce Cogordan (1500–82), recognized Laínez’s authority as vicar general. In addition, Nadal successfully persuaded the papal circles that Loyola’s *Constitutions* did not contain any error. Subsequently, Laínez called for the congregation to meet in June 1558. Now the provincial congregations had to elect their delegates according to the rule established by Polanco and Nadal (superior provincial plus two elected professed delegates).<sup>198</sup> The first to do so was the Italian province. Not surprisingly, Laínez, Polanco, and Nadal were chosen to represent it.

As the assembly gathered, Laínez wanted to prevent the election of any ambitious person and for that purpose composed a document consisting of twelve canons.<sup>199</sup> Nadal objected to it by arguing that those were not part of the Jesuit *Constitutions*.<sup>200</sup> Nadal’s criticism resulted in a rumor that he was conspiring to become superior general, but Polanco’s investigation, requested by Laínez, proved the rumor to be false. With the papal blessing obtained by Laínez and Salmerón, the First General Congregation began. In the room where Ignatius died, on 2 July Laínez was elected Loyola’s successor with thirteen out of twenty votes. Nadal received four votes, and three other candidates

<sup>196</sup> See ARSI, *Vitae* 164 f. 17<sup>r</sup>.

<sup>197</sup> See *Mon Ign.* 1:569 (a letter to Mirón from 5 April 1554); and Keneth R. Stow, “The Burning of the Talmud in 1553, in the light of the Sixteenth-Century Catholic Attitudes Toward the Talmud,” *Bibliothèque d’Humanisme and Renaissance* 34 (1972): 435–59.

<sup>198</sup> See Scaduto, *Governo*, p. 94.

<sup>199</sup> See ARSI, *Congr. I*, f. 3<sup>r</sup>; and *Inst.* 222, f. 210<sup>r</sup>.

<sup>200</sup> See *Mon Nadal* 2:59–60.

(Broet, Lanoy, and Borja) received one each.<sup>201</sup> Polanco reported in a letter to Oliviero Manareo that the results of voting brought much joy and consolation to all but Laínez.<sup>202</sup> Neither for the electors nor for the Judeo-phobic Pope Paul IV, who approved the election with a moving speech,<sup>203</sup> was Laínez's converso lineage—that he made public at the occasion—<sup>204</sup> any impediment to his election to the highest administrative post in the Society of Jesus, despite the discontent of the Spanish court and attempts of later Jesuits to conceal it.

One of the earliest Jesuit historians who adamantly opposed these attempts to falsify Laínez's ancestry was the Italian historian Francesco Sacchini (1570–1625). When his *History* containing the information about Laínez's Jewish background appeared in 1622, many Spanish Jesuits overwhelmed Superior General Mutius Vitelleschi (1563–1645) with requests to delete it:

The Province of Toledo, united in a congregation, unanimously petitions our Reverend Father General to see to it that what is written in the second volume of the *History of the Society* about the ancestry of Father James Laynez is deleted. We beg for the removal of so great a slur on the sweet memory of so great a Father. Let there be no mention of it whatever in the second edition, and in this first we ask that Father General would immediately cause the page containing this foul blot which damages the whole Society to be cut out and replaced by another asserting the purity and nobility of the Father's lineage. We give a few of the many reasons which may induce his Paternity to grant the petition. First, what the *History* discloses about the birth of this great man is false, as witnesses of the utmost probity who have investigated the matter testify. Secondly, even if true, it would serve no useful purpose but cause the greatest harm and be downright sinful to brand a General of the Society and one of its founders with that infamy. Thirdly, the vile imputation is not confined to our Father Laynez alone but reflects on all his kin... Among others, the Marquis of Almazán who is not ashamed to count the Father among his relatives is deeply offended by it...

<sup>201</sup> See *Mon Nadal* 2:62.

<sup>202</sup> See *Mon Laínez* 3:394–7.

<sup>203</sup> See *Mon Laínez* 3:398–9 and 8:665–9. Possevino claimed that Paul IV wanted to make Laínez a cardinal and that some cardinals wanted him to be elected as pope after the former's death (see AHSI, *Inst.* 184/II, f. 351<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>204</sup> See Possevino's memorial (AHSI, *Inst.* 184/II, f. 350<sup>v</sup>): "P. Giacompo Laínez nato però in Almanzano di padre quale si sa. Il quale P. Lainez eletto poi in generale, et esso ricusandolo con accennar anco ingenuamente il suo nascimento, la congregazione, unita di quei primi padri che [sono] venuto [e] avevano il sincero spirito della Compagnia, giudicò nel cospetto di Dio frivola ogni obiezione, la quale nascesse dalla considerazione di simili rispetti del mondo." See also Possevino's letter to Sacchini in AHSI, *Vitae* 162, ff. 59–60<sup>v</sup>.



Source: Alfred Hamy, *Galerie Illustrée de la Compagnie de Jésus* (Paris, 1893), #111. Courtesy of John J. Burns Library at Boston College.

Figure 9. The Italian Jesuit historian Francesco Sacchini (1570–1625)

Sacchini, whom the Toledan Jesuits asked to be punished, straightforwardly replied:

Verily I am a luckless miserable fellow and scarcely could there be a more wretched creature, for who will spare a little sympathy for one who manages to offend everybody? Many a year now have I been sweating over my books, fondly hoping by my labors and torments to please God in the first place, then our fathers now in Heaven with Him, and after that the present and future Society, as well as my neighbor in general. And behold the result, the evil fruit of my honest endeavors. I have gravely offended God, villainously degraded and disgraced a most eminent and saintly man now reigning with Him, wounded the Society itself by fixing on it a foul blot and dishonor, and even contaminated my neighbor with infamy.... O Father of mercies, in Thy infinite goodness forgive me! And may the good fathers of Spain listen with patience to what their wicked son, if son he may be called, has to say in his own defense, so that though condemned unheard, he may be not punished without a hearing.... I therefore declare that what is revealed in the *History* is so certain as to leave no possible room for doubt in the mind of any prudent man acquainted with the proofs on which it rests. The first proof is that the fact was known throughout the Society from the beginning. I have been hearing of it for thirty-five years, and never until now have I come upon anyone who doubted it. Many of our older fathers have read my *History* and not a man of them regarded the statement about Laynez as news to him. Indeed, I have been widely congratulated for not having passed it over. Cardinal Bellarmine and his confessor, Father Fabius, together with five former assistants to the General, all men well versed in the study of our origins, had not the slightest doubt about the truth of the story. Nor had the assistants who revised the *History* nor Father General himself. Father Antonio Possevino expressly asserts its truth, and Father Ribadeneyra plainly signifies the same in several places. While Father García Alarcón, an assistant, was on a visitation of the provinces of Castile and Toledo he addressed to Father General a memorial giving reasons why the decree about the non-admission of New Christians should be modified. In this he wrote as follows: "Our holy Father Ignatius admitted men of Jewish extraction who by their sanctity and learning have rendered our Society illustrious and at the Council of Trent preserved its institute inviolate."<sup>205</sup> None but Láinez can be in question here, for though there were other fathers at Trent on him alone fell the responsibility of defending the Society in the Council. Let the older fathers still happily among us be asked for their opinion and I guarantee that they will answer in my sense. Why, the Province of Toledo itself at a former congregation held in the year 1600 signified the same thing when petitioning for a modification of the decree about New

---

<sup>205</sup> We shall analyze Alarcón's memorial in Chapter Four.

Christians! Who, then, will believe that a story so old, so widely known, and so consistent is wholly without foundation? Why should it be told of Laínez rather than another unless it be true of him? Why if false has no one ever taken the trouble to confute it? [...] The fathers of Toledo contend that by revealing the Jewish origin of Laínez I have inflicted a wound on the whole Society. How so, pray, when none but themselves felt any wound? My book has been circulated in all our provinces and read at table in many refectories, but only from Spain has come so much as a syllable of complaint. And where, anyhow, is this infamy of which they speak? St. Epiphanius, that great light of the Church and opponent of heresy, was a Jew on both sides. So was St. Julian, archbishop of no less a place than Toledo itself, and still its patron. And how many saints and doctors besides were of that same blood of the Saint of Saints? The Church glories in such men and so should we glory in our Laínez, whose so-called stain is an ignominy only to vulgar and prejudiced minds. It is our duty to make war on such prejudices and destroy them. Why this fear where there is no cause for fear? Is it an ignominy to find Christ our Lord, however late in the day? What stain remains in the new man who has put on Christ and become a temple of God, a son of God, an heir of God and co-heir of Christ? Must we blush to have the same mind as Apostle of the Gentiles? It is he who forbids the wild olive to boast against the broken branches of the true olive, into which through no merit of their own the alien shoots have been grafted. Armed with this thought, how can any man who loves Christ be offended by the return to Him of His own racial kith and kin? But I am not pleading the cause of the New Christians. I merely wish to indicate that I in no way repent what I wrote about Laínez. As a Christian, his Jewish blood was not an ignominy but ennoblement, for he was not a wild shoot, as each of us is, but a fallen branch of the good olive grafted again sweetly and fitly into the parent stock.<sup>206</sup>

Interestingly enough, the same kind of petition was sent to Rome by the Provincial Congregation of Toledo in 1649, requesting this time that the information about the Jewish ancestry of Polanco be deleted from Sacchini's *History*.<sup>207</sup>

---

<sup>206</sup> See James Brodrick, *The Progress of the Jesuits (1556–79)* (Chicago: Loyola University Press, 1986), pp. 314–21. See the original in *Mon Laínez* 8:833–55.

<sup>207</sup> See ARSI, *Congr.* 74, ff. 79–80. Sacchini's text in question was the following: "Eo demum descendit Pontifex, ut libera Congregatio esset: cum eo tamen, ut si forte Hispano homini munus imponeretur, ante promulgationem sibi significarent. Quod plerique, coniectura haud dubia, repellendo Polanco accipere: sive is Neophytus, ac favere Neophytis putaretur, sive etiam a quopiam timeretur, ac praesertim ab Edmundo Augerio, qui ad eum ex Hispania redeuntem cum Borgia, de nimio inter cetera Nationum studio delatus fuerat" (Sacchini, *Historiae Societatis Iesu*, vol. 4 [Everardus], liber 1, pp. 6–7).

The quoted words of Sacchini reflect the spirit of Loyola that the delegates of General Congregation 1 wished to preserve. They decided that the *Constitutions* written by Ignatius could not be altered, for they believed—to use García Alarcón’s later observation—that he probably had received their substantial points from God himself.<sup>208</sup> Thus, Loyola’s non-discrimination policy towards candidates of Jewish ancestry was sanctioned. The Congregation subsequently approved the Latin official translation of the *Constitutions* rendered by Polanco, who took into consideration the notes suggested to Loyola by himself, Madrid, and Nadal. The latter was commissioned by the assembly to write a commentary that, under the title of *Scholia in Constitutiones*, would be recommended as normative by the following General Congregation 2 (1565).<sup>209</sup>

The authority of the “converso triumvirate” was also upheld at the administrative level. General Congregation 1 elected them as assistants general to Diego Laínez—Madrid for Italy and Sicily; Polanco for Spain; and Nadal for Germany, Flanders, and France. Additionally, Madrid continued to be minister of the *casa professa*, Nadal to supervise the Roman College, and Polanco to head the secretariat, exercising also an office of the *admonitor* to the superior general.<sup>210</sup> Nadal requested from the congregation that the assistants general be given the right to vote *ex officio* and to keep their offices until the election of the next superior general.<sup>211</sup> Remembering clearly the lack of full comprehension of the vicar general’s function after Loyola’s death (Nadal vs. Laínez), a Congregation’s committee that included Polanco and Nadal—without having enough time to redact a document—declared that the vicar general had the function not only to convoke a general congregation to elect a new superior general but also to replace the superior general during any absence from Rome. That was a prescient clarification, for Laínez would be absent from his headquarters quite often. The longest absence was due to his (and Polanco’s) participation in the colloquy of Poissy (1562) and in the last session of the Council of Trent in

---

<sup>208</sup> “[...] quod nos a Patre nostro Ignatio accepimus eumque probabiliter credimus illud a Deo immediate recepisse quoad omnia substantialia” (ARSI, *Inst.* 184-I, f. 304).

<sup>209</sup> See Scaduto, *Governo*, p. 109; and idem, *Francesco Borgia*, p. 53.

<sup>210</sup> The *admonitor*’s job was to “admonish the general with due modesty and humility about what in him he thinks would be for the greater service and glory of God” (*Const.* [770]).

<sup>211</sup> See ARSI, *Congr.* 20a, ff. 10 and 176.



1563. They were accompanied there by Nadal, who joined them on his way back from Spain, from where, in spite of being entrusted with Laínez's powers, he was forced to leave on request of the converso-phobic royal official, Ruy Gómez, a penitent of the Jesuit Antonio de Araoz. Cristóbal de Madrid was appointed vicar general in Rome for that period, temporarily flanked by Ribadeneyra.

Ribadeneyra continued to enjoy much influence during Laínez's generalate. With Salmerón he was entrusted with another mission to Flanders in 1557, where he accompanied Cardinal Carlo Carafa (1517–61).<sup>212</sup> From there he flanked Count of Feria in his embassy to the dying “Bloody Mary,” Queen Mary I Tudor (1516–58). Taking advantage of this opportunity to travel to London, Ribadeneyra was asked to explore the possibility of establishing the Society there, but the rise in power of Queen Elizabeth I (1533–1603) forced the young Jesuit to return hastily to the Continent. This brief yet memorable visit to England influenced Ribadeneyra's later work on the ecclesiastical history of the English Reformation, *Historia eclesiástica del cisma del Reino de Inglaterra*. In 1559, Laínez summoned him to Rome, where Ribadeneyra was given supervision of the *Germanicum* College and became visitor of the colleges in Amelia, Perugia, and Loreto. After the latter mission Laínez admitted him to the solemn profession in September 1560 and promoted him to the post of superior provincial of Tuscany, arguing that “the new provincial has a talent of preaching, of doctrine, and of spirit. Besides, he is a prudent person, trained to deal with important affairs in his many years in the Society from its beginning, and very familiar with our Father Ignatius.”<sup>213</sup> In 1561 Laínez made him an associate of Salmerón, who was nominated vicar general during Laínez's and Polanco's trip to France and Trent.

Upon his return from this exhausting journey, the fifty-three-year-old Diego Laínez died at dawn on 19 January 1565, Francisco de Borja present at his deathbed.<sup>214</sup> Polanco flanked the latter, who—elected vicar general—was now in charge of preparing the Second General Congregation that met on 21 June 1565. The assembly of delegates elected Borja as the new superior general on the first ballot, with thirty-one

---

<sup>212</sup> See *Mon. Rib.* 1:241–3.

<sup>213</sup> See *Mon Rib.* 1:xi.

<sup>214</sup> See *Mon Borgia* 3:727.



out of the thirty-nine votes, many of which must have been cast by conversos, whom—according to Palmio—he loved unconditionally.

*Francisco de Borja's infinite love of conversos*

Among the participants in the congregation were, of course, Bobadilla, Madrid, Nadal, Polanco, Ribadeneyra, and Salmerón, but other converso or pro-converso Jesuits also were electors. Ignacio de Azevedo, Juan Gurrea, Diego de Guzmán, Gaspar de Loarte, Manuel López, Cristóbal Rodríguez, Manuel de Sá, and Juan Alonso de Vitoria. Also Bartolomé Hernández, Diego Miró, Juan de Montoya, Alfonso Román, Juan Suárez, and Marcelo Vaz may have shown their pro-converso sympathy, given that each one of them may have had a converso background.

We have already followed the career of Manuel de Sá and the Siamese friends, Guzmán and Loarte; and the relation of the Toledan provincial, Manuel López, to the Salmantican moral theologian Enrique Enríquez has already been mentioned. But the careers of Ignacio [Inácio] de Azevedo and Cristóbal Rodríguez were no less remarkable. Azevedo came, like López, from Oporto (Portugal), where he was born in 1526 to a former priest, Manuel de Azevedo, and a former nun, Francisca de Abreu, and perhaps was related to the prominent Jesuit Simão Rodrigues [de Acevedo]. Ignacio's maternal converso grandfather, João Gomes de Abreu (married to Joanna de Mello), was a famous poet and navigator. His younger brother, Jerónimo, was captain-general of the island of Ceylon [Sri Lanka] (1594–1612), where he welcomed Jesuit missionaries. Azevedo entered the Society in Coímbra in 1548 and subsequently was named rector of the Jesuit College at Lisbon and provincial of Portugal. Borja would appoint him the first visitor of the new Jesuit province in Brazil,<sup>215</sup> where he would spend three

---

<sup>215</sup> The beginnings of the Jesuit presence in Brazil are marked by the work of José de Anchieta Larena (1534–97) from San Cristóbal de la Laguna (Tenerife, Canary Islands). He was born to a rich landowner who was originally from the Basque Country, Juan López de Anchieta (related to Ignatius of Loyola), and was a descendant of one of the conquerors of Tenerife, Mencia Díaz de Clavijo y Larena, who was of Jewish ancestry. He co-founded the cities of São Paulo (1554) and Rio de Janeiro (1565) and is also considered the first Brazilian writer.

Related to him was also another Jesuit, Luis Anchieta (1652–83) from La Orotava (Tenerife). He was born to María Ana de Abreu and Juan de Anchieta. Under the

years. On his second trip to Brazil in 1570, his flotilla *Santiago* was captured on 15 July near the Canary Islands by the Huguenot pirates led by Jacques Sourie. He and his thirty-nine young companions were stripped down, chopped in pieces, and thrown into the sea.<sup>216</sup> Among them was a nephew of Teresa of Ávila, the Jesuit novice Francisco Pérez Godoy (b. 1540). The pope in 1854 beatified these forty Jesuits, known as the martyrs of Brazil, even though the efforts of the beatification had already begun with Antonio de Vieira (1608–97) in the seventeenth century.

Cristóbal Rodríguez<sup>217</sup>—who is mentioned in Palmio’s memorial as part of the converso circle—after his doctorate in theology at Alcalá was appointed rector at the College of Gandía that had been founded by Borja. He accompanied Borja during his visit to Valladolid, and during the absence of Araoz, Rodríguez was named rector and vice-provincial of the two Castilian provinces (1559). As noted before, Rodríguez was sent with Giovanni Battista Eliano on a papal mission to the Copt patriarch of Alexandria in Egypt. Inquisitor Ghislieri would employ him also in the mission to the Valdese in southern Italy (1563), and Borja would choose him to govern the newly created Jesuit province of Rome (1567). On 7 October 1571, he would be one of the seven Jesuits present at the battle of Lepanto, where he accompanied don John of Austria (1547–78), at the pope’s request. Towards the end of Borja’s term, he would be appointed rector of the St. Peter Penitentiary in Rome. At the very conclusion of Láinez’s mandate (1565), he was appointed provincial of Tuscany, and as such he participated in General Congregation 2. (Rodríguez’s military courage was characteristic also of another converso Jesuit, Hernando de Torres, who died as a chaplain in the Great Armada in front of the Irish coast.)<sup>218</sup>

---

pseudonym of Christóbal Pérez del Christo, he published a work on antiquities of the Canary Islands (see *DHCJ* 1:158).

<sup>216</sup> See Polanco’s letter to Vázquez in *ARSI, Ital.* 68, f. 193<sup>v</sup>.

<sup>217</sup> Cristóbal Rodríguez: \*1521 Hita (Guadalajara, Spain); †1581 Naples; SJ 1554; priest before 1554; professed in 1559. See *DHCJ* 4:3395; Scaduto, *Catalogo*, p. 127; and Mario Scaduto, “La missione di Cristoforo Rodríguez al Cairo (1561–1563),” *AHSI* 54 (1958): 233–78.

<sup>218</sup> Hernando de Torres: \*1537 Portugal; SJ 1569 Cádiz; †1588. He had relations with the Jews of Ragusa (Dubrovnik), who offered him a reward for marrying a Jewish woman, which he refused. In turn, he took with him a rabbi’s son and made him Christian in Rome. See *DHCJ* 4:3821; and Francisco de Borja Medina, “Jesuitas en la armada contra Inglaterra,” *AHSI* 58 (1989): 35.



Source: Alfred Hamy, *Galerie Illustrée de la Compagnie de Jésus* (Paris, 1893), #182.  
 Courtesy of John J. Burns Library at Boston College.

Figure 10. Bl. Ignacio de Azevedo (1526–70)—the martyred missionary of Brazil

After the choice of the new superior general, General Congregation 2 also elected *in absentia* an assistant to Francisco de Borja for Spain, Antonio Araoz, even though his own province had not chosen him as elector for that assembly. A moving letter from Borja to Araoz sheds some light on the reason why the converso Jesuits must have voted unanimously for this controversial relative of Loyola, whose blatant converso-phobic policy Benedetto Palmio juxtaposed in his memorial to the pro-converso openness of Borja:

Your Reverence must not be surprised that no letters have come from me recently, since with my new cross the burden of my work increases. But now that this morning the general congregation elected you assistant by a majority of all except one or two votes, Joseph is unable to restrain himself any longer from congratulating his dearest brother [*Genesis* 43:30]. He entertains a good hope that your arrival here will mean great service to God through your advice and aid in the affairs of His new plant, the Society of Jesus, of which *you were among the first members after the original ten fathers*. [...] Your Reverence knows my unflinching love for you, and that many waters cannot extinguish it. Come, then, Father, in that same spirit of affection with which you are desired, so that it will be possible to say truly of us two in our measure, “*sicut in vita se dilexerunt ita in morte non sunt separati...*” *Pater carissime*, pray for me and let me know the day of your departure [*Italics mine*].<sup>219</sup>

Polanco,<sup>220</sup> Ribadeneyra, and Salmerón<sup>221</sup> wrote letters that were similarly friendly in tone,<sup>222</sup> but Araoz interpreted his election as an attempt to remove “from Spain a terrible person, feared by some as a plotter and by others as an obstacle to the despoiling of the country of money for Rome and of men for Italy,”<sup>223</sup> and, doggedly supported by his royal-courtier protector, Prince Ruy Gómez, he never showed up in Rome, excusing himself—as he had done seven years before—on the grounds that the heat of Rome was harmful for his health.<sup>224</sup> When Araoz failed to take up his office after three years, Borja replaced him with Nadal. Benedetto Palmio, who—together with Diego Miró

<sup>219</sup> See *Mon Borgia* 4:28–30. Quoted in Brodrick, *Progress of the Jesuits*, pp. 178–9.

<sup>220</sup> See *Mon Borgia* 4:28.

<sup>221</sup> See *Mon Salmerón* 2:25–6.

<sup>222</sup> See Bartolomé Alcázar, *Chrono-historia de la Compañia de Jesus en la Provincia de Toledo, y elogios de sus varones illustres, fundadores, bienhechores, fautores, e hijos espirituales* (Madrid: Juan Garcia Infançon, 1710), vol. 2, pp. 96–9.

<sup>223</sup> For the interpretation of this election by Sacchini and Astrain, see Astrain, *Historia*, 2:225.

<sup>224</sup> See *Mon Borgia* 4:28 and Astrain, *Historia*, 2:225–30.

(Portugal) and Everard Mercurian (Northern Europe)—was chosen to be a new assistant general by the Congregation, lost, in turn, the chance to have Araoz in Rome to do battle against Borja's predilection for conversos.<sup>225</sup> His main targets were especially Polanco, who was reappointed secretary of the Society for the third consecutive time and *admonitor* to the general for the second time, and Ribadeneyra, who was appointed visitor in Lombardy (1569) and assistant general for Spain (replacing Araoz) and Portugal (1571). Among other converso Jesuits who—to the dismay of Palmio—would fly to Borja like the proverbial bees to the flower, were Francisco de Toledo, Pedro de Parra, Diego de Ledesma, Alonso Ruiz, Hernando de Solier, Dionisio Vázquez, and Gaspar Hernández.

Francisco de Toledo Herrera was born on 4 October 1532 to Alfonso de Toledo, an actuary in Cordova, and Isabel de Herrera. His Jewish ancestry became notorious during the inquisitorial process of the converso Archbishop of Toledo, Bartolomé Carranza de Miranda, whom Toledo (and Borja) tenaciously defended.<sup>226</sup> At this occasion, Inquisitor Matías de Hinestrosa requested Toledo's exclusion from the process because of his Jewish lineage—his grandfather had been tried for judaizing<sup>227</sup> and his grandmother and great grandparents had been burned at stake.<sup>228</sup> He studied philosophy first in Valencia and then under Domingo de Soto (1494–1560) at Salamanca, where he became a professor at the age of twenty-three. Influenced by the preaching of the converso Jesuit, Antonio de Madrid,<sup>229</sup> Francisco entered the Society

<sup>225</sup> See ARSI, *Vitae* 164, f. 20<sup>v</sup>.

<sup>226</sup> See Scaduto, *Francesco Borgia*, p. 34. Carranza came from the Peñalosa family of Seville.

<sup>227</sup> Benedetto Palmio in his autobiography mentioned that his and other relatives' *sanbenitos* were hanged in [the cathedral of] Cordova: "L'Ambasciatore di Spagna [Juan de Zúñiga] sentendo questi ragionamenti sparsi per la Corte disse al Papa che quest'huomo era novissimo cristiano et che erano in Cordova abitelli dell'Avo et [di] altri suoi parenti" (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, f. 24).

<sup>228</sup> See Astrain, *Historia*, 2:64–5. Ignacio Tellechea Idígoras has established in his "Censura inédita del Padre Francisco de Toledo, S. J.," *Revista Española de Teología* 29 (1969): 15–9, that the document quoted by Astrain is extant in the Archivo Histórico Nacional in Madrid (*Inquisición*, libro 597, f. 43): "Este Maestro Francisco de Toledo es de linaje de judíos mui baxos y notorios de Córdoba, hijo de Alonso de Toledo, escrivano público, cuyo padre fue por judaizante reconciliado y truxo sanbenito, y creo que fueron quemados la madre y abuelos; y en resolución es de este linaje y casta notoria verisimamente."

<sup>229</sup> Antonio de Madrid: \*1520 Cádiz; SJ 1555; †1563 (see Fejér, *Defuncti*, 2:132; Astrain, *Historia*, 2:505–7; and *Mon Nadal*, 2:541).





FRANCISCVS CARD. TOLETVS  
creat. an.<sup>o</sup> 1593. mort 1596

Source: Alfred Hamy, *Galerie Illustrée de la Compagnie de Jésus* (Paris, 1893), #112. Courtesy of John J. Burns Library at Boston College.

Figure 11. Francisco de Toledo [Herrera] (1532–96)—the first Jesuit cardinal

in 1558. The following year Nadal sent him to Rome, where Laínez appointed him as master of novices and professor of philosophy and theology at the Roman College. Ten years later the pope named him as apostolic preacher (an office that he would hold for twenty-four years) and theologian of the Apostolic Penitentiary. Several popes sent him on diplomatic missions to Austria, Poland, Germany, Bavaria, France (the reconciliation of King Henry IV), and Flanders (the retraction of Michael Baius) and engaged him in the revision of the *Vulgata* text. In recognition of his services to the Apostolic See, he was the first Jesuit to be created cardinal (17 September 1593), titular of S. Maria in Transpontina. As we shall see in the next chapter, he would play an important role in the conflict between Superior General Acquaviva and the Spanish provinces at the dawn of General Congregation 5. Toledo's position in this affair provoked much anger in Benedetto Palmio, who disparaged his Jewish ancestry and called him a "monster" in his autobiography.<sup>230</sup> He died in 1596 and was buried in a monumental tomb in the patriarchal Liberian Basilica in Rome. Toledo's posthumous *Instruction for Priests and Penitents* (1596) had the largest editorial success among Jesuit books on sacramental confession, reflected by at least 166 editions published before 1650—an average of three per year.<sup>231</sup>

Cardinal Francisco de Toledo was followed in the Society by his two nephews, Baltasar and Francisco [Vázquez] Suárez [de Toledo]. Their other siblings—as in the case of other converso families—also entered the religious life: Pedro became a priest, and Marcelina, Inés, and María entered the Jeronymite convent of Santa Paula in Granada. Other two siblings married: Juan Vázquez Suárez de Toledo married Antonia Vázquez de Gumiel y Medina, and Catalina Utiel de Toledo became the spouse of Juan Trillo y Armenta. This numerous offspring has been born to Gaspar Suárez de Toledo, an attorney who had married Antonia Vázquez de Utiel, Cardinal Toledo's sister. As a child he had moved from his native Toledo to the newly reconquered Granada (1492) with his parents, Alonso de Toledo (the majordomo of the

<sup>230</sup> ARSI, *Vitae* 164, ff. 22–5, 45–6.

<sup>231</sup> See Salo Wittmayer Baron, *A Social and Religious History of the Jews*, vol. 14: "Late Middle Ages and Era of European Expansion, 1200–1650: Catholic Restoration of Wars of Religion" (New York: Columbia University Press, 1969), pp. 11–2. *DHCF* 4:3807; *The Cardinals of the Holy Roman Church. Biographical Dictionary*: <http://www.fiu.edu/~mirandas/bios1593.htm>; Maryks, "Census," 494–514; and Maryks, *Saint Cicero and the Jesuits*, especially pp. 9–11, 42–7, and 61–4.



Catholic kings, whose father, the *jurado* Alonso Suárez de Toledo, had served King Enrique)<sup>232</sup> and Leonor de la Torre, and two siblings, Juan Suárez de Toledo who would become a priest and Gaspar Suárez who would become a military officer. Some of the relatives of this Toledan converso family of Suárez Vázquez de Toledo, whose ancestors came from León to Talamanca near Toledo after the Christian victory at Las Navas de Tolosa in 1212,<sup>233</sup> were: Álvarez de Toledo, the archbishop-cardinal of Burgos; don Francisco de Toledo, viceroy of Peru; and the Jesuits Cipriano Soárez and Juan de Mariana.<sup>234</sup>

Francisco Suárez's brother, Baltasar, was among the first Jesuits to be sent to the Philippines, but he died exhausted by travel conditions en route there in 1581.<sup>235</sup> Francisco himself exceeded the fame of his maternal uncle as one of the most influential Jesuit theologians. He was born in 1548 in Granada. Following his father's profession, he studied law at Salamanca since 1561, and there he entered the Society in 1564. As a Jesuit he continued his studies of philosophy and theology in Salamanca. Ordained priest in 1572, he taught theology at Ávila, Segovia, Valladolid, Rome, Alcalá, Salamanca, and Coimbra. He published, among other works, *De Incarnatione* (1590), *De mysteriis vitae Christi* (1592), *De Sacramentis* (1595), *Disputationes Metaphysicae* (1597)—the main expression of his philosophical thought—*De Poenitentia* (1602), *De auxiliis* (1603), *De virtute et statu Religionis* (1608–9), *De Legibus* (1612)—for which he is considered the father of international law—and *Defensio fidei catholicae* (1613).<sup>236</sup> His contribution was important to the development of Probabilism—the main ethical system of the Society since the latter quarter of the sixteenth century.<sup>237</sup> The *Doctor Eximius*, as Suárez was called, extensively wrote on the legal aspects of the 1593 decree *de genere*, arguing that, without any

<sup>232</sup> See the letter of the Catholic kings to Francisco Suárez's grandfather, Alonso de Toledo quoted in Raoul de Scorraille, *François Suarez de la Compagnie de Jésus* (Paris: P. Lethielleux, 1912), p. 8.

<sup>233</sup> See DHCJ 4:3654; *Enciclopedia Universal Ilustrada Europeo-Americana* (Bilbao: Espasa Calpe, 1927), 70 vols, vol. 57, p. 1412; and Scorraille, *François Suarez*, pp. 3–12.

<sup>234</sup> See José de Dueñas, "Los Suárez de Toledo," *Razón y Fe* 138 (1948): 91–110 and José Gómez-Menor, *Cristianos Nuevos y Mercaderes de Toledo* (Toledo: Librería Gómez-Menor, 1970), p. xlv. On Juan de Mariana, see Chapter Four.

<sup>235</sup> See H. de la Costa, *The Jesuits in the Philippines* (Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1961), p. 6.

<sup>236</sup> See DHCJ 4:3654–62.

<sup>237</sup> See Maryks, *Saint Cicero and the Jesuits*, pp. 125–7.

doubt whatsoever, General Congregation 5 had the power to amend the Jesuit *Constitutions* by adding the impediment of origin (barring converso candidates from entering the Society).<sup>238</sup> Rather than an expression of his racism,<sup>239</sup> Suárez's endorsement of Acquaviva's anti-converso legislation was probably a way of concealing his own Jewish ancestry.

Toledo's and Suárez's inclination towards casuistry was also characteristic of Pedro de Parra, who was born in 1531 in Sanlúcar la Mayor (Seville); he entered the Society in 1553, was ordained priest in 1559, and was admitted to the solemn profession by Borja in 1566. He taught at the Roman College: philosophy (1560–3), Scripture (1573–6), and theology (1564–76). Like Francisco de Toledo, he was appointed to the committee to revise the *Vulgata*. Afterwards, he replaced Sebastião Morais<sup>240</sup> in teaching moral theology at the College of Brera (Milan), where his converso fellow, Manuel de Sá, was also a professor. He authored the unpublished *De casibus conscientiae summa* and *In Evangelium Ioannis*. The Jesuit historian Scaduto considered him one of the most excellent professors in Rome. Indeed, his pupil from the Roman College, Silvio Antoniano, lauded him in a letter to Cardinal Borromeo: "He has from God this particular talent of easiness and clarity in teaching, and he is especially well trained in cases of conscience."<sup>241</sup>

Parra's colleague at the Roman College was Diego de Ledesma. Born in 1524 in Cuéllar (Segovia), he changed his name from Villafanna (Villa Cuéllar) as he entered the Society in 1556 under the sway of Ribadeneyra, whom he had met in Leuven.<sup>242</sup> Just one year after his admission he was ordained as priest in Rome, where he led the works of a committee dominated by his converso fellows—Francisco de Toledo, Manuel de Sá, Pedro Parra, Diego de Acosta,<sup>243</sup> and Pedro

<sup>238</sup> See Francisco Suárez, *Tractatus de religione Societatis Jesu* (Brussels: Greuse, 1857), p. 84.

<sup>239</sup> Munitiz, "Francisco Suárez," p. 340.

<sup>240</sup> Sebastião Morais: \*c. 1535 Funchal (Isla de Madeira); SJ 1550 Coimbra; priest 1560 Évora; professed 1569; †19 August 1588, Mozambique (see *DHCJ* 3:2737).

<sup>241</sup> "Ha da Dio singolare talento della facilità e chiarezza all'insegnare, e soprattutto bene esercitato e risoluto nei casi di coscienza" (Scaduto, *L'opera di Francesco Borgia*, p. 328). One wonders whether he was related to the venerable Juan Sebastián de la Parra (1546–1622), a Jesuit missionary in Peru (see *DHCJ* 4:3542–3).

<sup>242</sup> See *Mon Rib*. 1:64–5.

<sup>243</sup> Diego de Acosta (1535–85) was one of the five sons of a converso merchant from Medina del Campo (Valladolid) who entered the Society (the most famous of



Source: Francisco Suárez, *Opera omnia* (Venetiis, 1740–1751), t.p. portrait. Courtesy of John J. Burns Library at Boston College.

Figure 12. Francisco Suárez [de Toledo] (1548–1617)—the converso supporter of the anti-converso legislation

Perpiñan<sup>244</sup>—with the goal of producing a uniform pedagogical code for Jesuit schools, the *Ratio studiorum*. As a preliminary text for this project, he composed *De ratione et ordine studiorum Collegii Romani* (1564–5). He also can be considered the author of the decree issued by Borja, *De opinionibus in philosophia et theologia tenendis* (1565). Ledesma also produced a Latin grammar (Venice, 1569) and a catechism (1571) that was rendered into many languages. In 1566, together with Nadal, he was appointed pontifical theologian for the Diet of Augsburg. With Ribadeneyra he was visitor of the province of Lombardy that had been governed by Benedetto Palmio. The latter resentfully wrote of Ledesma in his memorial that “if Father Ignatius were alive, he wouldn’t keep him in the Society for one hour, judging him an enemy of the Society and exterminator of peace and union” [8].

No less versed in classics was Cipriano Soáres, who—in spite of his Castilian origins—entered the Society in Lisbon because of his converso origins from both sides. He was related to the Toledan clan of Suárez de Toledo, whose descendant was the aforementioned Francisco Suárez. His *De arte rhetorica* was the most published Jesuit manual on the subject and was used in Jesuit colleges for more than two hundred years.<sup>245</sup>

Another one of Borja’s protégés, Dionisio Vázquez (1527–89) from Toledo—the main target of Palmio’s memorial and the future leader of the *memorialistas* movement—studied theology at Gandía after joining the Jesuits in 1550 and accompanied Commissary Borja in his

---

them was José, mentioned earlier in this chapter). After his return to Spain, Visitor García de Alarcón appointed him rector of the College in Seville (1578) and provincial of Andalusia (1581). For a description of his character, see Astrain, *Historia* 3:82.

<sup>244</sup> Pedro Perpiñan: \*1540 Elche (Valencia); SJ 1551 Coimbra; priest 1564 Évora; †28 October 1566 Paris. He was born to Melchor Perpiñan and Eleonora Clapés and had three siblings (Bernardo, Melchor, and Luis) who also entered the Society in Coimbra. His Sephardic family name (see Pere Bonnín, *Sangre Judía: españoles de ascendencia hebraea y antisemitismo cristiano* [Barcelona: Flore del Viento Ediciones, 1998], Index) and the typical converso names of his father and brother may suggest Jewish ancestry. He taught rhetoric at the Roman College 1561–5 and was considered one of the major European orators of the period. See Scaduto, *Catalogo*, p. 114; Bernard Gaudeau, *De Petri Ioannis Perpiniani vita et operibus* (Parisi: Retaux-Bray, 1891); and Maryks, *Saint Cicero and the Jesuits*, pp. 101–6.

<sup>245</sup> Cipriano Soáres [Suárez]: \*1524 Ocaña (Toledo, Spain); SJ 1549; †1593 Placencia; priest in 1553; professed in 1564 (see *DHCJ* 4:3593; Nadal’s questionnaire in ARSL, *Fondo Gesuitico*, 771/I, f. 352; and Maryks, *Saint Cicero and the Jesuits*, especially pp. 97–8 and 103–4).

travels through Spain.<sup>246</sup> The latter convoked him to Rome in 1566 to support Polanco in the secretariat of the Society for the Spanish provinces.<sup>247</sup> Against Palmio's advice, Borja appointed Vázquez rector of the Roman College in 1568, visitor in Naples in 1570, and vice-provincial in Naples in 1571. Vázquez participated in General Congregation 3 as an elected delegate of the Neapolitan province.<sup>248</sup>

Gaspar Hernández (1528–75) was Vázquez's fellow countryman. He entered the Society in 1554, and Borja admitted him to the profession in 1563; just one year later Borja appointed him rector of the College of Naples. With Polanco, Hernández accompanied Borja in his last visit to Iberia (1571–2).<sup>249</sup> In a letter to Borja, Salmerón offered accolades of his aptitude for government affairs:

One doubts whether anybody else could come here to fulfill his duties with more attention. He is well known out of house and much loved by illustrious and important people who chose him as their spiritual father with much advantage.<sup>250</sup>

Nevertheless, Mercurian would send him back to Spain and later dismiss him from the Society.

Hernando de Solier (1526–1603) from Segovia received his doctorate *in utroque iure* from the University of Bologna and entered the Society as priest in 1555 under the sway of Borja. In 1566 the latter named him procurator general of the Society before admitting him to the solemn profession (1569). Pius V appointed him, together with Francisco de Toledo Herrera, an examiner and the first rector of St. Peter Penitentiary (1570–3). Mercurian would send him back to Spain with Ribadeneyra, a close friend of his and of Luis de Santander.

<sup>246</sup> See *Mon Borgia* 3:311, 314, 321–2.

<sup>247</sup> Palmio claimed in his autobiography that “contese [sic] fra Dionisio e Polanco fu grande” (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, f. 25<sup>v</sup>).

<sup>248</sup> Acquaviva would commission him to write Borja's biography, which was nevertheless prohibited from being printed and remains unpublished (ARSI, *Vitae* 80). See *DHJ* 4:3911 (where Dalmases does not mention his Jewish ancestry); Scaduto, *Catalogo*, p. 151; idem, *Francesco Borgia*, pp. 57, 70, 75, 77–8, 87–8; Fois, “Everard Mercurian,” pp. 21, 28; and John W. Padberg, “The Third General Congregation,” in McCoog, *Mercurian Project*, p. 50.

<sup>249</sup> See Scaduto, *Catalogo*, p. 75 and 164, where there is no mention of his dismissal; and idem, *Azione*, p. 363.

<sup>250</sup> “Si dubita che possa venire qui un altro che disimpegni più acuratamente il proprio ufficio...; è molto conosciuto fuori di casa e molto amato da persone illustri e di qualità che lo hanno preso come padre spirituale con notevole profitto” (*Mon Salmerón* 1:566–9).



(The troika would be charged by the provincial of Toledo, Antonio Cordeses, with composing a *memorial* against some practices in the Society to the nuncio Nicolás Ormanetto, as we shall see in the next chapter.) Solier's homonymous uncle was an archpriest and canon of the cathedral of Segovia. Upon his death in 1592, he left to the Jesuit college in the city an inheritance, which the superior general ordered managed not by his Jesuit nephew but his relative, Doña Antonia de Solier.<sup>251</sup>

Alonso Ruiz, who began his Jesuit career as novice master in Granada (1562–4),<sup>252</sup> was summoned by Borja to do the same job in Rome, where he introduced to the Jesuit life the future foremost Polish Jesuits: St. Stanisław Kostka (1550–68) and Piotr Skarga (1536–1612); the anti-converso superior general, Claudio Acquaviva; and his martyred nephew, Rodolfo. Borja admitted Ruiz to the profession of four vows with Pedro de Parra. During the Third General Congregation, in which he would take part as superior of the Roman province, he was responsible for the redaction of the *Ordo Novitiatus*.<sup>253</sup> He was superior of the Roman province 1571–4 and, after his removal from Rome, rector of the colleges in Granada and Oviedo. In 1580, together with Baltasar Piñas, he went as missionary to Peru, where—after being rector of the college in La Paz (Bolivia), vice-provincial of Quito, and visitor of Panama, he died back in Peru.

Benedetto Palmio harshly criticized Ruiz's and his patron Borja's spirituality. He argued in both his memorial and autobiography<sup>254</sup> that "the excessive credit and favor" given by Francisco de Borja to converso Jesuits was due to the monastic influences by which he had been affected before becoming a Jesuit. That impact would have inclined Borja to a spirituality that—according to Palmio—was alien to the spirit that God had communicated to Ignatius and resulted from Devil's deceit:

---

<sup>251</sup> See pertinent documents in ARSI, *Fondo Gesuitico 1591-II*, doc. 20–2. See also DHCJ 4:3603–4; Scaduto, *Catalogo*, p. 139; and Josef Wicki, "Le Memorie dei penitenzieri gesuiti di S. Pietro," *AHSI* 57 (1988): 263–313.

<sup>252</sup> Alonso Ruiz: \*1530 Hita (Cordova); †1599 Arequipa (Peru); SJ 1554 Cordova; priest 1555; professed in 1566.

<sup>253</sup> See DHCJ 4:3434–5; and Scaduto, *Catalogo*, p. 132. Juan de Santiváñez in his *Historia de la Provincia de Andalucía de la Compañía de Jesús* (ARSI), pt. 2, bk. 1, chap. 2, mentions Italian Jesuits' resentment against him. On his contributions to the formation of the Jesuit novitiate, see M. Ruiz Jurado, *Orígenes del noviciado en la Compañía de Jesús* (Rome: IHSI, 1980), pp. 212–5.

<sup>254</sup> See ARSI, *Vitae* 164, ff. 33sqq.

Even though Borgia was a good and saintly person, he did not conform to the spirit of Ignatius, having been trained by Fra Giovanni [Juan de Tejada],<sup>255</sup> and so he had learned many things from other men religious, with whom he was acquainted for a long time, rather than from Ignatius. This was clearly seen during Borgia's generalate, because he would have introduced many new things, if he could, and actually he did introduce some, for he believed Ignatius did not have a good knowledge of religious institutes. Borgia thought this way, for he did not know, nor had he reached the high of Ignatius's spirit and of what he understood in the Society.<sup>256</sup>

The spiritual figures that exercised their authority on the Duke of Gandía were Salvador de Horta, Pedro de Alcántara, and the Franciscan Juan de Tejada, who claimed to have prophetic visions of Borja as an angelic pope destined to reform the Church. Tejada exercised influence on some Jesuits in Gandía, where he was a guest in the Jesuit college, most notably on its rector, Andrés de Oviedo, with whom Borja did his novitiate. This “solitary sparrow on the roof,” as Borja dubbed him, was likely—as was Tejada—of converso background. He was born in Illescas in 1517 and entered the Society in Rome (1541) already as priest. He earned his Master of Arts in Alcalá and became a doctor in theology at Gandía. He was renowned in the Society for his monastic inclinations (disappointed with too little time dedicated to prayer in the Society, he unsuccessfully asked to spend seven years in the desert), but his influence in the Society was virtually eliminated by his appointment in 1555 as auxiliary bishop of the Jesuit patriarch of probable converso lineage, Melchor Nuñez Barreto, in Ethiopia, where he died in solitude and poverty in 1577.<sup>257</sup> Perhaps under the sway of Oviedo and the converso Luis de Granada, Borja—who was also fascinated by the Carmelite spirituality of Teresa of Ávila—sent to General Congregation 1 (which he could not attend) a memorial proposing to extend time for prayer and to impose as mandatory certain penances in the Society.<sup>258</sup> These monastically inclined proposals did not arrive on time, but the newly elected Superior General Laínez refused Borja's

<sup>255</sup> See Melquiades Andrés Martín, *El misterio de los alumbrados de Toledo, desvelado por sus contemporáneos (1523–1560). Discurso de apertura de curso 1976–1977* (Burgos: Facultad de Teología del Norte de España, 1976), p. 43.

<sup>256</sup> See ARSI, *Vitae* 164, f. 18<sup>r</sup>.

<sup>257</sup> Manuel Ruiz Jurado, “Un caso de profetismo reformista en la Compañía de Jesús. Gandía 1547–1549,” *AHSI* 43 (1974): 217–66.

<sup>258</sup> See *Mon Borgia* 3:347–8.



suggestions later, anyway. Once elected general, Borja was empowered by the congregation to lengthen the time for prayer, with the condition that he take into account the differences between regions and persons.<sup>259</sup> Cristóbal Rodríguez and Miró also seemed inclined to the cloister.<sup>260</sup> By this charge, Palmio suggested in his memorial ([7]) that Borja and his converso protégés created a sort of a religious order within the Jesuit Order, more similar in its spirituality to monks or Carthusians. At the same time, Nadal and Polanco persistently opposed this kind of asceticism.<sup>261</sup>

As during Laínez's generalate, Polanco accompanied the Jesuit superior general on his trips outside Rome: to Florence in 1567, where Pope Pius V—to whom Polanco was already lending his services to reform the papal *Dataria*<sup>262</sup>—employed the Jesuits in negotiating an agreement with Cosimo de' Medici (1519–74); and to Iberia and France in 1571, where the two supported Cardinal Michele Bonelli (1541–98) in his political negotiations with the respective monarchs. Before his departure, Borja named Nadal vicar general of the Society.

In France, Polanco was caught by fever, and Borja continued traveling to Italy without him. When Polanco eventually caught up with Borja in Ferrara in June 1572, the latter, in turn, fell ill. At the beginning of August, the physicians allowed Borja to continue his journey, however. He departed from Ferrara on 3 September towards Loreto. There, the physicians were consulted again, and they consented to allow Borja to proceed to Macerata, where Polanco had to remain because he fell ill again. Borja continued his trip without Polanco and arrived in Rome on 28 September. Two days later he died. Even though Palmio accused Polanco of forcing the general, who was presumably dying, to continue his return trip to Rome (so that he would die and be replaced), the professed fathers of Rome elected Polanco as the new vicar general, even before he arrived back in Rome, while he was

---

<sup>259</sup> See *Decretum 29* in Padberg, *For Matters of Greater Moment*, p. 120; and Scaduto, *Francesco Borgia*, pp. 97–8.

<sup>260</sup> See Scaduto, *Francesco Borgia*, pp. 100 and 102.

<sup>261</sup> See Scaduto, *Francesco Borgia*, pp. 98–104; and Maryks, *Saint Cicero and the Jesuits*, especially pp. 77 and 96–7.

<sup>262</sup> *Dataria* is an office of the papal chancery from which are given (Lat. *data*) graces or favors, recognizable in *foro externo*, such as benefices, etc. Polanco's engagement in this office was likely due to his expertise of *scriptor apostolicus* that he had acquired prior to his entrance to the Society, perhaps at the University of Bologna.

recovering from his illness in Macerata.<sup>263</sup> Juan Alfonso de Polanco had to recuperate and focus his energies as quickly as possible, for he was about to face the most challenging storm of his Jesuit career.

In conclusion, this chapter has shown why and how the Jesuits of Jewish lineage played a key role in the Society of Jesus and how the early Jesuits richly, knowingly, and strategically benefited from their converso confreres. I have argued that the key to understanding why the Jesuit Order became a haven for conversos is to be found in the approach to the “Jewish question” of its founder, Ignatius of Loyola, who had numerous contacts with the converso spiritual and merchant network *before* he founded the Society. His adamant stress on the constitutional principle of non-discrimination in accepting candidates regardless of their lineage, as far as they were suitable for the Jesuit life, was supported by his close converso collaborators, especially Jerónimo Nadal and Juan Alfonso de Polanco—the key figures in the institutional and spiritual development of the early Jesuits. Loyola’s non-discrimination legacy became an integral part of the converso policy of his two successors, Diego Laínez—who himself was a converso—and Francisco de Borja. The period of *interregnum* after the death of Loyola in 1556 and the election of Laínez in 1558 was a time of political crisis, during which anti-converso resentments emerged and were manipulated for the first time. Contained by the protector of conversos, Francisco de Borja, this animosity exploded after the latter’s death in 1572, shifting the Society’s policy towards its converso influential minority. The following chapter will explain why and how it happened.

---

<sup>263</sup> See Scaduto, *Francesco Borgia*, pp. 62 and 403–6.



## CHAPTER THREE

### DISCRIMINATION AGAINST JESUITS OF JEWISH LINEAGE (1573–93)

*Those from the circumcision subverted the entire house of the Society.*  
Paul Hoffaeus, S.J., 1589/90

The death of Superior General Francisco de Borja in 1572 marks a turning point in the history of converso Jesuits, whose influence—after thirty years of holding high posts of responsibility in the Jesuit administration—began to fade. As after the deaths of Borja’s two predecessors, Loyola and Laínez, the anti-converso Jesuits seized the momentum of political transition by campaigning against the converso presence in the central administration, with the support of external lay and ecclesiastical officials. This time the scheme was successful—the anti-converso Italo-Portuguese lobby managed to block the election to the generalate of the converso Juan Alfonso de Polanco and—conspiring with the pope—managed to elect a candidate who was neither converso nor pro-converso. From the very start of his tenure, the newly elected superior general, Everard Mercurian, began to “cleanse the house”: he deprived all converso Jesuits of governmental posts in Rome, Italy, and possibly in other parts of Europe. Consequently, the period of the converso political sway ended, shifting the approach of the Jesuit administration in Rome away from both candidates and members of Jewish ancestry, a shift which under Mercurian’s successor, Claudio Acquaviva, would eventually result in the discriminatory legislation of 1593. It officially barred conversos from joining the Society of Jesus and dismissed those who were not yet full members of the Order. This chapter explores the *raison d’être* of the anti-converso policy under Mercurian and Acquaviva between 1573 and 1593.

When, as elected vicar general, he convoked the Third General Congregation to meet on 12 April 1573,<sup>1</sup> the converso Juan Alfonso

---

<sup>1</sup> “On October 1, 1572, after Saint Francis Borgia had been taken to his blessed immortality, the professed present in Rome chose Father Juan de Polanco in his place, with the power of vicar” (Padberg, *For Matters of Greater Moment*, p. 135).

de Polanco was the most prominent figure in the Society of Jesus—he had been a senior administrator in the general curia in Rome since his appointment by Loyola in 1547 as the Society’s secretary. Because the previous two vicars general, Láinez and Borja, had been elected superiors general at the subsequent general congregations, Polanco was considered the most probable candidate for this highest post in the Society. After all—to the dismay of Benedetto Palmio and the Portuguese—the Spanish electors dominated the Congregation. They governed all but one Italian province (the only Italian provincial was Francesco Adorno from Lombardy): Alonso Ruiz administered the Roman province, Alfonso Salmerón the province of Naples, and Juan Jerónimo Doménech the province of Sicily (we should keep in mind, though, that Naples and Sicily were politically under Spanish rule in the sixteenth century). Additionally, the province of Portugal was in the hands of Spaniards—Borja named the Valencian Diego Miró vice-provincial of Portugal in 1563 and assistant general for that province during his entire generalate (1565–72).<sup>2</sup>

In addition to these officials, there were nineteen other Spaniards present at General Congregation 3 (nine from Spanish provinces, six from non-Spanish provinces, three from the general curia in Rome, and one for reasons of seniority): Diego Avellaneda (representing Austria), Pedro Bernal (Andalusia), Nicolás Bobadilla (as the co-founder of the Society), Antonio Cordeses (Aragon), Miguel Gobierno (Toledo), Luis de Guzmán (Toledo), Cristóbal de Madrid (general curia), Gregorio de Mata (Andalusia), Juan de Montoya (Sicily), Jerónimo Nadal (general curia), Baltasar Piñas (Aragon), Alfonso de Pisa (Upper Germany), Juan de la Plaza (Andalusia), Antonio Ramírez (Naples), Pedro de Ribadeneyra (general curia), Juan Suárez (Castile), Miguel de Torres (Portugal), Dionisio Vázquez (Naples), and Pedro Villalba (Aragon).<sup>3</sup>

Among these participants of the congregation were many converso or pro-converso electors who could counter-balance the Italo-Portuguese anti-converso connivance: not only Madrid, Nadal, Ribadeneyra, and Salmerón but also Manuel López, Baltasar Piñas, Alfonso de Pisa,

---

<sup>2</sup> After the crisis with the first provincial of Portugal, Simão Rodrigues, the next superior provincial appointed by Loyola in 1552 was the Spaniard Miguel de Torres (1509–93), who was then reappointed for the additional two terms 1555–61. Later he was also rector in Lisbon, where he was the queen’s confessor (see *DHCJ* 4:3824). On Portuguese-Spanish tensions fueled by the patriotism of the former, see Nuno da Silva Gonçalves, “Jesuits in Portugal,” in McCoog, *Mercurian Project*, pp. 719–20.

<sup>3</sup> See Padberg, *For Matters of Greater Moment*, p. 715.

Antonio Possevino, Alonso Ruiz, Dionisio Vázquez (and perhaps Diego Avellaneda, Diego Miró, Juan de Montoya, Juan de la Plaza, Antonio Ramírez, and Pedro Bernal whose possible converso ties are still to be examined).<sup>4</sup>

Most of the converso delegates were prominent Jesuits. Manuel López, brother of Enrique Enríquez, was already mentioned in the previous chapter as an elector for General Congregation 2, as were Alonso Ruiz and Dionisio Vázquez. Baltasar Piñas (1528–1611) from Sanahuja (Lérida) was admitted to the solemn profession in Rome by Laínez; he introduced the “Padri di Gesù”—as they were called there—in the Aragonese Sardinia (1559) and organized the first Jesuit schools on the island: in Sassari (1563) and Cagliari (1565).<sup>5</sup>

Alfonso de Pisa was born in 1528 in Toledo to the uncle of Cardinal Cisneros’s physician, Dr. Gonzalo de Pisa from Almagro, and Elvira de Palma. He entered the Society in 1552 in Alcalá, where he studied philosophy and mathematics after his studies of physics, mathematics, and medicine in Salamanca and Toledo. Like many other converso candidates, Nadal took him from Spain to Rome, where after his prompt ordination in 1555, Pisa taught cases of conscience at Loreto (1556–8) and metaphysics at the Roman College (1558–9). On Nadal’s request, Pisa’s notes on Martin Chemnitz’s *Theologiae Jesuitarum praecipua capita* (Cologne, 1562) were made available to a theologian from Coímbra, Diogo Paiva de Andrade (1528–75), in his confutation of the Melanchthonian disciple.<sup>6</sup> After earning his doctorate in theology in Rome, Pisa taught in Dilingen and Halle, where he prepared a critical edition of the Council of Nicaea’s legislation (1572), whose Arabic parts were later translated by the Italian Jew-turned-Jesuit, Giovanni Battista Eliano.<sup>7</sup> In 1573 he represented together with Peter Canisius the Jesuit Province of Upper Germany at General Congregation 3. In

<sup>4</sup> Juan de la Plaza was close to Teresa of Ávila; as novice master he admitted many converso disciples of Juan de Ávila, and his *socius* was the converso Alonso Ruiz (mentioned in Palmio’s memorial); after the election of Mercurian he was sent to distant Peru (see *DHCJ* 3153–4). Juan de Montoya was visitor and provincial in Sicily under Borja and, like Plaza, was sent to Peru, where he died in 1592 (see Scaduto, *Catálogo*, p. 102). Palmio harshly criticized him in his autobiography. For the Inquisition’s investigation of Avellaneda’s genealogy, see AHN, Inquisición, lib. 580, f. 150<sup>v</sup> and lib. 583, ff. 168<sup>v</sup>, 211<sup>v</sup>; and that of Bernal, *ibidem*, f. 236<sup>r</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> See Astrain, *Historia*, 2:57–8; and Scaduto, *Azione*, pp. 338–42.

<sup>6</sup> See Scaduto, *Governo*, pp. 604–11; and José Carlos Coupeau, “Los diálogos de Nadal. Contexto histórico-literario y hecho retórico,” *Ignaziana* 3 (2007): 17–25.

<sup>7</sup> See ARSI, *Germ.* 135, ff. 374–5 and 416–7.

1575 he would be destined to open a Jesuit mission in Transylvania, but Pisa encountered a strong opposition to this appointment: the anti-converso Superior Provincial Lorenzo Maggio accused him of being an Averroist,<sup>8</sup> and another confrere argued that, among other reasons, Pisa was too fat.<sup>9</sup> Whatever argument prevailed, Alfonso de Pisa was diverted to Poznań (Posen), from where he transferred to the ancient city of Kalisz in Poland, where he died in 1598.

Born into a family of goldsmiths that moved from Piedmont to Mantua via Milan and changed their name from Ca(g)liani, Antonio Possevino (1533–1611) entered the Society in 1559, lured by the preaching of his future enemy, Benedetto Palmio. Borja sent him with Mercurian to visit the Jesuit provinces of France and Aquitaine, which—after Borja’s death—he represented at General Congregation 3, where he was elected secretary to the new Superior General Mercurian. Following his engagement in the mission to Roman Jews after General Congregation 3, as we have seen in the previous chapter, he influenced Pope Gregory XIII’s decision to create a college of neophytes that would train preachers to convert Jews in Italy and the Levant.<sup>10</sup> He was one of the most prolific Jesuit writers, authoring close to forty books. The most famous of them was the *Bibliotheca selecta*, part of which was dedicated to the conversion of Jews. Through this and other writings, Possevino would become one of the fiercest opponents of purity-of-blood legislation in the Society, as we shall see in the next chapter.

In spite of this significant pro-converso presence at General Congregation 3, the close-knit Italo-Portuguese lobby gained ground in the assembly and was crafty enough to successfully conspire against Polanco’s election and his pro-converso supporters.

### *Italo-Portuguese anti-converso lobby at General Congregation 3*

The Portuguese delegation led by Leão Henriques<sup>11</sup> secretly carried to Rome a letter that Henriques’s penitent, Cardinal Infant Henry of

<sup>8</sup> See ARSI, *Germ.* 138, ff. 340–1 and 352; and Scaduto, *Azione*, p. 283. On the association of Averroism with conversos, see Roth, *Conversos, Inquisition*, pp. 321–2.

<sup>9</sup> See the letter of Francisco Antonio to Mercurian in ARSI, *Germ.* 136, ff. 199–200 (208).

<sup>10</sup> Donnelly, “Antonio Possevino,” pp. 5–6.

<sup>11</sup> The Portuguese Jesuits attending the Congregation were Pedro da Fonseca and Inácio Martins. Leão Henriques was a substitute for the sick provincial Jorge Serrão



Portugal (1512–80), had written to Pope Gregory XIII on 22 January 1573. In it, the Grand Inquisitor of Portugal and future king (1578–80) demanded that neither a converso nor a pro-converso candidate be elected superior general of the Society of Jesus, and he warned that if no measure against the converso evil is taken, the Society would risk destruction.<sup>12</sup> Ribadeneira, in his unpublished *Historia de la Compañía de Jesús de las provincias de España y parte de las del Peru y Nueva España y Philipinas*<sup>13</sup> reported that a similar letter, which the Portuguese Jesuits brought to the pope and which asked to impede the election of Polanco, had been written by the young King Sebastian,<sup>14</sup> whose tutor and confessor was the Jesuit Gonçalves da Câmara, known for his anti-converso stance. Not accidentally, Câmara was related by blood to Leão Henriques.

Pope Gregory XIII disclosed his support for a non-Spanish alternative to Polanco, who, in turn, asked the pope to exclude his name but refused to prohibit other Spanish candidates from being elected superior general. After the congregation opened, several members, including Polanco, went, according to custom, to ask the pope for his blessing.<sup>15</sup> After imparting it, Gregory XIII inquired about the procedures

---

(see Francisco Rodrigues, S.J., *Historia de la Companhia de Jesus na Assistência de Portugal*. 7 vols. (Porto: Real Academia de la Historia, 1931–50), 2/1:307). The latter's right to participate in the congregation was questioned, for he was appointed rather than elected as delegate (see Padberg, "The Third General Congregation," pp. 51–2; and idem, *For Matters of Greater Moment*, p. 135).

<sup>12</sup> "Illud etiam obnixè peto a Sanctitate Vestra, ut suo maximo iudicio provideat, ne quis ex natione novorum Christianorum, vel alius qui eis favere iudicatur, eligatur Generalis, nec in Societate recipiantur huius nationis homines, aut in ea prelati sint. Si enim remedium non adhibeatur oportunitum, timendum ac verendum est, ne Societas ista periclitetur et destruat, quia si incipiat relaxari (cum id sit proprium novorum Christianorum) deficiente ea vitae perfectione et integritate, quae eam debet comitari, statim consepulta iacebit. Quapropter a Sanctitate Vestra vehementer peto maximeque animi contentione ut huic tanto malo medicinam adhibere velit" (ARSI, *Inst.* 184-II, ff. 373<sup>v</sup>–374<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>13</sup> See ARSI, *Hisp.* 94, ff. 112–3. See also Baroja, *Judíos en la España*, p. 235; and Fois, "Everard Mercurian," pp. 21–5.

<sup>14</sup> King Sebastian I of Portugal (1554–78). One wonders whether he advised Sebastian to write that letter, for Câmara's aversion towards conversos was well known (see Rodrigues, *História* 2/1:334–5). On the alleged homosexual relation between the two, see Harold B. Johnson's article, "A Pedophile in the Palace" (<<http://people.virginia.edu/~hbj8n/pedophile.pdf>>).

<sup>15</sup> "Father Vicar asked when and in whose company he should seek the customary blessing of the Supreme Pontiff. The decision was that it should be sought as soon as possible, and that Father Vicar with Father Salmerón and others whom Father Vicar would choose from among the several nations to accompany him should proceed in

of the congregation, about the number of Spaniards among the voters, and about the national background of the previous superiors general. Gregory remarked that somebody should be chosen from a nation other than Spain, and, in spite of Polanco's protest against limiting freedom of conscience of the electors, the pope specifically suggested the name of the Walloon Everard Mercurian, then dismissed the delegation with his blessing.<sup>16</sup>

Consequently, while Antonio Possevino was addressing the congregation with an opening discourse, Cardinal Gallio of Como<sup>17</sup> arrived and informed the congregation that he was representing the pope's will to prevent the election of any Spanish candidate.

Prepared to obey, [the Jesuits], nonetheless, offered reasons for their request. The papal order contravened the Jesuit Constitutions in an extremely important provision. It would be difficult for the delegates to fulfill their oath to choose the person best suited to be general under the papal restriction. It could open the way to ambitious scheming for the office. The person elected would be in the difficult situation of knowing that he had been named, as it were, by force, and the members would find it equally difficult to obey someone imposed on the by outside pressure. It would seem as if the Pope favored some nations and turned away from others. Friendship and concord within the Society could be supplanted by disagreements and national hatreds. The faithful could be scandalized by the exclusion from the generalate of a nation to which the Society owed so much. Heretics would rejoice to hear of divisions in the Society. On the other hand, Catholic princes would attempt to take this opportunity to split the Society, removing their subjects from obedience to the general judging that their nation was discriminated against because of such exclusions. Gregory was reluctant to rescind his own order, but finally told the delegation that the congregation was free to elect whomever they chose, but that it remained his personal desire that he be a non-Spaniard. If, nonetheless, they elected a Spaniard, he wanted to be informed before any public announcement.<sup>18</sup>

The next day, on 23 April 1573, the assembly chose Everard Mercurian as the next superior general on the first ballot by a majority of twenty-seven votes.

---

the name of the congregation to request the blessing" (Padberg, *For Matters of Greater Moment*, p. 135).

<sup>16</sup> Astrain, *Historia*, 3:9sq.

<sup>17</sup> Bartolomeo Gallio (1527–1607) was the Cardinal Secretary of State 1572–85. He was born near Como and hence was called "cardinal of Como" (see *The Cardinals of the Holy Roman Church*: <http://www.fiu.edu/~mirandas/bios1565.htm>).

<sup>18</sup> These are the congregation minutes (ARSI, *Congr. 20b*, f. 210<sup>v</sup>) paraphrased in Padberg, "The Third General Congregation," pp. 54–5).

*Everard Mercurian's "house cleansing"*

In spite of the death of the anti-converso royal minister, Ruy Gómez de Silva, and his Jesuit protégé, Antonio Araoz, in 1573, the anti-converso lobby found eager support in the newly elected superior general, Mercurian (general 1573–80). From the very first years of his office he proceeded to “cleanse the house”: he removed from Rome (and possibly from Italy or even Europe) many converso Jesuits, in spite of their undisputable contributions and merits.<sup>19</sup> Polanco, after almost three decades in office, was moved away from Rome and sent to Sicily, a measure that seemed too harsh even to his major enemy, Benedetto Palmio.<sup>20</sup> Ironically, Mercurian replaced Polanco as secretary with Antonio Possevino (most probably a closet-converso), who four years later (1577) was sent with a diplomatic mission to convert the king of Sweden.<sup>21</sup> After the mission’s failure, he engaged in diplomacy with the Russian czar, the Polish king, and the Austrian emperor. Jerónimo Nadal, who after the election of Mercurian absconded into the bucolic Jesuit villa of Tivoli at the outskirts of Rome, eventually “fled” to Austria.<sup>22</sup> Pedro de Ribadeneyra, after thirty years of holding major administrative offices in Italy, was sent back to his native Toledo.<sup>23</sup> He was accompanied there by his close converso friend, Hernando de Solier. Alonso Ruiz was sent first to Granada and few years later to Peru, where he died in 1599. Baltasar Piñas also ended up in Peru. Alfonso de Pisa, as we have seen, was sent to Great Poland, where he passed the rest of his life. Gaspar de Loarte was moved away to Valencia, in spite of his advanced age of eighty, where he still engaged in the mission to Moriscos. Dionisio Vázquez, Borja’s protégé, was sent back to Spain, where he organized a rebel movement against the central government in Rome, known as *memorialistas*. Pedro de Parra and Manuel de Sá were sent to Milan. Cristóbal

<sup>19</sup> See Palmio’s autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, ff. 42–5).

<sup>20</sup> Palmio’s autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, f. 45): “Benché fui di diverso parere, io solo giudicando si dovesse mandare [Polanco] a visitare la Spagna, cosa che si doveva a Polanco et saria stato di grande consolatione a quelle provincie, ma il generale non volse, dubitando che si saria per questo troppo inalzato, et così lo mandò in Sicilia per rimuoverlo da Roma. Dipoi mandò Giulio Fatio per Provinciale con commissione perché disfacesse quanto haveva fatto Polanco, del che [egli] molto si contristò, e con ragione.”

<sup>21</sup> See Donnelly, “Antonio Possevino,” pp. 323–49.

<sup>22</sup> See Palmio’s autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, f. 45).

<sup>23</sup> *Mon Rib.* 1:782.

Rodríguez ended up in Flanders, from where he was further sent to Peru. Gaspar Hernández, in spite of Salmerón's strong support, was dismissed, as were Rodrigo Mena<sup>24</sup> and Juan Gurrea.<sup>25</sup> Even the co-founder of the Jesuits, Salmerón, was replaced by the thirty-two-year-old Acquaviva and sent to Madrid in 1575.

Ironically, Mercurian's segregation policy created new opportunities for some converso or pro-converso Jesuits who had occupied high-ranking positions in the Jesuit administration: they were able to reinvent themselves as prolific writers. Three clear examples are Polanco, who spent the last years of his life composing the first multi-volume chronicle of the Society;<sup>26</sup> Nadal, who produced his monumental *Evangelicae Historiae Imagines* that contained 153 superb engravings by Passeri, Vos, and Wierix (Plantin: Antwerp 1593); and especially Ribadeneyra, who between 1574 and 1611 composed an impressive number of writings on history, historiography, asceticism, and politics, many of which went through many editions and translations, assigning him a foremost place among the writers of the Spanish *Siglo de Oro*. Among other works, he composed *Vida del Padre Ignacio de Loyola, Fundador de la Religión de la Compañía de Jesús* (Madrid, 1583, the Castilian rendition of the Latin original from 1572); *Historia eclesiástica del Cisma del reino de Inglaterra* (Madrid, 1588); *Tratado de la tribulación* (Madrid, 1589); *Vida del Padre Francisco de Borja, tercer General de la Compañía de Jesús* (Madrid, 1592); *Vida del Padre Maestro Diego Laínez, uno de los primeros compañeros de San Ignacio y segundo Prepósito General* (Madrid, 1594); *Vida del Padre Maestro Alfonso de Salmerón* (Madrid, 1594); *Tratado de las virtudes, intitulado "Paraíso del Alma" compuesto por Alberto Magno* (Madrid, 1594); *Libro de meditaciones, soliloquios y manual del glorioso Doctor de la Iglesia San Agustín* (Madrid, 1594); *Tratado de la religión y virtudes*

<sup>24</sup> Rodrigo Mena: \*1525 near Palencia; SJ 1558; priest in 1561. He was dismissed in 1574 in Rome (see Scaduto, *Catalogo*, p. 97).

<sup>25</sup> Juan Gurrea: \*1533 Saragossa; SJ 1554; professed in 1554; priest in 1559. He was rector of the College in Modena and Parma when Palmio was the provincial of Lombardy. Before General Congregation 2 he was elected procurator of Lombardy and as such participated in the congregation that elected Borja. Gurrea was dismissed in December 1580 (see Scaduto, *Catalogo*, p. 72). Curious is an episode from other manuscript sources, reporting that Palmio requested that Gurrea stop wearing his ermine hats and chamois boots (*Ital. 116*, f. 116).

<sup>26</sup> *Vita Ignatii Loiolae et rerum Societatis Iesu historia auctore Joanne Alphonso de Polanco [Chronicon]*, 6 vols. Edited by J.M. Velez and V. Agustí, S.J. (Madrid, 1894–8).

*que debe tener el príncipe cristiano* (Madrid, 1595); *Confesiones del glorioso Doctor de la Iglesia San Agustín* (Madrid, 1598); *Flos Sanctorum o Libro de las vidas de los santos* (Madrid, 1599); *Illustrium scriptorum Societatis Iesu cathalogus* (1602); *Tratado en el cual se da razón del Instituto de la Religión la Compañía de Jesús* (Madrid, 1605); *Manual de oraciones para el uso y aprovechamiento de la gente devota* (Madrid, 1605); *Relación de lo que ha sucedido en el negocio de la canonización del Bienaventurado Padre Ignacio de Loyola* (Madrid, 1609); and *Vida de doña Estefanía Manrique Castilla, fundadora con don Pedro Manrique, su hermano, de la casa profesa de Toledo* (Madrid, 1880). Some of his works remain unpublished yet today (for example, the copious *Historia de la Compañía de Jesús de las provincias de España y parte de las del Perú y nueva España y Philipinas* (ARSI, *Hisp.* 94); other minor writings were published in the Jesuit series of *Monumenta Historica*, among them *Tratado del gobierno del nostro santo Padre Ignacio [que] tenía* (*Mon Ign.* 1:441–91) and *De no impedir la entrada en la Compañía a descendentes de judíos* (*Mon Rib.* 2:374–84).

The latter writing deals with the persecution of conversos in the Society and will be analyzed in detail in the next chapter. One of the issues discussed in this text was the participation of conversos in the revolt of some Spanish Jesuits against their central government in Rome.

### *Memorialistas' revolt against Rome*

Arguably, the discriminatory policy of Mercurian—one that was subsequently endorsed also by Acquaviva—and the defeat of the converso lobby during General Congregation 3 triggered the anti-Roman movement by Iberian Jesuits known as *memorialistas*.<sup>27</sup> Contrary to what the closet-converso Ribadeneyra, and after him numerous historians, argued in an attempt to minimize the participation of his fellow converso Jesuits in this movement,<sup>28</sup> it must be admitted that many of its members, if not the majority, were of converso background. In alleged plots against their superior general in Rome, Mercurian, and especially against his successor, Acquaviva, who was accused of anti-Spanish authoritarianism, the *memorialistas* sent secret memorials to

<sup>27</sup> See *DHCJ* 3:2615–6.

<sup>28</sup> See *Mon Rib.* 2:191.

the Spanish court and Inquisition, and the Holy See, asking for the reform of the Jesuit Institute and, especially, for the autonomy of the Spanish Jesuit provinces.<sup>29</sup> Among these *memorialistas* were many of the Jesuits mentioned earlier in this book.

As we shall see below, Benedetto Palmio in his memorial ascribes the leading role in the movement to the converso Dionisio Vázquez, who—as we have mentioned—was a protégé of Francisco de Borja and was deprived of his administrative office in Naples by Borja's successor, Mercurian, and sent away to Spain in 1574. One could argue that Vázquez's active role in the *memorialistas* movement was a sort of revenge for the discriminatory policy of Mercurian and Acquaviva.<sup>30</sup> The Spanish historian Antonio Astrain, whose account of these events certainly needs a less biased revision, assigns responsibility for the separatist agenda of the movement not only to Vázquez but also to the converso Henrique Henríquez, mentioned earlier in this book, and two other Jesuits, Francisco Abreo and Gonzalo González.<sup>31</sup> Little is known about the latter,<sup>32</sup> but the former's Jesuit career must have been the subject of much chatting among his confreres, as we shall see in Ribadeneyra's memorial. Born in 1530 in the town of Fuente Guinaldo near Ciudad Rodrigo, Abreo studied law in Salamanca and subsequently taught there and in Oviedo. Mercurian refused to admit him to the profession of solemn vows, and Acquaviva dismissed him in 1592.<sup>33</sup>

His career, birthplace, and name suggest converso origin,<sup>34</sup> as do those of other *memorialistas*, such as Juan Bautista Carrillo,<sup>35</sup> Diego

---

<sup>29</sup> For the interpretation of this movement through the lens of the crisis of the "partido castellano" and the transformation of the Spanish monarchy, see José Martínez Millán, "La crisis del 'partido castellano' y la transformación de la Monarquía Hispánica," *Cuadernos de Historia Moderna* 2003 (Anejo 2): 15–7.

<sup>30</sup> See *DHCJ* 4:3911.

<sup>31</sup> See Astrain, *Historia*, 3:372. See also AHN, Inquisición, lib. 361, ff. 470<sup>r-v</sup> and lib. 581, ff. 111<sup>v</sup>–112<sup>r</sup>, 114<sup>r</sup>, 116<sup>r-v</sup>, 119<sup>r</sup>–120<sup>v</sup>, 153<sup>r</sup>, 156<sup>v</sup>, 159<sup>v</sup>, 185<sup>r</sup>.

<sup>32</sup> See Astrain, *Historia*, 3:364–70.

<sup>33</sup> See Astrain, *Historia*, 3:364–70, 554–6.

<sup>34</sup> See M.F. García Casar, *Fontes Iudaeorum Regni Castellae*, vol. 6: "El pasado judío de Ciudad Rodrigo" (Salamanca: Universidad Pontificia de Salamanca, 1992).

<sup>35</sup> Juan Bautista Carrillo: priest in 1586; dismissed in 1591. For his gloomy portrayal, see Astrain, *Historia*, 3:521–7. See also AHN, Inquisición, lib. 581, ff. 340<sup>r</sup>, 361<sup>r</sup>, 366<sup>r</sup> and lib. 582, f. 21<sup>v</sup>.

de Santa Cruz,<sup>36</sup> Fernando de Mendoza González,<sup>37</sup> Juan Bautista Pacheco,<sup>38</sup> Gaspar Sánchez,<sup>39</sup> and Gaspar de Valpedrosa.<sup>40</sup> Jewish ancestry is unquestionable, however, in the case of other members of the movement: Jerónimo de Acosta (brother of José), Jerónimo (Romano) de la Higuera,<sup>41</sup> Gaspar López,<sup>42</sup> Manuel López,<sup>43</sup> and Alonso de Polanco (nephew of Juan Alfonso de Polanco: AHN, Inquisición. lib. 581, ff. 53<sup>r</sup>, 245<sup>r</sup>, 295<sup>v</sup>).

<sup>36</sup> Diego de Santa Cruz: \*1518 Granada, SJ 1550 Coimbra; †1594; priest 1543. He was a disciple of Juan de Ávila (see Jurado, "San Juan de Ávila," p. 158).

<sup>37</sup> Fernando de Mendoza González: Born in Calahorra, he was a friend of Juan Bautista Carrillo. Mendoza asked to be dismissed from the Society in 1591, but Acquaviva did not grant his request. Befriended by the Count of Lemos, Fernando Ruiz de Castro, and his wife, Catalina de Zúñiga, he accompanied them to Naples, where Fernando was appointed viceroy. Acquaviva's eventual attempts to dismiss him led to Pope Paul V's solution of appointing Mendoza bishop of Cuzco in Peru (1608), where he eventually died in 1617. Astrain dedicates a long paragraph to a disapproving portrayal of him (see Astrain, *Historia*, 3:652–77).

<sup>38</sup> Juan Bautista Pacheco: \*c. 1550 Uclés (Cuenca, Spain); SJ 1572; †1614 Madrid; priest in 1618; professed in 1590. He was known for his proposal to found *jesuitas descalzos*, characterized by poverty and dedicated to the apostolate of moriscos. Acquaviva put him into prison. Francisco de Borja Medina suggested his Judeo-Christian ancestry, based on his surname and provenience (*DHCJ* 3:2941), but also, his first name was one of the most common among conversos. For Astrain's judgment on his "semi-comic" attempt to found the *descalzos* Jesuits, see his *Historia*, 3:643.

<sup>39</sup> Gaspar Sánchez: He was born in Andalusia. His main ministry was preaching in the provinces of Andalusia and Toledo. He made his final four vows in Seville on 19 November 1570 (*ARSI, Hisp. I*, ff. 132 and 134). The letter from Ignacio del Castillo to Acquaviva on 10 February 1592 would suggest that he wrote a memorial to the Inquisition (see Astrain, *Historia*, 3:380 and 426).

<sup>40</sup> Gaspar de Valpedrosa: On his role in the *memorialistas* movement, see Astrain, *Historia*, 3:430.

<sup>41</sup> Jerónimo (Romano) de la Higuera: \*1538 Lisbon; SJ 1562; †1611 Toledo; priest in 1561; professed in 1590. He was a descendant of the majordomo of Cardinal Mendoza (see Linda Martz, "Converso Families in Fifteenth- and Sixteenth-Century Toledo: The Significance of Lineage," *Sefarad* 48 (1998): 137) and a disciple of Juan de Ávila. He published a number of works on the history and geography of ancient Iberia (see *DHCJ* 2: 1923–4 and Netanyahu, *Toward the Inquisition*, pp. 78–80). On the critical analysis of these works, see a recent study by Mercedes García-Arenal and Fernando Rodríguez Mediano, "Jerónimo Román de la Higuera and the Lead Books of Sacromonte," in Ingram, ed., *Conversos and Moriscos*, pp. 243–68.

<sup>42</sup> Likely he was a brother of the converso *memorialistas*, Manuel López and Enrique Enríquez. He was a disciple of Juan de Ávila.

<sup>43</sup> Manuel López: \*1525 Oporto, SJ 1545; †1603 Álcala; priest 1579. Two of his brothers became Jesuits. One of them was Enrique Enríquez (see above). Their mother's family of Bentalhado was related to the founder of the Jewish community in Amsterdam, whose niece was the mother of Baruch Spinoza (see *DHCJ* 3:2416). Manuel was appointed provincial of Toledo (1568–73) and, as such, participated in General Congregation 3 (see above). For his role in the *memorialistas* movement, see Astrain, *Historia*, 3:378–80.



Other *memorialistas* mentioned by the Spanish historian Astrain were: Francisco Estrada,<sup>44</sup> Alonso Gómez,<sup>45</sup> Juan Landino,<sup>46</sup> Miguel de Medina,<sup>47</sup> Pedro Montano,<sup>48</sup> Juan Osorio,<sup>49</sup> Pedro Palto,<sup>50</sup> Francisco Portocarrero,<sup>51</sup> Pedro Ruiz,<sup>52</sup> José San Julián,<sup>53</sup> Francisco Trujillo,<sup>54</sup> Juan Valles,<sup>55</sup> Rodrigo Vargas,<sup>56</sup> and Miguel Vázquez.<sup>57</sup> Even though, according to Melchor de Valpedrosa's *Diario* of General Congregation 5, virtually all the *memorialistas* were conversos,<sup>58</sup> which can be explained in terms of a sort of sociological bond among conversos as a minority threatened by the dominant Old Christians,<sup>59</sup> the question of whether their participation in the movement gives that movement an exclusively converso character needs a more comprehensive and unprejudiced answer that is worthy of a monograph.<sup>60</sup>

Nonetheless, Benedetto Palmio, the former assistant general to Borja and Mercurian, never doubted that conversos were behind the vindictive *memorialistas* movement. And he enthusiastically grabbed a pen to prove his point.

---

<sup>44</sup> According to Astrain (*Historia*, 3:574), he acted in Toledo in cooperation with Juan de Mariana.

<sup>45</sup> See Astrain, *Historia*, 3:375 and 427.

<sup>46</sup> See Astrain, *Historia*, 3:432.

<sup>47</sup> Born in Baeza; dismissed by José de Acosta (Astrain, *Historia*, 3:500).

<sup>48</sup> See Astrain, *Historia*, 3:432.

<sup>49</sup> See Astrain, *Historia*, 3:426; and *DHCJ*, 3:2616.

<sup>50</sup> See Astrain, *Historia*, 3:432.

<sup>51</sup> He was admitted to the profession on 20 August 1582 (ARSI, *Hisp.* 2, ff. 21–22). See Astrain, *Historia*, 3:428 and 431; and *DHCJ*, 3:2616.

<sup>52</sup> See Astrain, *Historia*, 3:430–1; and *DHCJ*, 3:2616.

<sup>53</sup> See AHN, Clero-Jesuitas, leg. 252, f. 579; Astrain, *Historia*, 3:428 and 431; and *DHCJ*, 3:2616.

<sup>54</sup> See Astrain, *Historia*, 3:432.

<sup>55</sup> See Astrain, *Historia*, 3:429 and 431, and *DHCJ*, 3:2616.

<sup>56</sup> See Astrain, *Historia*, 3:432.

<sup>57</sup> See Astrain, *Historia*, 3:432.

<sup>58</sup> See Astrain, *Historia*, 3:610. Melchor de Valpedrosa was likely the brother of Gaspar, a member of the *memorialistas* movement (see above).

<sup>59</sup> Gregory B. Kaplan, in his *The Evolution of Converso Literature: The Writings of the Converted Jews of Medieval Spain* (Gainesville: University Press of Florida, 2002), p. 4, gave this kind of explanation in the context of fifteenth-century Castile. On conversos as a social group, see Antonio Domínguez Ortiz, *La clase social de los conversos en Castilla en la edad moderna* ([Madrid]: Instituto Balmes de Sociología, Departamento de Historia Social, Consejo Superior de Investigaciones Científicas, 1955), pp. 139–89.

<sup>60</sup> See Medina, “Los precursores de Vieira,” pp. 494–7, where he criticizes Astrain's biased judgment on the movement.

*Benedetto Palmio's converso-phobic memorial*

The internal battle against those Jesuits who had Jewish ancestry that has been described so far is portrayed in a virtually unknown manuscript memorial.<sup>61</sup> This untitled and unsigned text is bound in the codex *Institutum* 106, ff. 92–132, of the Jesuit Archives in Rome (ARSI), adjacent to another manuscript by the same hand, *De gubernatione Societatis*. The document is undated, but some internal information allows us to establish the approximate time of its writing. The *terminus ante quem* of the text is likely the year 1589, when Dionisio Vázquez, who is referred to in the document as being still alive ([8]), died. The *terminus post quem* of the document is probably the year 1584, when Pope Gregory XIII inaugurated a grand new edifice for the Roman College (hence its future name of *Gregorian University*), an event to which the text seems to allude ([32]). Additionally, the overt criticism of Mercurian (whom Palmio conspired to replace)<sup>62</sup> in the past tense ([31]) might suggest that the memorial would have been addressed to Acquaviva after the latter's election as superior general in 1581, but before his decision to bar converso candidates from admission into the Society in 1590 (still before General Congregation 5).<sup>63</sup> The text resembles three other “memorials on union” written at Acquaviva's request by his assistants general Lorenzo Maggio, Paul Hoffaeus, and Manuel Rodrigues in the 1580s. In its tenor, the memorial also bears a resemblance to the latter's *De hominibus baptizatis ex progenie Judaeorum*, written to Acquaviva in 1584. In it, Rodrigues alludes to Palmio's memorial against *confesos* that he would write to Acquaviva from Venice 12 March 1588.<sup>64</sup> Rodrigues's description of its content

---

<sup>61</sup> Memorial is a literary genre and means here a written statement of facts presented in conjunction with a petition to a royal or religious authority. Hence *memorialistas*—a group of Jesuits who sent such documents to the Spanish king and Inquisition, and to the pope, which was discussed above.

<sup>62</sup> See Fois, “Everard Mercurian,” p. 28.

<sup>63</sup> Some chronological inconsistencies must be noticed, however. In the same paragraph ([21]), Palmio states that Vázquez *is* still the vice-provincial of Naples and that he *was* fired from that office.

<sup>64</sup> “Duodecimo Martii anni 1588 Venetiis scripsit Pater Benedictus Palmius ad patrem generalem nostrum Claudium Aquavivam, quibus ait, post mortem Laynez cum esset vicarius generalis pater Franciscus Borja, quosdam patre Hispanos zelosos misisse ad summum pontificem Pium IV multa ac magna memorialia contra confesos, quibusque dicebat patrem Borja esse eorum fautorem atque caput, continebaturque in eis longus catalogus confessorum Hispanorum, inter quos numerabantur fere omnes patres Hispani, qui tunc Romae gubernabant. Petebant hi zelosi a summo pontifice ut

strongly suggests that he alludes to the same memorial that is the subject of our text. It is possible that it also echoes a pro-converso memorial composed by Antonio Possevino a decade earlier.<sup>65</sup>

A sixteenth-century amanuensis wrote it in a neat hand, but it has corrections and interpolations by another hand. A comparison of the document's content and the author's handwriting with other manuscripts of his acknowledged authorship (especially *Vitae* 164, ff. 118–83)<sup>66</sup> unambiguously reveals that those corrections and interpolations were made by the same hand. Therefore, our manuscript has the value of an autograph. An additional piece of information about its author can be gathered from the text itself, for he often uses the first person singular. The author states that he was one of the four consultants of Ignatius [of Loyola] ([11]);<sup>67</sup> that he came back to Rome from Milan, where he was summoned by Cardinal Borromeo<sup>68</sup> during his first year of office of [general] assistant ([12]); that in this office Everard Mercurian was his colleague ([13]); that he was [superior] provincial of Lombardy ([18]); that he visited the pope in Frascati with [Peter] Canisius<sup>69</sup> after the death of Cardinal [Otto Truchsess von Waldburg]

---

provideret, ne ob tanta confessorum multitudinem succederet aliquod grave malum Societati, quod una iam erat divisio quae cernebatur inter patrem Araoz, impugnante confessos, et patre Borja, eis favente. Ex qua divisione timebantur gravia scandala. [...] auctores memorialium praetenderent pacem in Societate nihilominus pendebant contra partem confessorum. Pontifex volens remedium adhibere tradidit memorialia Cardinali Borromeo, qui agente cum ipso Benedicto Palmio, cuius conscientia multa considerabat, et rogante huius sententiam petivit ab eo Palmius, ut sua conscientia... se daturum operam, ut remedium adhiberetur" (ARSI, *Inst.* 186e, ff. 340<sup>v</sup>–341<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>65</sup> Cohen ("Nation, Lineage, and Jesuit Unity," pp. 543–61) convincingly argues, following Astrain (*Historia* 3:7–9) and Donnelly ("Antonio Possevino," p. 5), that Possevino's memorial was criticizing Palmio's anti-converso attitude.

<sup>66</sup> See the description of the manuscript in *Fontes narr.* 3:152–5.

<sup>67</sup> See Chapter 32 of Palmio's autobiography in ARSI, *Vitae* 164.

<sup>68</sup> Carlo Borromeo (1538–84) was a nephew of Pope Pius IV, who appointed him cardinal and secretary of state in Rome. He made the Spiritual Exercises with the Jesuit Juan Bautista de Ribera, who subsequently became his spiritual director. After his sacerdotal and episcopal ordination in 1563, he moved to his archdiocese of Milan, where the following year he founded a seminary whose direction was given to the Society. In 1565 he offered to the Jesuits the college and church of San Fedele, where the first community moved in 1567. Borromeo also called the Jesuits (1572) to teach in a newly established university at Brera (see *DHCJ* 1:496–7; and Flavio RURALE, "Carlo Borromeo and the Society of Jesus in the 1570s," in McCoog, ed., *Mercurian Project*, pp. 559–605).

<sup>69</sup> Peter Canisius \*1521 Nijmegen (the Netherlands); SJ 1543; †1597 Fribourg (Switzerland); priest in 1546; professed in 1549. He participated in the Council of Trent and was among the first Jesuits (with Palmio and Nadal) to open the school

of Augsburg<sup>70</sup> ([28]); and that he was reappointed assistant general by General Congregations 2 and 3 ([28]).

All this information unquestionably points to Benedetto Palmio (or di Palmia) as the memorial's author. He was born on 11 July 1523 to the Parmesan couple Antonio di Palmia and Chiara Botini,<sup>71</sup> who gave him a Christian and classical education that he continued at the University of Bologna (c. 1540–6).<sup>72</sup> Under the sway of the converso Diego Laínez<sup>73</sup> and Juan Jerónimo Doménech,<sup>74</sup> Benedetto joined the Society of Jesus in 1546. After twenty months of formation with Loyola in Rome,<sup>75</sup> he was sent to Messina with Nadal and Canisius, among others, to open the first Jesuit school, where he taught rhetoric.<sup>76</sup> During his five-year sojourn in Sicily, Palmio was also intensely engaged in preaching. In 1553 he was called to Rome, where he was ordained priest and for four years studied philosophy and theology at the Roman College. A year after his final vows in Padua (1559), where he then supervised its first Jesuit college, Laínez appointed him the first superior provincial of Lombardy (1559–65). Upon the request of Cardinal Borromeo, Palmio resided in Milan after 1563. Subsequently, he was elected assistant general for Italy under Borja (1565–72) and Mercurian (1573–80). Recognized for his exquisite talent in preaching,<sup>77</sup> he was appointed by Pope Pius V as the first Jesuit *concionator apostolicus*. During General Congregation 4 (1581),

---

in Messina (1548). In 1556 he was appointed the first superior provincial of Upper Germany. He was beatified in 1864 and canonized in 1925 (see *DHCJ* 1:633–5).

<sup>70</sup> Otto Truchsess von Waldburg (1543–73) was a cardinal-bishop of Augsburg, but since 1568 he lived in Rome. He founded the university and seminary in Dillingen, which he subsequently gave to the Jesuits (1564).

<sup>71</sup> Palmio's father died prematurely at the age of forty-five. His mother had been born to the noble Parmesan, Pier Antonio Botini, and the Milanese Ippolita Giambacorti. Benedetto had five brothers; an older one, Francesco, also entered the Society (see Chapters 1–2 of Palmio's autobiography in ARSI, *Vitae* 164; and Pietro Tacchi Venturi, S.J., *Storia della Compagnia di Gesù In Italia*, 2 vols. in 4 parts (Rome: La Civiltà Cattolica, 1950), vol. 2/1, p. 363).

<sup>72</sup> See Chapters 4 and 9 of Palmio's autobiography in ARSI, *Vitae* 164. There he also studied law and philosophy.

<sup>73</sup> See Chapters 3–4 of Palmio's autobiography in ARSI, *Vitae* 164: Laínez visited Parma with his confrere Pierre Favre in 1540; the Palmios hosted them.

<sup>74</sup> See the biographical note on him in Chapter Two.

<sup>75</sup> For the detailed description of this period, see Chapters 11–19 of Palmio's autobiography published in *Fontes narr.* 3:155–70.

<sup>76</sup> See Chapter 21 of Palmio's autobiography in ARSI, *Vitae* 164.

<sup>77</sup> It was noted by Nadal (*Mon Nadal* 1:756–7) and Polanco (*Chron.* 1:369 and 2:220–1, 230).

Cardinal Borromeo unsuccessfully pressured Pope Gregory XIII<sup>78</sup> to suggest that his protégé be a candidate for the position of superior general of the Society. Consequently, after sixteen years, Palmio abandoned the Jesuit headquarters and moved to Ferrara, where he wrote both his autobiography and the present memorial. He died there on 14 November 1598.<sup>79</sup>

Palmio composed his memorial in seven unequal parts, corresponding to the number of causes of the above-mentioned division in the Society of Jesus. “The first cause and origin of our evils has proceeded from the multitude and insolence of Spanish neophytes, and from the excessive credit and favor given them by Father Francisco de Borja” ([12]). In this part ([1]–[12]), Palmio attempts to offer historical background for the presence of neophytes in the Society of Jesus, a presence which he describes as a *pestilence* and *diabolical zizania*:<sup>80</sup> New Christians originated in Spain after the conversion of Jews following the edicts of the Catholic Monarchs<sup>81</sup> and were fought by the Inquisition, the Church of Toledo, and religious orders, for “where a New Christian was found, it was impossible to live in peace” ([3]). Due to the infamous character of the New Christians, Loyola had the Jesuit *Constitutions* require that a candidate be asked whether he was a New Christian, so that a few of them could be accepted and those accepted would be well known. This is why major Jesuit tasks in Iberia were given to the Old Christians Francis Xavier, Simão Rodrigues [de Azevedo], Nicolás de Bobadilla, and Antonio de Araoz ([4]).

The present troubles the Society suffers could have been avoided if this initial restriction on New Christians had been perpetuated. However, because “those who governed in Rome were almost all neo-

---

<sup>78</sup> Pope Gregory XIII (1502–85), born Ugo Boncompagni, was pope from 1572 to 1585. Much on his role in the Society’s affairs below.

<sup>79</sup> See *DHCJ* 3:2962–3 and 2:1615. For the biography of Palmio, see also Tacchi Venturi, *Storia della Compagnia*, vol. 2/1, pp. 253–5 and vol. 2/2, pp. 41–5; Scaduto, *Governo*, pp. 313–25, 513–21; *Fontes narr.* 3:152–74; and Mario Scaduto, “Palmio Benoit,” in *Dictionnaire de Spiritualité* (Paris: Beauchesne, 1932–95), 12:142–4.

<sup>80</sup> Ironically, “those who sowed zizania” is a frequent expression in pro-converso texts, among them the bull *Humani generis inimicus* by Nicholas V; see also the treatise *Contra algunos zizañadores de la nación de los convertidos del pueblo Israel* by Lope de Barrientos, edited by A. Getino in “Vida y obras de Fr. Lope de Barrientos,” *Annales Salmantinos* (1927): 181–204.

<sup>81</sup> The wave of Jewish conversions actually began, as we have seen in Chapter One, a century earlier in the wake of *pogroms* in 1391, or even earlier.

phytes” ([5]), they were able to conspire against the superior provincial of Spain, Araoz, and were able to make sure that their supporter, Francisco de Borja, was appointed commissary for Spain [so that the latter would supervise the former]. Borja “opened the doors so wide to this sort of people [New Christians] that almost no other people were being admitted in Spain and the Old Christians, realizing this situation, were escaping from the Society” ([5]). As a result, the Spanish king, Philip II, labeled the Society “a synagogue of Hebrews” ([5]).<sup>82</sup>

New Christian dominance was opposed by Loyola’s successor, Diego Laínez, who “was an Israelite indeed—as he admitted publicly—but in whom there was no deceit” ([6]). Yet the conversos were able to pursue their political agenda, due to Laínez’s numerous travels outside Rome and his premature death ([6]). Another reason why the New Christians’ wickedness (in Palmio’s view) thrived under Borja’s generalate was Borja’s exposure to converso monastic influences before his entrance into the Society,<sup>83</sup> which altered the spirit of Ignatius, whose

---

<sup>82</sup> Other sources for this information are the anti-Semitic and anti-converso texts of the Portuguese assistant general, Manuel Rodrigues, entitled *De baptizatis ex progenie Iudaeorum*, or *De gente bizcayna* (ARSI, *Inst.* 186e, f. 338): “Replena est Hispania Iuda[e]is, ut feratur Regem Philippum dixisse Societatem esse synagogam Iudaeorum”; Lorenzo Maggio’s *De unione animorum in Societate: restauranda e servanda* (ARSI *Inst.* 178, f. 155”); and an anonymous petition to bar the conversos (ARSI, *Inst.* 184 II, f. 356): “Quod ad bonum nomen attinet, Romae adest, qui asserit Societatem in Hispania appellari *Marranada* per congregationem Marranorum, sic enim appellant Iud[a]eos. Adest etiam in Romana provincia [this is Pedro de Mouria, brother of Cristóbal, a high royal official] quem Rex Catholicus reprehendit quid ingressus fuerit Societatem dicens *Entrastes en una sinagoga (o relegión) de Judíos*, hoc est ingressus es in synagoga Iudaeorum.” Archbishop Silíceo expressed a similar fear, that his church would be dubbed “second Synagogue,” in his letter to the pope: “Si hunc seminum nostra Ecclesia susciperet in Canonicum, dabitur omnibus causa quamlibet turpibus hominibus obtinendi huiusmodi ecclesiasticas sedes, cui rei V.S. providerit brevi futura erit Ecclesia Toletana (quae princeps est in Hispania) altera Synagoga” (see Sicroff, *Estatutos*, p. 131). On the relationship between Phillip II and conversos, see Antonio Domínguez Ortiz, *Los judeoconversos en la España moderna* (Madrid: Mapfre, 1993), p. 61: “Parece evidente que los reyes de España nunca sintieron el problema converso de la forma primaria y elemental que se advierte en la mayoría de los españoles de su tiempo. Desconfiaban en ellos como grupo, pero apreciaban las cualidades de muchos y se sirvieron de ellos sin los remilgos ridículos cada vez más extendidos. Lo hizo Fernando el Católico, y también Felipe II sabía hacer excepciones a la ley de la limpieza.”

<sup>83</sup> No doubt Borja was influenced by Spanish monasticism—before entering the Society he was in close contact with Salvador de Horta, Pedro de Alcántara, and Juan de Tejada who was his companion in Gandía. The latter’s influence is mentioned by Palmio in his autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, ff. 33sq). Borja did his spiritual exercises with Oviedo, who was renowned in the Society for his monastic inclinations

purity Borja's assistants general (Palmio above all) were committed to preserve. These influences were also represented, in Palmio's view, by four New Christians who held influential posts in Rome: Dionisio Vázquez, Cristóbal Rodríguez, Alonso Ruiz, and Diego de Ledesma. The latter devised the plan of dividing the Roman College, a plan that Palmio vigorously opposed as assistant general for Italy ([7]–[8]).

The spirit of Borja stood in contrast to that of Araoz, who in Palmio's eyes was "a man of sound judgment and singular virtue" ([4]). Borja's spirit produced a division between New and Old Christians in Spain that affected the Society in Rome, where "in previous times not even a word of such a division had been heard and one lived with a simplicity, union, and peace comparable only to that described in the *Acts of the Apostles*" ([9]). The division of the Society into two parties led by Araoz and Borja was so profound that before General Congregation 1 (convoked after Loyola's death), a booklet that contained the description of this conflict and a long list of New Christian Jesuits was presented to Pope Paul IV. The pope, continued Palmio, appointed Cardinal Borromeo to investigate the crisis ([9]). The cardinal consulted Palmio, whom he "trusted very much" ([10]), and was advised to let the Jesuit congregation, which was about to convene, deal with the problem on its own. But to Palmio's dismay, the crisis remained unresolved, for under the newly elected Superior General Borja "the number and the authority of neophytes increased" ([10]). Things went from bad to worse and produced new scandals during the next congregation, General Congregation 3 ([10]).

The problem of New Christians went back, Palmio pointed out, to the very beginning of the Society. He noticed it, being Ignatius's advisor, and talked about some "troubled and tempted" New Christian Jesuits

---

(see Manuel Ruiz Jurado, "Un caso de profetismo reformista en la Compañía de Jesús. Gandía 1547–1549," *AHSI* 43 (1974): 217–66). Borja also counseled Teresa of Ávila in subjects of prayer methods. To General Congregation 1 (which he could not attend) Borja sent a memorial proposing to extend the time allowed for prayer and to impose as mandatory certain penances in the Society. This memorial did not arrive on time, but the newly elected Superior General Laínez refused Borja's suggestions. Interestingly enough, Palmio accused for the same monastic tendencies the converso novice master in Rome, Alonso Ruiz, who was appointed by Borja. The most famous converso Jesuit representing monastic tendencies in the period of our consideration was Juan Bautista Pacheco (see above). These tendencies were contrasted by a group of French Jesuits known as *Confrères de la Voie Candide* (see Fois, "Everard Mercurian," p. 18).



to Laínez, whom he considered a saint, but—as General Congregation 1 proved—nobody wanted to listen ([11]). This was what led Nicolás Bobadilla to dismantle the New Christian “triumvirate” in Rome,<sup>84</sup> for many resented their rule, which they regarded as despotic—“they proceeded not as fathers but as masters” ([12]).<sup>85</sup> This is why, when he came back to Rome from Milan during his first year of assistency [1565–6], Palmio found there only quarrels and complaints—“our primeval peace and union, for which the Society had been admired, was now gone” ([12]).

Other causes of the troubles produced by New Christians were, according to Palmio, strictly related to the first: the second and the third “roots” regard “asperity and too much inequality in the Jesuit government,” for “New Christians persuaded themselves that the Society couldn’t be governed except by Spaniards” ([13]).<sup>86</sup> In this section Palmio accuses the Jesuit central government, which was in New Christian hands, of preferring to promote Spaniards [especially those of Jewish origin] to the profession of four vows, and consequently to high administrative offices.<sup>87</sup> Palmio complains that because two

---

<sup>84</sup> To my knowledge, Palmio’s memorial is the only document that interprets the crisis after Loyola’s death in terms of the converso conflict. On different interpretations of Bobadilla’s discontent, see *DHCJ* 1:464–5; Scaduto, *Governo*, pp. 45–7. Ironically enough, Araoz—who is portrayed in Palmio’s memorial as the head of the anti-converso party—claimed that Bobadilla was of Jewish origins (see Miguel Mir, *Historia interna documentada de la Compañía de Jesús*, vol. 1, p. 332).

<sup>85</sup> Interestingly, in Bobadilla’s memorial to Pope Paul IV it was Loyola who was accused of authoritarianism: “Ignatio [...] era Padre et padrone assoluto et faceva quanto voleva” (*Mon Nadal* 4:733). Note that this accusation is similar to what Palmio wrote about the role of conversos during General Congregation 3: “[Polanco] si vedeva ritirarsi con Madrid, Natale, Ribadenera et altri Spagnuoli, il che ci dava non poco da pensare” ([25]). It is uncertain, thus, about which triumvirate Palmio is speaking here: Polanco-Nadal-Madrid or Polanco-Nadal-Laínez? Given that Palmio writes on Laínez in this document in a very positive way, it is more likely that he had in his mind the former troika. At any rate, Polanco and Nadal are the main actors of these events. Interestingly enough, Palmio does not reveal Nadal’s converso identity directly in his memorial, but he states about the triumvirate that “non si sapendo se non da pochi che erano neofiti.”

<sup>86</sup> This accusation suggests why Palmio could ally against the conversos with some Portuguese Jesuits during General Congregation 3 (see below [28]).

<sup>87</sup> Miriam Bodian, in her *Hebrews of the Portuguese Nation. Conversos and Community in Early Modern Amsterdam* (Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1997), described how the converso community of Amsterdam that converted back to Judaism was proud of its Spanish *grandeza* (p. 86), in spite of the persecutions inflicted on their community in Spain (see the same argument in Gerber, *The Jews of Spain*, pp. xiv–v). Perhaps the same kind of Spanish national pride assimilated

assistants general, Mercurian and himself (two others, Nadal and Miró, were Spaniards), were often out of Rome, Borja surrounded himself in the curia with members of the New Christian lobby, which had more authority than his assistants. Among these lobbyists were [Juan Alfonso de] Polanco, [Cristóbal Sánchez de] Madrid, Dionisio Vázquez, Alonso Ruiz, [Cristóbal] Rodríguez, [Hernando de] Solier, [Pedro de] Ribadeneyra, and also [Diego de] Ledesma, [Pedro de] Parra, and [Manuel de] Sá. According to Palmio, this group—led by Polanco, Vázquez, and Madrid—pushed to appoint Spaniards even in non-Spanish provinces, such as Portugal, Germany, France, Flanders, and Italy ([13]).

The author provides the details of how Spaniards sought to dominate in this way in Lombardy, where Palmio had been the superior provincial. He accuses Polanco of taking advantage of Borja's illness to promote Ribadeneyra to the office of provincial there and recounts how he was able successfully to convince Borja that the Italian Leonetto Chiavone<sup>88</sup> was a better candidate for that position ([14]). Given that only the Jesuits who were admitted to the profession of four vows had an active voice during general congregations and could hold governmental positions, Palmio argues that Spaniards were particularly eager to be admitted to that profession by meeting its main requirement—the study of theology for four or at least three years ([15]). The author feels offended above all by the admission to this profession of New Christian candidates who were less respected than some Italian

---

by the Jesuit conversos fueled their pro-Spanish policy. Also Alcalá indicated “an inextinguishable Hispanism” as one of the five reasons why a Jew might convert to Christianity (see Renée Levine Melammed, *A Question of Identity. Iberian Conversos in Historical Perspective* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2004), p. 16). Yet, we have to keep in mind that the preference for Spaniards was an obvious feature of the generalates before Borja. Loyola admitted to the profession of four vows thirty-eight Jesuits (minus the first companions), fourteen of whom were Spanish; only eight of whom were Portuguese; nine Flemish, four Italian, and three French. Under Laínez, out of seventy-four admitted thirty-two were Spanish, and only nineteen were Portuguese, eight Italian, six German, five French, and three Flemish (see *Mon Nadal* 2:502 and Scaduto, *Azione*, p. 802).

<sup>88</sup> Leonetto Chiavone: \*1525 Vicenza; SJ 1559; †1572 Milan; priest before 1559; professed in 1568. He was appointed superior provincial of Lombardy in 1570 and died two years later (see Scaduto, *Catalogo*, p. 31). His entrance into the Society was strongly opposed by his father, who dubbed the Jesuits as the Society “this new Society founded by the Jews and marranos of Spain” (ARSI, *Ital.* 116, f. 190).

Jesuits. Such was the case of Luis Mendoza,<sup>89</sup> Gaspar Hernández, and [Antonio] Trancoso<sup>90</sup> vis-à-vis Fulvio Cardulo<sup>91</sup> ([16]).

According to Palmio, the despotic rule of Spaniards was the reason for issuing a document during General Congregation 3 that stipulated that the future superior general be able to govern with a paternal and not a despotic spirit ([17]).<sup>92</sup> To further support his argument, Palmio quotes several examples of the “bad behavior” of Spanish (or New Christian) Jesuits in Italy: the story of Juan Gurrea, whom Palmio as provincial did not allow to “stay out until six or seven o’clock in the morning, going to parties and watching cavaliers and ladies play” ([18]) as he was accustomed to doing, and that of Ribadeneyra’s relative, Juan Hurtado,<sup>93</sup> or Rodrigo Mena, both of whom left the Society in the wake of many scandals. In this paragraph, Palmio depicts himself as a superior who treated his subjects equally, since, as he wrote, the Italians who “did not want to be corrected and accept paternal reprimands” were also dismissed ([18]).

The major source of scandals was Palmio’s main target, Dionisio Vázquez, who—as rector of the Roman College—tried to imprison two Jesuit students, Camillo Carga, a papal prelate’s brother,<sup>94</sup> and a certain

---

<sup>89</sup> Luis Mendoza: \*1533 Almazán (as Laínez); SJ 1554; †1595 Madrid; priest in 1559; professed 25 March 1568 (see Scaduto, *Catalogo*, p. 97; and Astrain, *Historia*, 3:629, 637–8). He might be Diego Laínez’s nephew—Diego’s sister, María Coronel, who married Juan Hurtado de Mendoza, had two sons who entered the Society, but their names are obscure.

<sup>90</sup> Antonio Trancoso: \*1534 Moncon (Braga, Portugal); SJ 1550; priest in 1564. He was dismissed in 1568 in Barcelona (see Scaduto, *Catalogo*, p. 147). Contrary to what Palmio may have thought, he was a Portuguese and not Spanish converso.

<sup>91</sup> Fulvio Cardulo: \*1529 Narni (Terni, Italy); SJ 1546; †1591 Rome; priest in 1555; professed in 1566. For almost his entire Jesuit life he was a professor of rhetoric at the Roman College, where he promoted the reading of Terence and Erasmus. As a renowned Latinist, he helped Polanco correct the latter’s rendition of the Jesuit *Constitutions* into Latin. Polanco described his talents as court orator in a letter from 1556 (*Mon Ign.* 12:205–12). Indeed, Cardulo was often called upon by popes to deliver orations in the Sistine Chapel. He also left a number of unedited works on rhetoric (see Scaduto, *Azione*, pp. 295–6). He pronounced his three vows two years before Luis Mendoza (see above). See *DHJ* 1:658; Scaduto, *Governo*, pp. 107 and 186; and Scaduto, *Catalogo*, p. 27.

<sup>92</sup> It was rather a questionnaire that was given to the electors in order to discern who was most apt for the office of superior general: “Is one to believe that [...] will govern the Society in a paternal manner, and not in tyrannical one, to use the words of Reverend Father Laínez, of holy memory, so that subjects have easy access to him and that they would happily in the Lord wish to open their hearts to him in confidence” (Padberg, *For Matters of Greater Moment*, p. 136).

<sup>93</sup> There is little known about him.

<sup>94</sup> Camillo Carga: \*S. Daniele del Friuli; SJ 1564. He was dismissed in 1568 in Rome,

Portuguese named Roboredo ([20]–[21]). Palmio describes Vázquez as a “New Christian of ugly appearance, and more importantly, full of duplicity and deceit” ([20]). When asked by Borja why he disliked Vázquez, Palmio replied plainly that he was ambitious, “his face is so ugly that he seems to be a Moor, and he has this fearful leer when you look in his eyes” ([20]).<sup>95</sup> According to Palmio, Borja, in spite of being a very religious and virtuous man, gave Vázquez excessive credit and kept promoting him: removed from Rome, he was appointed as vice-provincial in Naples ([21]).

Palmio, however, wanted to make clear that he made an unambiguous distinction between good Spaniards (Old Christians) and Spanish neophytes: the former “know very well that we love them from the bottom of our heart” ([22]). They came to realize on their own, during General Congregations 2 and 3, that “all their and our evils proceeded from neophytes and especially from those who governed in Rome [...]. The neophytes want to dominate everywhere and this is why the Society is agitated by the tempest of discords and acrimonies” ([22]).

The inequality of nations, continues Palmio, was especially evident during General Congregation 3: out of forty-seven electors, twenty-eight were Spaniards. A few weeks before the congregation, Polanco informed the pope that “the only candidate apt to become general could be chosen among Spaniards” ([23]). The pope, advised by some cardinals and the Iberian monarch, expressed his intention to impede the election of any Spanish candidate to generalate ([23]). But some cardinals (one of them consulted Palmio) wanted to investigate further into the proceedings of the congregation and asked the pope to set up for this purpose a committee of two cardinals ([24]). Having gathered from them the information, continues Palmio, the pope summoned Polanco and asked him to make sure that no Spanish candidate be elected general.<sup>96</sup> Polanco’s response did not satisfy the pontiff. As a result, he was instructed by Cardinal Farnese to obey and to not

---

a fact that Palmio omits here. His brother, Giovanni, was a prelate in Pius IV’s and Gregory XIII’s office (*segreteria*). See Scaduto, *Governo*, p. 492; and Scaduto, *Francesco Borgia*, Index.

<sup>95</sup> This portrayal of the converso Vázquez with a dark skin evokes the description of Shylock by Salerio in Shakespeare’s *The Merchant of Venice* (see Adelman, *Blood Relations*, pp. 84–5) and represents a diffused iconography of Jews in the period.

<sup>96</sup> According to Fois, the pope suggested during that audience the name of Mercurian for the new general (see Fois, “Everard Mercurian,” p. 21).

make too many replies. Even then Polanco remained agitated, but he did not talk about the incident to other assistants general. Instead, relates Palmio, he was seen talking to Madrid, Nadal, Ribadeneyra, and other Spaniards. That aroused in Palmio additional suspicions about Polanco. In order to confirm Polanco's conspiracy, Palmio lists a number of compromising episodes ([25]).

Because of the death of the Cardinal of Augusta,<sup>97</sup> Palmio (together with Canisius) happened to be received by the pope in his residence in Frascati. Throughout the audience, the pope interrogated Palmio about the general congregation that was planned. When he was told about the dominance of Spaniards, the pope put his hand on Palmio's shoulder and said, "It is unnecessary that one nation prevail over another" ([26]). Palmio gave Polanco information about this audience with the pope, to which the latter reacted with embarrassment. After Polanco and others went to the pope to ask his blessing for the congregation, the pope affirmed that Polanco wanted to become a general. Once again Palmio compiles a list of episodes that would prove it, among them the accusation that Polanco forced Borja, who was dying, to continue his return trip to Rome, despite his physical state ([27]).<sup>98</sup>

In the next paragraph ([27]), Palmio returns to the structure of the seven causes with which he began this memorial. The fourth cause of troubles that affected the Society was, he claims, the delegation of the Portuguese fathers who presented to the pope letters from the kings Sebastian and Philip, and the Cardinal Infant Henry, who strongly insisted that no New Christian candidate become the general of the Society, knowing that there was a risk that Polanco could be elected. This is why the pope sent the Cardinal of Como to the congregation with the order that no Spanish candidate be elected general.

Before narrating what he labeled the "success" of General Congregation 3, Palmio provides information about its preliminary events ([28]), focusing again on Polanco, who undermined the order of the pope conveyed by Cardinal of Como by asking the congregation whether they had to obey. Polanco sent a delegation to the pope to ask to be free in the election. Among the chosen electors were Leão

---

<sup>97</sup> Otto Truchsess von Waldburg (see above).

<sup>98</sup> This accusation, which was also suggested by the Portuguese assistant general, Manuel Rodrigues, in his *De hominibus baptizatis ex progenie Jud[a]eorum* (ARSI, *Inst.* 184/II, f. 365) seems groundless, as we have seen in Chapter Two.

Henriques, who brought the aforementioned letters from Portugal.<sup>99</sup> The pope, continues Palmio, acceded to the request, but only on condition that, if a Spanish candidate was elected, he would be informed before the candidate's confirmation, for "to be honest, his intention and that of the kings and the congregation was not to prevent the election of a Spanish candidate, but to prevent the generalate from ending up in hands of a New Christian" ([28]). The day after, the congregation elected the Walloon Everard Mercurian, who had already been assistant general under Borja. Additionally, four assistants general were elected, among them Palmio.

Palmio attributes the fifth cause of the Society's troubles to Polanco's claim that the election of Mercurian was orchestrated ([29]). Furthermore, the New Christians promoted a decree that prohibited any future exclusion of a New Christian candidate from the generalate.<sup>100</sup> The Portuguese lobby produced an opposing decree, which would exclude any New Christian from becoming superior general. The New Christian party, continues Palmio, conspired with the help of a cardinal to put pressure on the pope to approve their plan. Moreover, they complained that the elections of Mercurian and of the assistant general for Portugal were suspicious. To inquire into these allegations, Mercurian set up a five-member committee.<sup>101</sup> The committee's investigation confirmed the legitimacy of the elections. The Congregation consequently asked Mercurian to accept neither decree, so that "peace and union be maintained" ([29]). In his failure to obtain the aforementioned decree, Palmio sees the cause of the New Christians' subsequent opposition to Rome, seeking, with the help of the Spanish king, "the

---

<sup>99</sup> Along with Leão Henriques there were Paul Hoffaeus, Lorenzo Maggio, Oliver Mannaerts, and Peter Canisius, but not Palmio.

<sup>100</sup> In his autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, f. 90<sup>r</sup>), Palmio argued that to promote this decree would be to "canonizzare i nuovi Cristiani." From another paragraph (f. 98) it looks like this decree was suggested by Salmerón: "il Padre Salmerón in camera mi fece grande istanza che subito io facessi un decreto per il quale si determinasse che *in posterum* non si potesse ragionare de genere et che si facesse scomunicare a chi facesse il contrario et che subito l'altro giorno lo pubblicasse in congregazione sotto l'autorità di Sua Santità." Palmio opposed the decree, because in his view it was against the pope's mind. This account fills the gap in the Congregation's minutes. Only Sacchini's *Historiae Societatis Iesu* (written a half-century after General Congregation 3) narrated the discussion on the two anti- and pro-converso bills (see Padberg, "The Third General Congregation," p. 56).

<sup>101</sup> Fois lists only four names: Salmerón, Francesco Adorno, Claude Matthieu, and Miguel de Torres (see Fois, "Everard Mercurian," p. 24).





Source: Alfred Hamy, *Galerie Illustrée de la Compagnie de Jésus* (Paris, 1893), #15. Courtesy of John J. Burns Library at Boston College.

Figure 13. Alfonso Salmerón (1515–85), an influential opponent of the converso discrimination

Alfonso Salmerón from Olías (Toledo) was a close friend of Laínez from adolescence, with whom he studied in Sigüenza, Alcalá, and Paris and participated in the Council of Trent. According to Ribadeneyra, Salmerón would have written against the discrimination of conversos, but no such text has been found. He unsuccessfully suggested that Loyola remove from the Jesuit *Constitutions* the question about the converso background of the Jesuit candidates. He also opposed the anti-converso lobbying during General Congregation 3.



separation of Spain from the General's obedience." The "main author of this evil enterprise" was Dionisio Vázquez ([30]).

Palmio assigns the penultimate and sixth cause of the Society's troubles to a "great misdeed" of Mercurian, which included, first, his defense of the insolence of Giulio Mazarino<sup>102</sup> towards Cardinal Borromeo; and second, his persecution of two Jesuit fathers who complained to the pope about his demeanor. These acts left Mercurian unable to react against the memorials that were written against him and the Society to the king of Spain ([31]). The final and seventh cause "where our evils were born" was, in Palmio's view, the wrong way in which the Roman College was subsidized ([30]–[31]).

The unbalanced structure of the memorial, in which five of the seven reasons for the Society's problems are attributed to conversos, clearly reveals Palmio's intent to ridicule the converso Jesuits in the eyes of Superior General Acquaviva and to blame them for many of the troubles the Society was experiencing at that time. In blaming the conversos, Palmio employs a brilliantly biased language. New Christians, who to Palmio are still Jews,<sup>103</sup> are overly ambitious, insolent, Janus-faced, pretentious, despotic, astute, terrible, greedy for power, and infamous. Some of these features can be seen, according to Palmio, in their ugly physiognomy, as is the case with Dionisio Vázquez ([20]). To describe the converso group, the author often uses the disparaging expression, "this sort of people" ([3]–[5], [8]). Their presence in the Society is a story of conspiracy and deceit. For Palmio, the only good Spaniards are Old Christians ([22]). Employing the rhetoric of *aurea prima aetas*—the Ovidian nostalgia for better old times—Palmio accuses the conversos of banishing the simplicity, peace, and union that characterized early Jesuit life in Italy. To give authority to his argument, Palmio often quotes biblical passages, mostly from the New

---

<sup>102</sup> Giulio Mazarino: \*1544 Palermo (Italy); SJ 1559; †1621 Bologna; priest in 1572; professed in 1578. Borromeo invited him to preach in the cathedral of Milan (1579), where he scandalized some with his harsh language and criticism of the cardinal that sparked a painful conflict between the two, to which Palmio refers here (see *DHCJ* 3:2589). For the documentation of his process, see ARSI, *Hist. Soc.* 164; and Rurale, "Carlo Borromeo," pp. 559–605.

<sup>103</sup> It can be deduced from Palmio's description of the converso superior general, Laínez: "Erat enim vir iste ex filiis Abraam non secundum carnem, sed secundum spiritum et verus Israelita in quo dolus non erat" ([6]). And the family of Laínez had been Christian already for four generations.

Testament Epistles of Paul, which is paradoxical, given that the author of these letters was the most influential Jewish convert in the history of Christianity. Ironically enough, Palmio quotes those parts of Paul's epistolary that declare the unimportance of ethnicity in Christian communities (Galatians 3:28 and Colossians 3:11).

Arguably, the suggestion that Palmio desires to transmit to Acquaviva is as follows: if the conversos are the root of the major troubles that the Society is currently experiencing, the Jesuits must follow the example of the Church of Toledo, the Inquisition, and older religious orders in Spain ([3]) and must introduce purity-of-blood legislation.

Superior General Claudio Acquaviva would respond eagerly to Palmio's suggestion, instigated by his assistants general.

#### *Acquaviva's discriminatory measures*

After the election of Acquaviva in 1581, the alleged converso character of the *memorialistas* movement was further accentuated by the anti-converso lobby, which now also included such high-ranking officials in the Jesuit Curia of Rome as Paul Hoffaeus, Lorenzo Maggio, and Manuel Rodrigues.

Paul Hoffaeus was born in 1530 in Münster (Rhineland) and entered the Society in Rome at the age of twenty-five. After his ordination and doctorate in theology (1557), and last vows (1561), he held many important administrative offices in the Society, starting as rector of the Jesuit colleges in Prague and Munich. He was subsequently appointed successor to Peter Canisius as superior of the German Province for a long period of twelve years (1569–81). General Congregation 4 elected him assistant general for German assistance and *admonitor* to the newly elected Superior General Acquaviva. Hoffaeus held this post for ten years, but Acquaviva eventually fired him due to some disagreements they had on government. Nevertheless, a few years later (1594–7), Acquaviva appointed him as his visitor in the German provinces. Hoffaeus died in 1608 in Ingolstadt.<sup>104</sup>

As Hoffaeus neared the end of his tenure as assistant general, Acquaviva requested from him (as he did from Palmio, Rodrigues,

---

<sup>104</sup> See Gilmont, *Écrits*, pp. 281–2.

and Maggio) a memorial on the union of spirits in the Society.<sup>105</sup> Far from focusing exclusively on Jesuits of Jewish ancestry, as did Palmio or Rodrigues, Hoffaeus nevertheless claims that one of the categories of people who compromise the Order's unity are so-called *confesos*, who are "either suspicious or hateful," a prejudice that he had already applied in Austria in his dealings with Alfonso de Pisa and Francisco de Toledo,<sup>106</sup> as we shall see below. Given how many troubles they had provoked (*perturbatores*) and surely will provoke, he suggests a remedy: the barring of such subjects from admission and discrimination against those who had been already admitted—they must hold in the Order only "more humble posts," such as those of teachers, without the possibility of promotion in the government. Although Hoffaeus warns that debarring the noblemen of Jewish stock would produce offense to their families (which Acquaviva would take into consideration in his secret instruction that we shall analyze below), he concludes that other important princes and noblemen might feel offended by the very presence of Jews, so barring them from the Society would be worth the risk. In his letter, Hoffaeus dubbed the Society a "synagogue of the Jews."<sup>107</sup>

<sup>105</sup> See the critical edition of the text in Burkhart Schneider, "Die Denkschrift des Paul Hoffaeus S. I. *De unione animorum in Societate*," *AHSI* 29 (1960): 85–98.

<sup>106</sup> See ARSI, *Germ.* 137, f. 63 (123).

<sup>107</sup> "Tertia hominum conditio est illorum quos vocant confesos, qui solent passim esse vel suspecti vel etiam odiosi, quique iccirco [*sic*] difficulter cum veteribus christianis possunt ad unionem coalescere. Remedium esset tales amplius nonmittere, admissos vero in humilioribus officiis et in scholarum functionibus tantum continere, ad nullam vero gubernationem promovere. Si serio quaerimus solidam in Societate unionem, certe isti confessi admittendi aliisque praeficiendi non sunt, cum nimirum constet, quantopere hactenus Societatem perturbaverint et vix ullo dubio in posterum tanto amplius perturbaturi sint, quanto erunt plures et potentiores quantove magis senserint se Praeposito Generali esse terrori. Sunt sane multa alia quae nocent nostrae unioni: quid ergo iuvat etiam confesos ad augenda mala nostra adhibere, praesertim cum istis hominibus non indigeamus nec pro Societatis corpore augendo vel conservando, nec pro ullo officio gubernationis? Solet obici nobiles confesos reiici non posse, quod timendum sit ne ipsorum parentes graviter ob iniustam infamiam offendantur. At cur non potius timemus, ne universae Societati noceamus et tam multos bonos patres offendamus et contristemur ob pauculorum confessorum nobilium cavendam offensionem? Et cur non timemus ne offendamus multo plures nobiles, immo etiam principes, qui ob hoc hominum genus nobis non obscure offensi, nostram Societatem cum nota infamia vocant synagogam iudaeorum? Igitur si non est alia ratio quae magis movet, haec sane non est sufficiens? Ego unicum video impedimentum quo solo Vestra Paternitas impeditur, caeteras omnes difficultates facile superaret, ut mihi certe persuadeo. Hactenus de illis malis quae etiam inter mundanos perturbant unionem nobisque cum ipsis sunt communia" (Schneider, "Denkschrift des Paul Hoffaeus," p. 93).

Hoffaeus's colleague in the Roman Jesuit Curia, Assistant General Lorenzo Maggio (or Maggi) wrote in 1586 on Acquaviva's request the same kind of memorial on how to achieve unity in the Society of Jesus. He entitled it *De unione animorum in Societate: restauranda et servanda*, and it remains unpublished.<sup>108</sup> Maggio was born in Brescia (Italy) in 1531 and entered the Society the same year as Hoffaeus and Rodrigues (1555). A few years after his ordination (1556), Laínez appointed him rector of the College in Naples and, after his profession in 1563, rector of the College in Vienna (1563–6) and superior of the Austrian Province (1566–78). As such, he laid the foundation for the new Jesuit province in Poland. General Congregation 4 (1581) elected him the successor of Benedetto Palmio as assistant general, an office he held until 1594. Subsequently, he was visitor in Austria (1594–6), provincial of Venice (1596–8), and visitor in France (1599–1604), where he had been a spiritual guide to the future Cardinal Pierre de Bérulle (1575–1629). He died in 1605 in Rome.

In his memorial on unity, he painted Jesuits of Jewish ancestry as troublemakers just as we have seen Hoffaeus do: "Those from the circumcision subverted the entire house of the Society. As sons of this world who are shrewd in dealing with their own [Luke 16:8] and avid of new things, they easily excite disorders and destroy the unity of souls and their bond with the government."<sup>109</sup>

The third assistant general, whose prejudiced views on conversos created a hostile atmosphere surrounding Jesuits of Jewish ancestry in the 1580s, was Manuel Rodrigues. He was born in 1534 in Monsanto (Castelo Branco, Portugal) and entered the Society in Coimbra. Like Hoffaeus and Maggio, during his entire Jesuit career he held important governmental posts: rector of the College in Oporto (1566–70), vice-rector of the University in Évora (1570–2) and of the Colégio das Artes (1572–4), superior of the Portuguese Province (1574–80), and finally assistant general (1581–94). He died in Évora in 1596.

Rodrigues's eye-popping bias against those who "by nature are contrary to the true and sincere spirit of religion and thus harmful"<sup>110</sup>

<sup>108</sup> ARSI, *Instit.* 178, ff. 154–61.

<sup>109</sup> "Qui de circumcissione sunt universam Societatis domum subvertere. Cum sint filii huius saeculi et super modum sui amantes, ac rerum novarum cupidi, facile turbas excitant et unionem animorum ac gubernationis subnexionem dirrumpunt" (*Instit.* 178, f. 154<sup>v</sup>).

<sup>110</sup> "[...] natura contraria vero ac syncero spiritui religionis, ideoque ipso ad missionem

echoes Bishop Simancas's *Defensio* and exceeds even that of Palmio, with whose memorial to Acquaviva he was familiar. The Jesuit Archives in Rome (ARSI) preserve at least four manuscripts by his hand, which are exclusively dedicated to the converso question: *De baptizandis ex progenie Judaeorum* (*Instit.* 184 II, ff. 360–4), *De gente bizcayna* (*Instit.* 186e, ff. 327–351<sup>v</sup>), *De unione animorum* (*Instit.* 178, ff. 162–4), and an untitled postulate to General Congregation 5. This last manuscript recommended that candidates who proceed from “the blood of Jews” be precluded from admission to the Society, for their admission “contradicts the good name of the Society, the reality itself, and the *Constitutions*.”<sup>111</sup> The petition reflected well Rodrigues's bias, expressed elsewhere:

Being children of this world, pompous, cunning, fake, self-seeking, etc., it is certain that they fit religious life very badly and that it is impossible to maintain union with them. If those of this blood are made superiors, they employ almost all their government in external things: they promote genuine mortification and solid virtues very little and seem to be merchants, seeking first seats and being called rabbis; they are hardly eager to seek perfection that is described in the parts 5 and 6 of the *Constitutions*; and readily admit others of the same blood who are very unworthy.<sup>112</sup>

The decade-long intense discriminatory campaign of the three assistants general effectively led to gradual restrictions in the admission into the Society of candidates of Jewish ancestry. In April 1590 Acquaviva sent out a secret instruction to Spanish provincials, in which he explained that he had to accede to the will of the influential lay and ecclesiastical officials in Spain, who felt offended by the Society's openness towards *confesos*:

---

maxime Societati nostrae, tum in realitate ipsa, tum in bono nomine plurimum et nocuisse et nocere et nociturum” (ARSI, *Instit.* 184 II, f. 360).

<sup>111</sup> “Petitur a Congregatione ut decretum conficiat, quo statuatur ut confessi (id est homines qui ex Iudaeorum sanguine emanant) in Societatem admitti non possint. Quam insta haec petitio sit, constare ex eo potest quod confessorum admissio pugnat cum bono Societatis nomine, cum realitate ista atque cum Constitutionibus” (ARSI, *Inst.* 184/II, f. 356).

<sup>112</sup> “Siendo tan hijos de este siglo, elatos, astutos, fingidos, seipsos quaerentes, etc., cierto es que irá con ellos muy mal la vida religiosa y que no podrá en ella aver unión [. . .]. Si a los de esta sangre hacen superiores, quasi todo el gobierno emplean en cosas exteriores: promoven poco a la verdadera mortificación y virtudes sólidas, parecen mercantes o tractantes, volunt primas cathedras et vocari Rabi, son poco zelosos de executar con perfección la 5.<sup>a</sup> y 6.<sup>a</sup> partes de las Constituciones y admiten fácilmente otros de la misma sangre muy indignos” (ARSI, *Inst.* 184/II, ff. 360–4).

In some provinces at various times, and particularly now, the important people who desire the well-being of the Society very much, have told various [Jesuit] superiors that they felt offended by the fact that many of those who are known to be of the race of *confesos* are being admitted into the Society and are there visible. This complaint compromises the name of the Society itself and the fruit it would bring, if this situation were more regulated. Therefore, I have decided not to procrastinate any more and announce what many days ago I had already contemplated to write.

It is to be known that regarding those who had been already received, neither small or big difference should be made between them and others in the Order in what concerns giving grades and other privileges, which should be based on the talents the Lord communicated them and the virtue they have, according to our *Constitutions* and [papal] bulls. Otherwise, it could produce in them anger and too much of distress and we would fail to give them proof of charity that we owe.

In regards to the offices of government, we should be careful not to give them to these people in certain key places, especially where there is the Inquisition, or in other circumstances that may offend the eyes of those who watch us, in order to avoid offense, particularly to the illustrious inquisitors and ministers of the King [of Spain] who clearly are concerned about this issue.

In what regards the admission of this people in order not to give occasion of bitterness to many in the Society, we have judged to be inappropriate to prohibit universally the admission of those who somehow have this defect. It is necessary to use more selectivity and diligence in the admission, keeping in mind two things. The first is that in no way are to be admitted those who have been clearly suspected [*notados*] by the Inquisition. As to the people whose suspicion is not so well known or unclear, especially if they come from afar, and if their relatives are noble and employed and honored by the King and his ministers, it would be very hateful and harsh to exclude them, and it would become subject to a number of drawbacks. The second is not to use the same kind of diligence in examining the candidate as in case of somebody destined for an office of the Inquisition in Toledo. Otherwise, this would mean looking for genealogies and collecting information about lineages of noblemen, which would become dangerous. At any rate, this investigation should be done quietly and when somebody has to be excluded, it would be convenient to give some other apparent causes and reasons for his dismissal, so that it could not be understood or affirmed with certainty that a person is barred from admission because of his lineage.

This measure appeared to me necessary, because if we want to look at the edification and authority of our ministries and a good credit that the Society should have, we have to condescend to the view of people who are not only principal, but have their hands in the government. Not without reason our Father Ignatius asked to inquire the candidate about his lineage in order to make a good decision for the major greater glory

of God, considered all the circumstances, even though we do know that God does not limit the communication of his grace and virtues to blood or lineages, but *gives them abundantly to everybody*.<sup>113</sup>

The documents of Acquaviva and his three assistants general that we have quoted thus far undoubtedly reveal that legislating discrimina-

---

<sup>113</sup> “Pax Christi. Porqué en algunas provincias en diversos tiempos, y particularmente en este, personajes muy principales que mucho desean el bien de la Compañía, han dicho a diversos superiores que [...] los con confesos, porque se ofenden muchos de que se reciban y se vean en ella tantos que se sabe tienen raza de confesos, lo cual redundando en perjuicio y lengua de la misma Compañía y del fruto que haría si en esto fuese más rectada, me ha parecido no diferir más, avisar lo que muchos días ha estaba determinado se escribiese. Conviene a saber que con los que están recibidos, ni ha de haber, ni mostrarse señal chico, ni grande de diferencia entre ellos, y los demás en cuanto toca a dar los grados y otras prerrogativas en la Religión a cada uno según los talentos que el Señor les ha comunicado, y la virtud que tuvieren, conforme a nuestras bulas y Constituciones, porque lo contrario sería irritarlos y afligirlos *supra modum*, y dejar de darles la muestra de caridad que debemos. Aunque en el darles gobiernos para evitar la ofensión particularmente de los Ilustres Inquisidores y de Ministros del Rey que claramente tratan desto, conviene que tengamos cuidado y miramiento de no darles cargo en ciertos puestos principales, y particularmente donde hay Inquisición o otras circunstancias que pueden ofender los ojos de los que nos están mirando. Mas cuanto al recibir de nuevo semejantes, aunque por no dar ocasión de amargura a muchos de la Compañía non hemos juzgado por cosa conveniente el prohibir universalmente que de cualquier manera que tal defecto les toque no se puedan recibir. Con todo eso es necesario usar mucho delecto y diligencia en el recibirlos, guardando dos cosas. La primera que en ninguna manera se reciban los que tuvieron nota clara y que desconvenga de manera que comúnmente en el concreto de los de fuera sean tenidos y notados portales. Mas cuanto fuesen personas que tuviesen poca nota y de lejos, o no tan clara, y que sus parientes especialmente si son personas nobles, fuesen honrados y empleados por el Rey, y por sus ministros, el excluirlos sería cosa [347<sup>v</sup>] muy odiosa, dura y sujeta a varios inconvenientes. La segunda es que en recibirlos no se haga la exquisita diligencia que se haría por ventura para una [...] de Toledo, o para ocuparlos en el Santo Oficio. Porque esto es de andar buscando genealogías, y haciendo informaciones de linajes de otros especialmente de gente honrada, sería cosa de mucho peligro, mas hágase por los nuestros en los lugares donde esto se puede saber, la moral diligencia que sin ruido basta para tener noticia de la opinión en que están en esta parte en sus tierras; y cuando alguno se hubiese de excluir, se busquen algunas otras causas y razones aparentes para que no se pueda entender, o a lo menos, afirmar con certidumbre que se deja alguno de recibir por esta causa. Esto nos ha parecido ser necesario pues que se ve que a la edificación y autoridad de nuestros ministerios y buen crédito de la Compañía conviene que se condescienda con la opinión de personas que no solo son tan principales, mas juntamente tienen mano en el gobierno, que no sin causa la bendita memoria de N[uestro] P[adre] Ignacio aviso que se les preguntase deste punto, para que entendidas todas las circunstancias, se pudiese hacer la consideración que conviene a mayor gloria Divina. Aunque por otra parte sabemos que Dios N[uestro] S[eñor] no limita la comunicación de sus gracias y virtudes a sangre o linajes, *sed tribuit omnibus abundanter*. En las oraciones y santos sacrificios de V[uestra] R[everencia] mucho me encomiendo. De Roma, 18 de April 1590” (ARSI, *Inst.* 184/II, ff. 347, 366–7).



tion against Christians of Jewish lineage during General Congregation 5 (1593)—which ironically was forced to convene under pressure from the converso Jesuits José de Acosta<sup>114</sup> and Francisco de Toledo—was orchestrated as a punishment for the alleged participation of conversos in the revolt against the way in which Acquaviva and his assistants general governed the Society. Violating Loyola’s will as expressed in the Jesuit *Constitutions*, and contradicting the practice of the first three generalates, this new law proclaimed Jewish (and Muslim) ancestry, no matter how distant, an insurmountable impediment for admission to the Society. Moreover, conversos who had not yet made their final vows had to be dismissed. “Suited to the greater glory of God,” the anti-converso decree was deemed a *fait accompli*, and even the superior general was forbidden to grant exemptions:

Those, however, who are descendants from parents who are recent Christians, routinely and habitually inflicted a great deal of hindrance and harm on the Society (as has become clear from our daily experience). [...] The entire congregation then decided to decree, as is affirmed by this present decree, that in no case may anyone of this sort, that is to say, one of Hebrew or Saracen stock, be admitted to the Society in the future. And if by error any such person is admitted, he should be dismissed as soon as the impediment is revealed, at whatever time before profession this occurs, after first notifying the superior general and awaiting his reply. [...] It is more suited to the greater glory of God and the more perfect pursuit of the ends it [the Society of Jesus] proposes to itself that it possess workers who are very acceptable to other nations throughout the world and who might more freely and reliably be employed in the Church of God by those people whose good or ill will towards us (as Father Ignatius, of happy memory, says) has much to do with whether they will be open to or close out access to the divine service and the aid of souls.<sup>115</sup>

The lineage-hunting season began. According to Melchor de Valpedrosa’s *Diario*, all but two delegates (the converso José de Acosta and Francisco Arias de Párraga) voted for the measure.<sup>116</sup> Just as the Sarmiento

<sup>114</sup> See AHN, Inquisición, lib. 582, f. 333<sup>r</sup>; and Donnelly, “Antonio Possevino,” pp. 7–8.

<sup>115</sup> See AHN, Clero-Jesuitas, leg. 252, doc. 192; AHSI, Baet. 3-I, ff. 179, 202, 417; Padberg, *For Matters of Greater Moment*, p. 204; and *Institutum Societatis Iesu* (Florence: Ex Typographia a SS. Conceptione, 1892–3), 2:278–9, d. 52.

<sup>116</sup> See Astrain, *Historia*, 3:610. Also, Antonio Possevino confirms this information (see ARSI, *Congr. 20b*, f. 309<sup>r</sup>).

Francisco Arias de Párraga: \*c. 1534 Seville; SJ 1561; †1605 Seville; priest before 1561; professed 1572 (*DHCJ* 1:231–2).

legislation of 1449 had been condemned by at least three archbishops of Toledo—Alonso Carrillo de Acuña (1413–82), Pedro González de Mendoza (1428–95), and Francisco Jiménez de Cisneros (1436–1517)—so did Cardinal Archbishop of Toledo and Inquisitor General, Gaspar de Quiroga (1507–94) affirm, against Acquaviva’s decree, that the Society dishonored itself by promulgating such a law.<sup>117</sup> Indeed, Quiroga—who held the reins of the Spanish Inquisition between 1573 and 1594, exactly in the period of the most intense Jesuit anti-converso offensive—restricted the implementation of purity-of-blood laws, a policy that reflected a shift in approach to the converso problem by King Philip II’s Council.<sup>118</sup>

Renée Levine Melammed’s recent description of the consequences of purity-of-blood laws in Spain could be applied very well to the situation in which the Jesuit conversos found themselves the morning after they learned of the decree.<sup>119</sup> They were denied full membership in the Society on the basis of ethnic discrimination. Even the most sincere convert was denied equal rights and opportunities. Only by forging documents or by paying for forgeries could he perhaps manage to circumvent these limitations. Consequently, the purity-of-blood statutes created a culture of opinion rather than law.<sup>120</sup> Some conversos tried by these means or others to be accepted surreptitiously into the Society, but they knew that they would eventually be condemned to second-class citizenship. Conversely, those who desired to get rid of political enemies disseminated rumors or manipulated their opponents’ genealogical documents in order to taint their required “ethnic purity.” The Society of Jesus might teach Gospel-inspired brotherhood and equality, but life had a different lesson in store. A converso who had never experienced a day in his life as a Jew, who even might know absolutely nothing about his converso background, was still refused

---

<sup>117</sup> See ARSI, *Inst.* 186e, f. 358r: “En lugar de ganar honra, se ha la Compañía deshonrado con este tal deceto.”

<sup>118</sup> Brodrick, *Progress of the Jesuits*, p. 119; and Kamen, “Una crisis de conciencia,” pp. 322–56. See also Stafford Poole, “The Politics of *limpieza de sangre*: Juan de Ovando and His Circle in the Reign of Philip II,” *The Americas* 55 (1999): 359–89, where he shows that many conversos held the highest positions in Philip’s administration. On Quiroga’s relationship with Philip II, see especially Henar Pizarro Llorente, *Un gran patrón en la corte de Felipe II: Don Gaspar de Quiroga* (Madrid: Universidad Pontificia Comillas, 2004).

<sup>119</sup> Melammed, *A Question of Identity*, p. 19.

<sup>120</sup> See Juan Hernández Franco, *Cultura y limpieza de sangre en la España moderna. Puritate sanguinis* (Murcia: Universidad de Murcia, 1996), p. iv.

entry into the Society, and little or nothing could be done to alter this situation.

Indeed, as Guzmán pointed out to Ribadeneyra, many influential and valued converso Jesuits left the Society.<sup>121</sup> The number of admissions in Iberia and the Indies dramatically decreased.<sup>122</sup> Despite his safe status as a professed Jesuit, Ribadeneyra never disclosed his converso identity and, to the Jesuit historian Sacchini's dismay, omitted Laínez's in his biography of him, as we have seen in the previous chapter. When the Inquisition tried Juan Jerónimo<sup>123</sup> because, in his popular preaching in Toledo in 1593–4, he supported the so-called confession *in absentia* (defended by the converso Jesuit jurist, Francisco Suárez), he was reminded by the Toledan inquisitors that the same tribunal had also sentenced his Jewish grandfather and that, thus, “the fire was very close to scorch him.”<sup>124</sup>

When Alexandre de Rhodes entered the Society in Rome in 1612, he must have hidden the fact that his grandparents had escaped the Iberian persecutions and, changing their name from Rueda, had settled in Avignon.<sup>125</sup> His surreptitious admission was probably due to the fact that his wealthy family had donated 3,000 *librarum* to the Jesuit College in Avignon (which was founded by Antonio Possevino, who most likely was also a closet-converso),<sup>126</sup> but it was also beneficial to the Society: armed with his exceptional linguistic acumen, Alexandre—after his sojourn in Goa, Macau, and Japan—founded the first Jesuit mission in present-day Vietnam, co-authored the Vietnamese-Portuguese-Latin

---

<sup>121</sup> “Después que hay este decreto se han retirado muchos sujetos que tienen partes muy esenciales y de grande estimación y que fueran muy estimados y de gran fruto en la Compañía” (ARSI, *Inst.* 186e, f. 355v).

<sup>122</sup> See Medina, “Los precursores de Vieira,” p. 501.

<sup>123</sup> Juan Jerónimo: \*8 July 1545 Cabra (Córdoba); SJ 1562; priest in 1570; professed in 1578; †1 July 1605 Rome. He was born to the converso Francisco de Méndez and Leonor Arias. Was he, then, related to Francisco Arias de Párraga from Seville? He studied law at Salamanca before joining the Society with the desire to become a missionary in the Indies, but he eventually taught theology in various colleges in Spain and engaged in controversial preaching (see *DHCJ* 3:2146). See AHN, Inquisición, lib. 581, f. 244v and lib. 582, ff. 177v, 180v, 203v, 227v, 271v, 295v, 333r.

<sup>124</sup> See ARSI, *Hisp.* 138, f. 65.

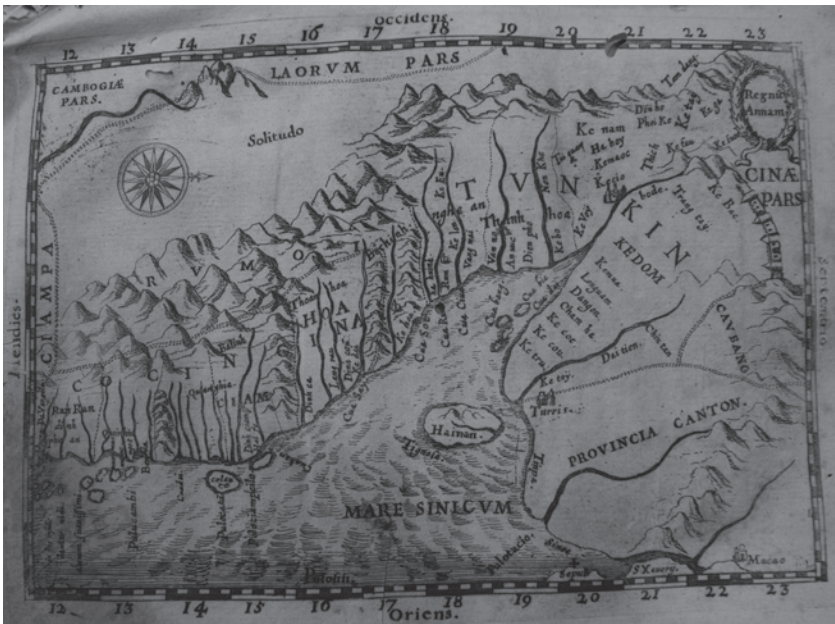
<sup>125</sup> Alexandre de Rhodes: \*c. 1583 Avignon; SJ 1612; †1660 Isfahan (Iran); priest in 1618 (see *DHCJ* 4:3342). In 1487, a priest named Juan Martínez de Rueda, in whose possession anti-Christian books in Hebrew were found, was burned in Saragossa; and in 1492, his relative, the widow of Antonio de Rueda of Catalayud, who had kept the Sabbath and had regularly eaten “hamyn” [ham], was also burned there. Alexandre's ancestors were probably related to these Iberian conversos.

<sup>126</sup> See ARSI, *Fondo Gesuitico*, NN 10/1368 (envelope 12).

dictionary *Dictionarium Annamiticum Lusitanum et Latinum*, and wrote a bi-lingual catechism, *Catechismus pro iis qui volunt suscipere baptismum in octo dies divisus*, both of which works were published in Rome in 1651 by the Sacra Congregatio de Propaganda Fide.

Andrés Pinto (1595–1654) needed royal support to enable him to remain in the Society, after his Jewish lineage was discovered, even though Superior General Vitelleschi (general 1615–45) requested his dismissal in a letter to the Spanish Superior Provincial Villalba:

I have received information about the lineage of Brother Pinto, signed by [Fernaõ Martins Mascarenhas] Lord Inquisitor General of Portugal. (Your Reverence should not tell this to anyone.) He says that not only Pinto's father but also his mother is a descendant of Jews, but after their conversion his parents have never committed a crime, nor have been punished by the Inquisition. And as they were trying to appoint Pinto's father physician to the king, there was opposition due to his well-known lineage, but since his family was never suspected, they did him a favor and



Source: Alexandre de Rhodes, *Tunchinensis Historiae Libri* (Lyon, 1652), p. [15] map. Courtesy of John J. Burns Library at Boston College.

Figure 14. Map of seventeenth-century Vietnam  
This map was printed in the first history of the present-day Vietnam by the Jesuit Alexandre de Rhodes (1583–1660).

appointed him anyway at the request of the king. Yet Brother Pinto cannot remain in the Society and I order Your Reverence to dismiss him immediately. I am sorry about this, but nothing else can be done in this case.<sup>127</sup>

Upon his request to join the Society in Saragossa, the lineage of Baltasar [Jerónimo] Gracián y Morales (1601–58), from Belmonte (Calatayud) near Saragossa, resulted in suspicion but apparently did not prevent his admission. It seems that the suspicion centered on the name of Gracián and his father's profession.<sup>128</sup> Indeed, the name (in Hebrew *Hen*) was associated with the Jewish descendants of Judah ben Barzilai, who had lived in Barcelona in the thirteenth century. One of them, Salomón ben Moses (d. 1307), a renowned Talmudist from Barcelona, sometimes signed himself as Hen, sometimes Gracián. Other notorious members of the Gracián family were Shealtiel Gracián, or Hen, a rabbi of Barcelona and Alcalá, and Zerariah ben Isaac ben Shealtiel Gracián (Hen), philosopher and translator, both of whom lived in the thirteenth century (*The Encyclopedia Judaica* has fourteen biographies of family members).<sup>129</sup> There were other well-known Graciáns who lived closer to our Baltasar Gracián's time: the Carmelite Jerónimo Gracián (1545–1614), son of Diego Gracián de Alderete, who was one of the converso St. Teresa of Ávila's closest associates;<sup>130</sup> and Juan

<sup>127</sup> "Ya llegó la información del linaje del H[ermano] Pinto, la cual viene firmada del Señor Inquisidor General de Portugal (esto último no lo diga V[uestra] R[everencia] a ninguno). Por ella consta que el dicho hermano por parte no solo de su padre sino también de su madre es descendiente de Judíos, pero después que sus progenitores se convirtieron nunca han delinquido, ni sido castigados por la Inquisición y así cuando se trató de hacer médico del rey a su padre del dicho hermano, le opusieron la falta de su linaje y aunque constó de ella notoriamente por no haber delinquido sus pasados después que se convirtieron, se le hizo gracia de admitirlo por medio del rey, conforme a lo dicho bien ve VR que no podemos retener al dicho Hermano Pinto en la Compañía y así encargo apretadamente que luego lo despide; harto lo siento pero no es materia esta en que se puede hacer otra cosa" (ARSI, *Cast.* 9, f. 57). See also Medina, "Los precursores de Vieira," p. 514.

<sup>128</sup> See Miguel Batllori, "La vida alternante de Baltasar Gracián en la Compañía de Jesús," *AHSI* 18 (1949): 7.

<sup>129</sup> See Arturo del Hoyo, *Baltasar Gracián y Morales. Obras completas* (Madrid: Aguilar, 1967), p. ccxxxix; and Roth, *Conversos. Inquisition*, p. 60.

<sup>130</sup> See Francisco Javier Martín Gil y Jesús Martín Gil, "Sobre las contribuciones científicas del erudito y polígrafo vallisoletano Jerónimo Gracián de la Madre de Dios (1545–1614)," in *Estudios sobre historia de la ciencia y de la técnica. IV Congreso de la Sociedad Española de Historia de las Ciencias y de las Técnicas. Valladolid, 22–27 de Septiembre de 1986* (1988), pp. 829–32. He was the son of Diego Gracián de Alderete who studied with Luis Vives in Leuven and later became a famous translator of Plutarch (see *Enciclopedia Universal Ilustrada*, vol. 26, p. 895). The family name of Baltasar Gracián's grandmother would have been Torrella, a distinguished converso

Gracián, who was a prominent book publisher in Alcalá de Henares. The relationship of these two men to Baltasar Gracián y Morales still needs to be examined.

The latter was the son of a physician from Sabiñán, Francisco Gracián Garcés (born in 1564 to Antonio Gracián, a descendant of Miguel Gracián de Borja, and Isabel Garcés), and Ángela Morales Torrellas, an illiterate daughter of a tailor from Calatayud (their tomb is located in the chapel San Cosme at San Andrés in Belmonte). He had eight siblings: Manuel, Magdalena, Francisco, Felipe, Pedro, Ángela, Raymundo, and Lorenzo (whose name Gracián used as a pseudonym to publish almost all his books).<sup>131</sup>

As in the case of many converso families, those of Láinez, Suárez, and Ribadeneyra included, most of Gracián's siblings became monks or nuns. He was baptized by Domingo Pascual, and his godfathers were Martín Carrasco and María Fabián. He spent his childhood in Toledo with his uncle, Antonio Gracián, who was a priest at the chapel of San Pedro de los Reyes.

After years of Jesuit formation, Baltasar Gracián taught cases of conscience in Lérida and philosophy and theology in Gandía and Huesca, where he met his future *maecenas*, Vincencio Juan de Lastanosa (1607–81). Transferred to Saragossa in 1639, he became confessor of the viceroy of Aragón, Francesco Maria Carraffa e Carraffa (r. 1639–40). In 1642 he was appointed vice-rector in Tarragona and later dean of philosophy at the University of Gandía, a post that he lost after the publication of his *Criticón* (Huesca, 1651; Huesca, 1653; Madrid, 1657). He was then transferred to Graus and ordered to fast on bread and water. Consequently, he asked to be dismissed from the Society, but his request was denied. During Aragón's war with Catalonia and France, Gracián enrolled as chaplain in the army (1646). After 1649, he taught Scripture in Saragossa, where he befriended the poet Andrés de Uztarroz (1606–53). Gracián is considered one of the major writers of the European Baroque. He was admired by, among others, Arthur Schopenhauer (1788–1860), who translated his works into German

---

name in Aragón, associated with that of Almazán, Ferrer, and Almenara (see *El Libro verde de Aragón*, in AHN, Inquisición, lib. 1282, ff. 41<sup>v</sup> and 56<sup>v-v</sup>).

<sup>131</sup> See Gracián's *El héroe* (1637, *The Hero*); *El político Don Fernando el Católico* (1640, *The Politician*); *Arte de ingenio* (1642) or *Agudeza y arte de ingenio* (1648); *El discreto* (1646, *The Complete Gentleman*); *Oráculo manual y arte de prudencia* (1647, *The Art of Worldly Wisdom*); and *El Criticón* (1651–7, *The Critic*).



(1861). Some of his books are being still translated, and there are numerous websites dedicated to him.<sup>132</sup>

It is noteworthy that some other converso Jesuits, who had not yet pronounced their final vows before Acquaviva restricted the admission of converso candidates in the late 1580s, were actually able to do so. That was the story of, for example, the famous biblicist Luis del Alcázar,<sup>133</sup> whose portrait was made by the celebrated painter, Francisco Pacheco (1564–1644).<sup>134</sup> As in the case of Alexandre de Rhodes, the authorities perhaps acknowledged that his parents, Melchor del Alcázar and Ana de la Sal Hurtado de Mendoza, contributed financially to the foundation of the Jesuit college San Hermenegildo in Seville, and also that

---

<sup>132</sup> See *DHCJ* 2:1796–7. The bibliography on Gracián is infinite. The following selected bibliography highlights the geographical and chronological span of scholarly interest in Gracián's works. Karl Borinski, *Baltasar Gracián und die Hofliteratur in Deutschland* ([Niederwalluf b. Wiesbaden]: M. Sändig, 1971); Benedetto Croce, *I trattatisti italiani del "Concettismo" e Baltasar Gracian: Memoria letta all'accademia Pontaniana nella tornata del 18 giugno 1899* (Naples: Stab. tipografico nella R. Università di A. Tessitore e figlio, 1899); Narciso José Lin y Heredia, *Baltasar Gracian, 1601–1658* (Madrid: Impr. del Asilo de Huérfanos, 1902); Aubrey Bell, *Baltasar Gracian* ([Oxford]: Oxford University Press, H. Milford, 1921); Victor Bouillier, *Baltasar Gracián et Nietzsche* (Paris: H. Champion, 1926); Miguel Batllori, *Gracián y el barroco* (Rome: Edizioni di Storia e Letteratura, 1958); Evaristo Correa Calderón, *Baltasar Gracián: Su vida y su obra* (Madrid: Gredos, 1961); Monroe Z. Hafter, *Gracián and Perfection; Spanish Moralists of the Seventeenth Century* (Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1966); Virginia R. Foster, *Baltasar Gracián* (Boston: Twayne Publishers, 1975); Theodore L. Kassir, *The Truth Disguised: Allegorical Structure and Technique in Gracian's "Criticón"* (London: Tamesis, 1976); Jorge M. Ayala, Gracián: *Vida, estilo, y reflexión* (Madrid: Cincel, 1987); Luciano Anceschi, *La poetica di Gracián in Europa* (Naples: Istituto Suor Orsola Benincasa, 1989); Julio O. Chiappini, *Borges y Baltasar Gracián* (Rosario, Prov. Santa Fe, República Argentina: Zeus Editora, 1994); Arturo Zorate Ruis, *Gracian, Wit, and the Baroque Age* (New York: P. Lang, 1996); Nicholas Spadaccini and Jenaro Talens, eds, *Rhetoric and Politics: Baltasar Gracian and the New World Order* (Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 1997); Ronald H. McKinney, "The Baroque Casuistry of Baltasar Gracian," *The Modern Schoolman* 81/2 (2004): 79–95; <http://www.uv.es/BaltasarGracian>; <http://www.balthasargracian.com>; and <http://des.emory.edu/mfp/Gracian>.

<sup>133</sup> Luis del Alcázar: \*1554 Seville; SJ 1568; †1613 Rome; priest 1578; professed 1589. His uncle, Baltasar del Alcázar, was a famous poet. He studied at the colleges of Seville, Cordova, and Salamanca. He was erroneously considered the author of the *Discurso acerca de los estatutos de limpieza de sangre*, which was written by his Dominican friend, Agustín Salucio (AHN, Inquisición, lib. 583, f. 339; and *DHCJ* 1:41). See the opposite view in Ruth Pike, *Linajudos and Conversos in Seville: Greed and Prejudice in Sixteenth- and Seventeenth-Century Spain* (New York: Peter Lang, 2000), p. 127.

<sup>134</sup> See Manuela Águeda García Garrido, "La imagen predicada. La virtud como camino hacia la salvación en los retratos de Francisco Pacheco (1564–1644)," *Etiópicas* 2 (2006): 185; see Alcázar's portrait in Francisco Pacheco, *Libro de descripción de verdaderos retratos de ilustres y memorables varones* (Seville: Imp. de E. Rasco, 1886).



the candidate was a very gifted man. His commentaries on the book of the Apocalypse were so famous that the nineteenth-century theologian Wilhelm Bousset (1865–1920) attributed the scientific study of that book to his influence.<sup>135</sup>

These and other cases deserve more attention, but no in-depth study on this subject has been ever done,<sup>136</sup> in spite of the fact that the exceptional role of Jesuits of Jewish ancestry had been constantly underscored in the vanguard Jesuit pro-converso writings of Antonio Possevino, Pedro de Ribadeneyra, Diego de Guzmán, García Girón de Alarcón, and Juan de Mariana.

We turn our attention to these writings in the next chapter, now that we have examined in the present one the shift in the Jesuit approaches to the issue of *limpieza de sangre* after the death of Superior General Francisco de Borja in 1572. We have seen how and why as a result of the anti-converso policy of his two successors, Mercurian and Acquaviva, the Jesuits of Jewish lineage went, in fewer than fifty years, from having a leading role in the foundation and development of the Society of Jesus to being prohibited from membership in it.

---

<sup>135</sup> Ruth Pike, *Aristocrats and Traders. Sevillian Society in the Sixteenth Century* (Ithaca, N.Y.: Cornell University Press, 1972), pp. 67–8.

<sup>136</sup> For a concise treatment of this subject in the period 1594–1632, see Medina, “Los precursores de Vieira,” pp. 501–19.



Source: Luis del Alcázar, *Commentary to the Vestigatio arcani sensus in Apocalypsi* (Lyon, 1618), pp. xxi–xxiii. Courtesy of John J. Burns Library at Boston College.

Figure 15. Engravings from the *Vestigatio arcani sensus in Apocalypsi* (Antwerp, 1614) by Luis del Alcázar (1554–1613)



## CHAPTER FOUR

### JESUIT OPPOSITION TO THE PURITY-OF-BLOOD DISCRIMINATION (1576–1608)

*Thus there is no Poland, no Spain, no Germany, no France, but one Society,  
one God in all, all in one Lord Jesus Christ, whose members you are.*  
Everard Mercurian, S.J., 1573

The prior purity-of-blood legislation promulgated in Toledo that we have analyzed in Chapters One and Three—Mayor Sarmiento’s in 1449, Inquisitor Silíceo’s in 1547, and the anti-converso decree of the Jesuit Fifth General Congregation (1593)—provoked a fifteen-year-long storm of opposition that eventually led to the limitation, if only superficial, of the lineage inquiry (up to the fifth generation) by General Congregation Six (1608).<sup>1</sup> Five influential Jesuits, who have frequently appeared on previous pages of this book, constituted the vanguard of this opposition: Antonio Possevino, Pedro de Ribadeneyra, Diego de Guzmán, Juan de Mariana, and García Girón de Alarcón. This chapter examines their pro-converso writings within their historical context.

García Girón de Alarcón is virtually unknown, yet his memorial from 1597 is the most comprehensive critique of the Jesuit purity-of-blood discrimination. This is why we shall dedicate to him and his text much space in this chapter. Juan de Mariana, a member of the *memorialistas* movement, authored a work entitled *De rege et regis institutione*, in which he expressed his views on the discrimination against the conversos. It was Antonio Possevino who explicitly mentioned Mariana’s Jewish ancestry.<sup>2</sup> Diego de Guzmán—whom

---

<sup>1</sup> Harald E. Braun, in his recent *Juan de Mariana and Early Modern Spanish Political Thought* (Ashgate: Aldershot, 2007), p. 93, incorrectly stated that General Congregation 6 (1608) revoked the 1593 decree. Juan de Mariana and his friend Pedro de Ribadeneyra did contribute, through their writings, to the defense of the conversos’ status, as we shall see below, but their success was only partial, for General Congregation 6 just limited the genealogical inquiry. The 1593 decree was revoked only in 1946.

<sup>2</sup> See Possevino’s “Memorial,” ARSI, *Congr. 20b*, f. 208”; see also Mariana’s, “De rege et regis institutione,” in Juan de Mariana, *Obras* (Madrid: Biblioteca de

historians consider an Old Christian—may have been motivated to write his pro-converso letter to Superior General Acquaviva by his profound friendship with his converso master, Juan de Ávila, and another of his converso disciples, Gaspar de Loarte, who—as we have seen in Chapter Two—encountered apparently insurmountable obstacles in joining the Society of Jesus due to his Jewish lineage. Obvious also is Guzmán’s affinity for the closet-converso Ribadeneyra, who employed in his anti-discrimination writings his authority as one of only a few surviving disciples of Ignatius of Loyola and as a man of government—he had held important offices in the Jesuit administration for decades until Mercurian’s “house cleansing.” Possevino—the only Italian in this Spanish-dominated quintet—was almost certainly a closet-converso and became one of the earliest and fiercest opponents of purity-of-blood discrimination in the Society. His first memorial was penned as early as 1576,<sup>3</sup> i.e., three years after General Congregation 3, during which Possevino personally witnessed the head-on collision between the anti- and pro-converso parties that concluded with the rigged election of Mercurian, as we have seen in the previous chapter. His is the only text of the genre that has been fully studied in the Anglophone historiography on the subject.<sup>4</sup> Possevino composed his second memorial on 13 October 1598—already after the promulgation of the anti-converso decree by General Congregation 5.<sup>5</sup> The synoptic reading of both memorials that we offer here for the first time allows de-coding of the author’s often secret-style prose. We first turn our attention to his memorial from 1576.

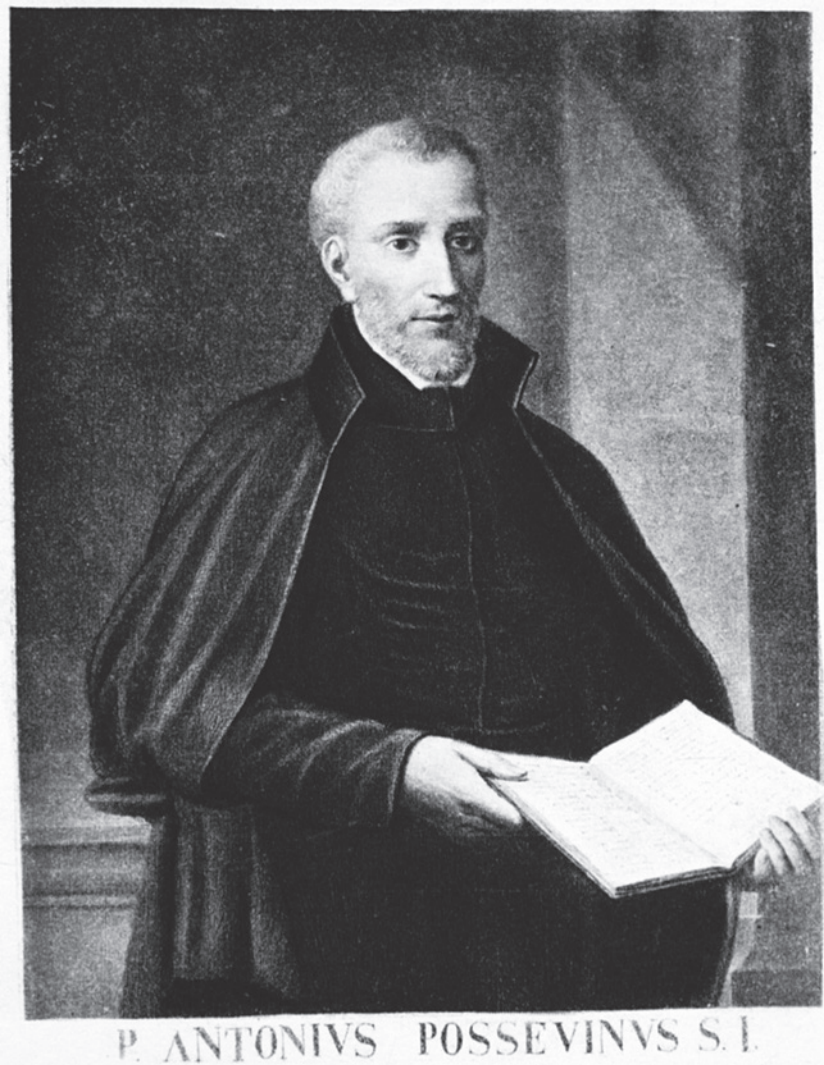
---

Autores Españoles, 1950), vol. 31, pp. 540–2; and Henry Kamen, “Limpieza and the Ghost of Américo Castro: Racism as a Tool of Literary Analysis,” *Hispanic Review* 64/1 (1996): 23.

<sup>3</sup> See ARSI, *Cong. 20b*, ff. 206–12.

<sup>4</sup> See Cohen, “Nation, Lineage, and Jesuit Unity,” pp. 543–61.

<sup>5</sup> See ARSI, *Inst. 184/II*, ff. 349–52; *Congr. 26*, ff. 28–30 and 288–92.



Source: Alfred Hamy, *Galerie Illustrée de la Compagnie de Jésus* (Paris, 1893), #37. Courtesy of John J. Burns Library at Boston College.

Figure 16. The Italian Jesuit writer and diplomat Antonio Possevino (1533–1611)

Antonio Possevino (1533–1611) from Mantua in Italy was one of the most adamant and prolific opponents of the purity-of-blood legislation in the Society of Jesus. Under his influence the 1593 anti-converso decree was mitigated, if insignificantly, by the Sixth General Congregation in 1608. Modern scholarship has established Possevino's Jewish ancestry with quasi-certainty.



*Antonio Possevino*

Thomas Cohen describes Possevino's memorial as "a hybrid text: part personal letter, part learned exegesis, part polemic, part exhortation" directed (especially in its opening section) at an unnamed opponent whom Cohen identifies as Benedetto Palmio,<sup>6</sup> Assistant General to Mercurian and the author of the anti-converso memorial that we have studied in Chapter Three. Possevino's text is set within the context of the Congregation of Procurators<sup>7</sup> that took place in Rome in 1573, during which Mercurian's secretary had conversations on the subject of converso discrimination with the Spanish representatives—"always very faithful to the Society and its general"—who expressed their concern about the anti-Spanish atmosphere that surrounded the election of Mercurian and that continued to be fed by his assistant Palmio, leading to a potential division among the Jesuits:

It was evident, and known to almost everyone in the Society and to the most important men of this court, that that person [N] was an adversary not of a few men but of an entire nation, and that this opposition needed to be totally uprooted . . . for if a remedy had not been introduced it could have caused an irremediable schism in the Society.<sup>8</sup>

Possevino's intention to write the present memorial to Mercurian, petitioning that the latter compose an edification letter on unity in the Society, may have been motivated by the suggestion of the Spanish procurators who had been scandalized by the discrimination against the conversos—regardless of their faithfulness to and love for the Society—that had been instigated by Benedetto Palmio

---

<sup>6</sup> See Cohen, "Nation, Lineage, and Jesuit Unity," p. 544.

<sup>7</sup> The Congregation of Procurators is an assembly of "persons who should come from the provinces, at least one every three years from each province, having been elected by the votes of the professed and rectors of the province, to inform the general about many things" (*Const.* [679]).

<sup>8</sup> "Prima che si venisse alle particolari risposte si toccò uno presupposto, cioè che era cosa evidente et nota quasi a tutta la Compagnia et fino a più grandi di questa corte che quella persona era stimata avversa non da alcuni solamente ma da una nazione intiera, la quale opinione pareva necessario che totalmente si diradicasse: perciocché Vostra Paternità sa che era noto che da N. quel che era stato detto secretamente a bocca a Provinciali quando al tempo della congregatione generale furono mandati in Ispagna, la quale cosa come fu detta senza tener tutta quella luce, la quale si ha tenuto in parte dappoi, potrebbe, se in parte non si fosse cominciato a rimediare, haver cagionato scissure irrimediabili nella Compagnia" (*Cong. 20b*, f. 206). The translation is by Cohen in his "Nation, Lineage, and Jesuit Unity," p. 546. In my transcription of the manuscripts I adjusted the orthography, where it helps in reading the text.



during General Congregation [3].<sup>9</sup> It was also probably motivated by what he observed personally in the General Curia in Rome *after* the congregation—Mercurian was “cleansing the house” by removing from Rome and possibly from Italy the Spanish subjects, many of whom—as we have seen in the previous chapter—had Jewish origins. In Possevino’s eyes,

The aforementioned letter will be of universal consolation, that will edify everyone, and that it will show that in the heart of [Mercurian] there is no other spirit than that of Father Ignatius and the other Generals, and it will remove every threatening notion from the World. And so I hope that [the letter] will serve to ensure that the hearts of the Society allow themselves to be governed by the paternal providence of Your Paternity, without seeking evasive human remedies, as some men (driven by their passion) have sought, not without notable damage to fraternal charity.<sup>10</sup>

The mentioned “damage to fraternal charity” was rooted, claims Possevino, in the idea of purity of blood. Reflecting Alfonso de Cartagena’s *Defensorium unitatis christianae* that we have analyzed in Chapter One, Possevino emphasizes that lineage distinctions are vestiges of paganism and contradict the Jesuit tradition:

Whether one looks to the *Constitutions*, or to the example of former Fathers General, or to the disposition of Divine Providence manifested in Sacred Scripture, one cannot see how this fear can be born within a Society whose Institute should be distinguished by the blood that is found

---

<sup>9</sup> “Aggiungo che questa aversione nel core massime di N. è stata da q[elli] che l’amano con pieno animo e i quali sono stati sempre fedeli alla Compagnia, stimato sempre per il maggiore ostacolo inanti a Dio che la religione nostra potesse avere in questi tempi, essendosi massime dapoi forse troppo indulgenti su [...] permesso che se ne scrivesse et ragionasse, anzi havendone esso medesimo anco ragionato in tal modo che si è stimato che non ne seguisse minor ingiuria al prossimo, il quale dobbiamo amar come noi stessi, di quel che seguirebbe se alcuno chiamasse ladro un che si fosse convertito, o heretico un figlio o parente di heretico, ancorché esse fosse fedele et cattolico, ha come veramente so (*et Deus scit quia non mentior*) dato occasione di pensare che i giud[izi] fatti in questa materia et le informazioni date anco a tempo della congregazione non erano senza passione” (*Cong. 20b*, f. 206”).

<sup>10</sup> “Et penso che la detta lettera oltre esser di consolatione universale edificherà ciascuno et dichiarerà che nel petto suo non ha altro spirito che quel del Padre Ignatio et de gli altri Generali. Et si come basterà per lievar ogni sinistro concetto di Mondo, così spero che anco sarà efficace per fare che i cori della Compagnia si lascino governare dalla providentia paterna di Vostra Paternità, senza cercare mezzi humani indiretti, come alcuni per simile passione pigliarono non senza ferita notabile della carità fraterna” (*Cong. 20b*, f. 207”). The translation is by Cohen in his “Nation, Lineage, and Jesuit Unity,” p. 547.

in its freedom, and in the fact that it permits no preference for lineage, or for human concerns, which are vestiges of paganism, or for its own honor, such as not allowing oneself to be touched by others or to greet them, as is the custom of some infidels about whom Father Alessandro Valignano has recently written to Your Paternity.<sup>11</sup>

Commenting on this passage, Cohen writes that it “constitutes one of the most powerful critiques of the concept of purity of blood to be found in the vast literature—contemporary and modern—on the subject. Moreover, Possevino here for the first time links debates about nation and lineage to debates about the Jesuit missionary enterprise. Illustrious lineage depends on Jesuit ideals, not on blood. Possevino’s argument brings together all the diverse strands of Jesuit opposition to the idea of purity of blood, from Scripture, to the Ignatian tradition, to the ongoing development of Jesuit pastoral ideals, and finally to the common humanity and intelligence of his contemporaries in the Society.”

To make his point, Possevino turns in this part of his memorial to prove what Palmio would deny: the Jesuit tradition from Loyola to Borja indefatigably opposed any lineage discrimination. He begins with a portrayal of Ignatius, a foreigner in Rome:

Father Ignatius, [of] holy memory, who was Biscayan, knew the practice and nature of things in Spain. God had elected him, so that he become a model and ideal of all his successors. He knew best of all what he said in his *Constitutions* and thus their understanding must be perceived from his actions and from that prudent fortress, which he planted among humanly insurmountable difficulties [in] this Society. He was really very prudent and saint man, and a foreigner in Rome; he had [also] dealt with the Inquisition of Spain. Even though he ingeniously knew how much storm in those times it would have raised against the Society, he nevertheless felt that the spirit of God does not make favoritisms among people [Romans 2:11] and believed more in Jesus Christ than in earthly prudence. This idea remained carved in the minds of the Society and he shaped the Society in such a way that not even one thing moved him to

---

<sup>11</sup> “Si aggiunge che se si deve pigliare la regola della verità di questo fatto o dalle Constitutioni o dall’intelligenza loro o dall’esempio de Padri Generali passati o dalla disposizione della divina Provvidenza manifestata nella Scrittura santa, non si vede onde possa nascere questo timore in una Compagnia, il cui Istituto deve essere insino col sangue conservato nella sua libertà et che in lui non entrino quelle partialità di carne et bilanci humani, le quali sono propri vestigi di gentilità et di honor proprio, si che non osano toccarsi o salutarsi l’uno l’altro, come di alcuni infideli scrive hora a Vostra Paternità il Padre Alessandro Valignano” (*Cong. 20b*, f. 207<sup>v</sup>). The translation is by Cohen in his “Nation, Lineage, and Jesuit Unity,” p. 548.

alter it, knowing that *what God has joined together, let no one separate* [Matthew 19:6]. And the letters he wrote about this are known.<sup>12</sup>

Not much effort was needed to etch Loyola's anti-discrimination ideal into the mind of his direct successor, Diego Laínez, for he himself was of Jewish stock—his Castilian ancestors converted after the anti-Jewish pogroms of 1391, as we have seen in Chapter Two.<sup>13</sup> Possevino reminds that Ignatius employed him in all major enterprises, such as the foundation of many colleges in Sicily, the mission in [North] Africa, the Colloquy of Poissy, and the Council of Trent (which was attended by so many Spanish prelates), without “this vain fear [of people of Jewish lineage]” that characterizes the current Jesuit administration. The election of Laínez to the highest post in the Society that took place in the time of a strong anti-converso tempest in Spain and Rome was, to Possevino, a manifest sign that

God does not make any distinctions of nations, persons, or qualities, as far as his precepts are being observed and one walks rightly in front of his eyes, and that God wants to preserve the primeval status of the Society, to which he gave so many gifts, so that the early Society would serve as a model of the kinds of stones, with which the Society's construction should be made.<sup>14</sup>

---

<sup>12</sup> “Il P. Ignatio [di] santa memoria fu biscaino, sapeva per praxi et natura le cose di Spagna, era stato da Dio eletto perché fosse un modello et idea di tutti gli altri successori suoi, meglio di tutti sapeva quel che volse dire nelle sue Constitutioni et così l'intelligenza loro deve essere presa dalle sue attioni et da quella prudente fermezza, la quale piantò fra difficoltà humanamente insuperabili [in] questa Compagnia. Esso era prudentissimo et veramente santo, era forestiero in Roma, stato nell'Inquisitione di Spagna ancor che innocentemente sapeva quanta tempesta in quei medesimi tempi era stata eccitata contra la Compagnia, non di meno esso il quale sentiva che lo spirito di Dio no era accettatore di persone et che credeva più a Gesù Christo che alla prudentia terrena, seguì quel modo onde et esso restò scolpito negli animi della Compagnia et la ridusse in stato tale che niuna cosa lo mosse ad alterare il suo ordine, sapendo che Dio comanda *quod Deus coniungit homo non separet*. Et le lettere che intorno a questo scrisse sono note” (*Cong. 20b*, f. 207<sup>r</sup>). See also Cohen, “Nation, Lineage, and Jesuit Unity,” p. 549. The letters mentioned at the end of the quotation are those quoted above in Chapter Two.

<sup>13</sup> See Cohen, “Nation, Lineage, and Jesuit Unity,” p. 549, who believes Laínez was a first-generation Christian.

<sup>14</sup> “Seguì al P. Ignatio di santa memoria il P. Laynez, nel cui tempo avvennero quelle terribili tempeste che furono in Ispagna et a Roma mosse per questa materia, ma Dio Signore, il quale voleva che l'opera sua andasse inanti, si come era stata dall'eterna sua sapienza ordita se ne servì tanto, come fece nell'Europa et nell'Africa in fundare collegi di Sicilia et tanti altri, in predicare qui tanti anni dove erano tanti Spagnuoli signori et prelati nell'assemblea di Poyssi et nel Concilio di Trento, dove era, si può dire, tutta Spagna nei suoi prelati, però alcuna nota non gli apportò simile materia,

Francisco de Borja, Mercurian's direct predecessor, according to Possevino was another model of this kind of stones:

Even though he had much knowledge about lineage issues—he served at the court of Charles V—this servant of God never wanted to make this sort of distinctions, aware that the Society was not governed by other means than its proper spirit of God. And because *where is the Spirit of God, there is liberty*, he employed those means that God our Lord gave him.<sup>15</sup>

Just like his predecessors, Cartagena and Oropesa, Possevino could not omit the authority of the Pauline epistolography in his argument against the lineage discrimination. He recommends that those who harbor in their hearts such discrimination “should do some spiritual exercises on charity, on loving one's neighbor as oneself, and on the things that were said by Saint Paul in the First Letter to Corinthians.”<sup>16</sup> Thomas Cohen reads in Possevino's memorial other echoes of Paul's influence on his pro-converso approach. It can be seen “in the context

---

anzi come Dio lo volle Generale della Compagnia e il P. Ignatio di santa memoria, se ne serviva in tutte le principali imprese senza questo vano timore. Così Dio Signor nostro diede manifesti segni che si come detto haveva dieci persone di qualità tanto diverse o per lignaggio, o per essercitio, o per altro, poiché non fa quel serenissimo occhio di Dio distintione di alcuna natione, persona, o qualità, purché si osservino i suoi precetti et si camini rettamente inanti gli occhi suoi, così doveva conservarsi la Compagnia nel medesimo stato, *ut esset ad exemplar illius primitivae Societatis* a cui Dio comunicò tanti doni. [...] Così dispuse la divina sapienza da principio come in un modello de che pietre doveva essere l'architettura di questa Compagnia” (*Cong. 20b*, f. 208<sup>v</sup>). Possevino would devote far more words to his eulogy of Lainez in the subsequent memorial that we shall see below.

<sup>15</sup> “Al P. Borgia che si lungamente era stato in corte di Carlo Quinto, et il quale sapeva che cosa erano questi rumori di simile materia, erano molto noti tutti i motivi, i quali potessero cagionare vera alteratione, ma dall'altra parte come fedele servo di Dio, eletto canonicamente, si come gli altri sono stati al generalato, tanto è lungi che volesse fare queste distintioni, o che quando volesse fare predicare un Portoghese, o altri qui in Roma et a Papi et in Chiese nostre mandasse mai a dimandare come licentia in Portugallo o a giustificarsi o a scisarsi con Ambasciatori o con alt[ri] che sapendo che la Compagnia non si governava per altro che per il proprio spirito di Dio et che *ubi Spiritus Domini, ibi libertas*, liberamente anco usava de i mezzi che Dio Signor Nostro presentato gli haveva” (*Cong. 20b*, ff. 208<sup>v</sup>–209<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>16</sup> “Coloro i quali hanno in simile materia qualche avversione radicata nel loro core, dovrebbero fare alcuni exercitii spirituali sopra la carità, l'amare il prossimo come se stesso, et sopra le cose dette da san Paolo a Corintii nella prima” (*Cong. 20b*, f. 208<sup>v</sup>). Other fragments of Paul's First Letter to Corinthians that other pro-converso writers utilized, as we have seen in Chapter One, were: Cartagena's recommendation to give the weak neophytes the milk of love and generous breasts rather than solid food (1 Corinthians 3:2); Nicholas V's warning of schism born out of favoritism given to Jews over Gentiles (1 Corinthians 3:22); and his reminder of unity of the Christian church, regardless of ethnicity (1 Corinthians 12:12–3). We shall also see below how Alarcón recalls 1 Corinthians 1:24–6 to remind that Christ is God's wisdom for both Gentiles and Jews.

of Possevino's insistence on the efficacy of conversion and on the need for self-examination [...]. The memorial's argument on behalf of the New Christians may be read as a confirmation of Paul's prophecy, in the lesson on the olive branch, that the Jews will be even more disposed to embrace Christianity than other non-Christians. Beginning with his reference to [Paul's First Letter to the] Corinthians and continuing throughout the rest of the memorial, Possevino will argue that far from being a hindrance to the Society, Jesuits of Jewish descent are among the Society's most effective members."<sup>17</sup>

Indeed, the last statement, as we shall see below, is a sort of refrain in all Jesuit pro-converso texts. Possevino affirms that he could give many examples of the fruitful ministry being performed by Jesuits of Jewish stock, and—unlike Alarcón—he specifically quotes three names of Jesuits of Jewish descent to make his point: Manuel de Sá, Francisco Antonio, and Juan de Maldonado. We have already encountered Manuel de Sá on previous pages of the present book. Whereas Francisco Antonio is little known (Possevino mentions that he was a preacher at an imperial court), Juan de Maldonado played a significant role in the history of the early Society. He was born in 1533 in Casa de Reina (Badajoz, Spain) and entered the Society in 1562. Together with the converso Juan de Mariana, he was instrumental in founding the first Jesuit colleges in France. Maldonado, who authored authoritative commentaries on the four Gospels, was considered the father of modern positive theology. Acquaviva appointed him in 1581 a member of the committee on the *Ratio Studiorum*, but he died prematurely two years later.<sup>18</sup>

Further in his memorial, Possevino states that

The greatest fruits that have been gathered in Spain and in parts of the Indies have not been extracted without the work of such men [New Christians], and there are not lacking those [New Christians] in whom today there are found greater learning and virtue than in many others. And the mere hint or suggestion in Spain that such a distinction [between Gentiles and Jews] exists within the Society would be enough to remove the means of gathering fruit in more than half of Spain [...], where many

<sup>17</sup> See Cohen, "Nation, Lineage, and Jesuit Unity," p. 551.

<sup>18</sup> "Potrei aggiungere molti altri esempi vivi del frutto che si fa per i ministeri de tali anco al presente nella Compagnia, se Vostra Paternità non sapesse che oltre quei di Spagna, et di Maldonato in Parigi, de Francesco Antonio in predicare tanti anni all'Imperatrice, di Emanuele Saa in Milano, di molti altri lettori et predicatori altrove, et anco di altri di altre nationi che Vostra Paternità forse non conosce" (*Cong. 20b*, f. 208<sup>v</sup>).

principal officials at the court are of this [Jewish] stock and, offended by such a distinction, could contribute to the destruction or division of the Society, which, while professing to be holy, and to model itself after Jesus its leader, could ultimately be complicit in harming Jesus, and be society of the world rather than of Jesus.<sup>19</sup>

One should conclude, then, utilizing the rules for the discernment of spirits established by Ignatius, that the fear of Jesuits of Jewish ancestry is born out of a different spirit than God's, for the latter, which is contrary even to a shadow of schism, accompanied—Possevino repeats—the foundation of the Society, and the Jesuits should follow it as exemplary.<sup>20</sup>

The Jesuits who are driven, in Possevino's view, by the contrary-to-God spirit, which allegedly is that of the Devil, can be divided in three groups:

- (1) The first one is called, after the expression of a Spanish official who paid visit to Mercurian, "villanazzi." "These were men who were from poor, rural backgrounds, who were often despised by their colleagues from elite families, and who sought to make up through lineage for what they lacked in virtue and talent." In fingering these men, Possevino calls attention to the sharp socioeconomic divisions that existed within the Society during the first generations. At the same time, he calls into question the claims of the *villanazzi* to purity of blood. He suggests not that they are of Jewish origin but that if their lineages were to be examined, "there would be found more than four things—and perhaps in their own lifetimes—which would make them turn silent and grow red."

---

<sup>19</sup> "Come è stato riferito a Vostra Paternità, i maggiori frutti colti in Spagna et in parte nell'Indie si sono cavati non senza l'opera de tali et non mancano di quelli nelli quali hoggi di fra tali si trova, essendo maggiore dottrina et virtù che in molti altri. Et al sapersi solamente o l'odorarsi in Ispagna che si havesse tale distin[tio]ne nella Compagnia basterebbe per lievere il modo di fare frutto in più della metà di Spagna. [...] Oltre che Vostra Paternità deve ricordarsi di ciò che un[o] di più principali procuratori le ha detto, cioè che in corte del Re molti principali ufficiali et signori de più grandi toccano di questo, i quali se ben tacciono, potrebbero un giorno procurare qualche ruina o divisione alla Compagnia, perciocché non è dubbio che si terrebbero ancorché indirettamente per molto offesi per tal mezzo da una compagnia, la quale facendo tanta professione di santità et di conformarsi con Giesù suo capo, potrebbe al fine averdarsi con suo danno che sarebbe *societas mundi*, non *Jesu ben presto*" (*Cong. 20b*, ff. 209<sup>v</sup>). See also Cohen, "Nation, Lineage, and Jesuit Unity," pp. 553–4.

<sup>20</sup> "Tutto questo timore, a chi versa seriamente colla mente le regole del Padre Ignatio, dove trattava *de dignoscendis spiritibus*, nasce da altro spirito che da quel di Dio benedetto, poiché questo è sempre simile a se stesso et è conforme a quel che da principio fu dato alla Compagnia nascente, dalla cui qualità si ha in si importante negotio a pigliar essemplio che altre ombre o spiriti scismatici vestiti di qualsivoglia pelle esteriore o fomentati dallo spirito secolare del mondo cerchino di oscurare la luce della verità, et di Dio" (*Cong. 20b*, ff. 208<sup>v</sup>–209<sup>r</sup>).

- (2) The second group is “those men—for the most part Portuguese—who show signs of overweening ambition (because they feel themselves to have been deprived of offices in the Society on which their honor depends), or who reject the ‘eternal wisdom’ of the Society concerning the unity of all men.” Using bold strokes, Possevino declares that those among his colleagues who reject Paul’s affirmation that “there is no distinction between Jew and Greek” are questioning—“perhaps inadvertently”—the efficacy of baptism, and “are creating a new species of Cathars.”<sup>21</sup>
- (3) The third group consists of men who simply lack humility. Cohen has observed that “here Possevino singles out the Portuguese and brings his pastoral concerns to bear both on the Portuguese and Mercurian. He believes that the blindness of the Portuguese concerning their pernicious attitude towards New Christians has specific causes.”<sup>22</sup>

---

<sup>21</sup> This argument by Possevino is reminiscent of Alonso Cartegena’s *Defensorium*, where—as we have seen in Chapter One—the Bishop of Burgos accused the authors of the anti-converso legislation in Toledo (1449) of being heretics because they acted against Christian unity and undermined the regenerative character of baptism. Possevino will repeat this argument in another memorial that we shall analyze below.

<sup>22</sup> “Faccio quel che a Vostra Paternità è stato dimostrato da procuratori et da alcuno altro venuto ultimamente della corte, cioè che coloro i quali parlano in questa materia, si riducono (parlo di quei della Compagnia) a tre sorti di persone, o a villanazzi, per usare della sua voce, i quali, non havendo altro lustro di virtù, vanno mendicando dalla carne quello che se si andasse un poco esaminando e rivedendo loro i conti adesso, usando di quella fallace ombra di pretesto del ben commune di che si servono nell’esaminar gli avoli et bisavoli, si troverebbero più di quattro cose et forse nella loro stessa vita, le quali gli farebbono et tacer, et arrossire. Gli altri sono quei che *ut animalis et nescientes quae sunt spiritus Dei*, ancorché essi tocchino di questo, nondimeno *ut eluant hanc, qui nati sunt ex sanguinibus, non ex Deo, putant maculam*, si danno a ragionare contro questo, come et di quei di Portugallo et d’altri potrebbe dirsi: non avedendosi fra tanto che mentre pensano che in questo consta l’honore loro o danno segno di ambizione, dubitando di non havere honore come tanto evidentemente l’hanno dato alcuni di qualche Provincia per vedersi privi dell’administratione o finalmente non credono affatto né molto gustano quel che ha detto l’eterna sapienza della cui compagnia si nominano, cioè che *iam abluti estis, iam sanctificati estis*, et che nova creatura è quella che in conspetto di Dio è considerata et che *si vos filius liberaverit, vere liberi eritis*, et che appresso Dio non è distintione di Greco, né di Giudeo, la quale definitione introducendosi, oltre il dannarsi latentemente et forse invadatamente l’efficacia del battesimo et farsi una nuova specie di Catari, finalmente può generare *radicem amaritudinis quae inquinat multos*, et una reale divisione et per conseguente diminutione, se bene l’opinione pregiudicata d’alcuni fa sentire altrimenti fin tanto che la ruina più evidente non segua. Et all’hora non so quanto *erit bonum dicere non putaram*. . . I terzi son di quei che comunemente si sa che sono poco addentro dotati di humiltà poichè questa virtù se non è nel core et non nasce da carità, può essere spesso velame di malitia, et pelle, o cicatrice che copre la nascosta postema. Il che anco Vostra Paternità può havere molte volte considerato et a me più di una volta ha detto di alcuni i quali hanno mosso o trattengono questo veleno disseminato, de quali si sa in che credito sono o per conto di humiltà, o per conto dell’osservatione della disciplina et d’altro” (*Cong. 20b*, f. 209<sup>r</sup>). See Cohen, “Nation, Lineage, and Jesuit Unity,” pp. 554–5.



This sort of men offered three reasons to Possevino against his petition that Mercurian compose a letter on unity: (1) impediment to the common good, (2) concern of a few Portuguese, and (3) the desire not to extend the practice of admitting persons who bring dishonor upon the Society. To answer their objections, Mercurian's secretary boldly reiterates his argument that Jesuits of Jewish ancestry did contribute much to the common good and that Ignatius banned any "defamatory libels, which instead have been permitted to circulate both in writing and in hushed voices throughout the current [Mercurian's] generalate," such as that of the future assistant general, Manuel Rodrigues.<sup>23</sup> Possevino explicates that the latter is the most notable example of the anti-converso transformation—he was first an ally of the New Christians but became one of their most acerbic opponents within the Society. Possevino states that this transformation was a result of Rodrigues's decision to accommodate himself to the disposition he had discovered to exist in N [Palmio], even though all the "best Fathers" reject any distinctions based on lineage and understand that those who make such distinctions are driven by "mere passions."<sup>24</sup>

To Possevino's dismay, these passions played a significant role during the Third General Congregation [1573], during which the Portuguese lobby opposed the election of Juan Alfonso de Polanco as the new superior general, as we have seen in the previous chapter. Like Palmio, Possevino in his memorial assigns responsibility for the anti-Polanco conspiracy to the representative of the Portuguese delegation, Leão

---

<sup>23</sup> We have seen his anti-converso campaign, which was supported by Hoffaeus and Maggio, in the previous chapter.

<sup>24</sup> "La seconda causa del timore è per alcuni di Portugallo, il che Vostra Paternità ha alcune volte mostrato o quando predicò qui alcuno Portuguese in Roma, [...] penso esser bene di farne scusa coll'Ambasciatore et di scriverne fino in Portugallo. Il che fra le altre cose cagiono che da qual tempo in qua il P. Emmanuele Rodriguez il quale sino all'hora le haveva più volte scritto che non temesse niente di questo et che esso si trovava bene con tutti, et del P. Cipriano et di altri che l'amavano si servi molto, cominciasse dapoi ad acomodarsi all'humore che haveva scoperto esser in N. Et cosi seguendo il commune uso anco esso cominciò mostrare come molti hanno fatto di applaudire a N. in questo, con tutto che migliori Padri della Compagnia et *qui sentiunt d[e] Jesu et eius Societate in bonitate*, riconoscano et riconobbero fino al tempo della congregatione generale che questo era mera passione. Et so che al P. Antonio Wink è parso nuovo alcuna deliberatione di N. et mi disse che non desiderava visitare al presente et forse Dio Signor Nostro ha così voluto che chi andava nel suo cuore diritto et universale et secondo lo spirito del P. Ignatio, non tirasse sopra l'anima sua alcuna colpa per esser instrumento di quale apertiva o per meglio dire esclusione nella Germania, *in qua et multa sunt quae dicantur*, se si vuole bilanciare carnalmente il negozio" (*Cong. 20b*, f. 210<sup>r</sup>). See also Cohen, "Nation, Lineage, and Jesuit Unity," p. 556.

Henriques, who carried to Rome some letters from the king of Spain.<sup>25</sup> Leão utilized those letters in the papal court not only to campaign “with much zeal” against Polanco but also to push for legislation that would prevent any future election of a converso superior general. The Portuguese allied in their efforts, continues Possevino, to undermine the Jesuit *Constitutions*—for which they should be excommunicated—with the Italian Palmio, who pressed on the Italian Possevino “to do battle for his homeland Italy [by voting against a converso Spaniard, i.e., Polanco],” but Possevino, “as a Christian and one faithful to the Society,” refused to do so and reported the intrigue to Polanco [who as vicar general was presiding over the congregation].<sup>26</sup> Not only Possevino but also the entire congregation was in shock when they learned about the Portuguese conspiracy:

As the whole congregation was astonished and everyone fixed their eyes on the Portuguese as the perpetrators of this deed, the aforementioned Father [Leão Henriques], having now been touched in his conscience, knelt down publicly and asked for pardon, and said, “I am the cause of this.” But both in his own judgment and that of the congregation, he very clearly declared himself condemned. May it please God that he be absolved, and there not follow from the occurrence some sad consequence.<sup>27</sup>

---

<sup>25</sup> Palmio, as we have seen, was more precise in describing this episode of General Congregation 3: Leão Henriquez brought the letters not only from King Phillip, but first of all from King Sebastian and the Cardinal Infant of Portugal, which actually confirm Possevino’s argument about the anti-converso sentiment of the Portuguese: “Ma venendo più al particolare della cosa di Portugallo. Prima questo è un verissimo presupposito che antiqua inimicitia et disunione d’animi è fra alcuni di essi et Castigliani et che NNN non potevano tollerare, o forse per honore o per altro che alcun governo fosse in mano di detti Spagnuoli, sicome per lettere del P. Valignano, del P. Em[manuel] Rodriguez di molti Portughesi, del P. Alessandro Reggio, del P. Bernardino Ferrari che [...] all’India non può negarsi che hanno anco havuto quei medesimi et hanno contra Vostra Paternità, sicome le lettere soli attestano” (*Cong. 20b*, f. 210<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>26</sup> “Si sa che con quanto buon zelo et intentione potesse haversi, sicome dicevano nondimeno andavano direttamente procurando di far per mezzi humani impedimento che non si eleggessero Generali se non o tali o tali et a me l’hanno detto della quale cosa ciò che determinano i canoni o decreti. Vostra Paternità lo sa. Si sa che il P[almio] a più persone et particolarmente a me disse, *ut pugnarem pro patria*, mentre si trattava dell’informationi [...]. Il che io come Christiano et fidele alla Compagnia andai come cosa da me né udita né imaginata giamai a dire a qualche [che] era all’hora superiore. Or da chi venisse quella parola, da chi fosse sostenuto il detto huomo, da chi mi fosse mandato anco un altro, lo sa l’eterna verità, la quale non ha paura di temporali falsità o calunnie” (*Cong. 20b*, f. 210<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>27</sup> “Si sa che il P. Leone avedutosi della piaga da se fatta con suoi complici alla Compagnia, all’hora che fu commandato dal Papa che non si eleggesse alcun Spagnuolo, sicome tutta la congregatione restò attonita et gettò gli occhi sopra Portughesi, come

Contrary to what Palmio argued in his later memorial, Possevino interestingly associates this anti-constitutional attempt with the subsequent movement within the Society aimed to change its Institute. As we have seen in Chapter Three, however, the *memorialistas* movement was mainly composed of Spanish Jesuits, many of whom were undeniably conversos—which Possevino denies—and not Portuguese. Thomas Cohen summarizes this part of Possevino’s memorial as follows:

The pope’s intervention at the Congregation represents a key point in Possevino’s analysis of the stages of development of the New Christian problem within the Society. First, there existed an incipient anti-New Christian movement under Borja, but it was censured by the hierarchy; then came the Portuguese-led intervention in the 1573 election, which will continue to have the potential to create a schism within the Society if Mercurian does not write the letter of unity that Possevino is requesting or take some other comparably decisive action. Central to Possevino’s argument concerning the New Christians is that the Society must not adopt a policy of appeasing the Portuguese either concerning nationality or concerning lineage. Spain brings the same love and obedience to the Society as any other province. As for the New Christians, we have seen that Possevino believes that, in terms of their virtue and dedication, they represent an elite within the Society.<sup>28</sup>

The last part of Possevino’s 6,500-plus-word memorial is a list of fourteen detailed recommendations that somehow summarize the content of his text to Mercurian. What seems to be Possevino’s primary pre-occupation here is the risk that the Spanish Jesuit provinces might secede from the Roman centralized curia with the support of Spanish

---

autori di questo, il detto P. Leone all’hora tocco dalla coscienza, inginocchiatosi pubblicamente dimandò perdono et disse, ‘Io son causa di questo.’ Et così si offerse come fece di andare con alcuni altri al Papa a Frascati a cui gettandosi a piedi et lagrimando, cercò di ottenere che la congregatione fosse libera. Però et per giuditio suo et della congregatione assai evidentemente si dichiarò condannato. Così piaccia a Dio che sia assoluto et che non segua da quello essemplio alcuna trista conseguenza” (*Cong. 20b*, f. 210<sup>v</sup>). See also Cohen, “Nation, Lineage, and Jesuit Unity,” p. 558. Later in his memorial, Possevino also charges Leão Henriques with opposition to the employment of converso Jesuits in the missions in India, which was contradicted by the mission’s superior, Alessandro Valignano, “who aided by nothing more than the true spirit of the Society, overcame all those vane shadows and showed [...] that the ruin of the Society would most certainly follow if it were allowed to live with these fears” (*Cong. 20b*, ff. 210<sup>v</sup>–211<sup>r</sup>). See also Cohen, “Nation, Lineage, and Jesuit Unity,” p. 559.

<sup>28</sup> See Cohen, “Nation, Lineage, and Jesuit Unity,” p. 558.

lay government, which might result in the creation of a branch of the Society under the supervision of an independent commissary, as had happened many times in the history of other religious orders.<sup>29</sup> As we

---

<sup>29</sup> “Cioè che non si scriva o ragioni da particolari in alcuna materia che cagioni dissentione o divisione d’animi già che vede Vostra Paternità quale lettera et per qual via et scritta a suggestione di più principali theologi le è stata ultimamente mandata dall’Andalusia. Che la pazienza offesa non si vada assottigliando per tentare altre vie per dividere la Compagnia si come Vostra Paternità sa che avvenne fra minimi a Genova per alcune lettere procurate da alcuni di Spagna da loro Re, et qui in Roma della Religione Premostranense, il cui eletto generale per essere francese fu dal Re Filippo recusato. Che non si dia occasione a Spagnuoli di dire al Re et ad altri Principi che la cagione di volere altre nationi fra loro è perché sono state o heretiche o conversate fra loro, instituite o nate da Parenti heretici. Che un giorno per via del Re o di altri non propongano in una Congregatione Generale che per dett[a] causa non vogliano che si elegga Generale che sia disceso di heretici o sia stato heretico o habbia parenti tali o altra simile nota, delle quali basterà accennarne ogni minima per mettere ombra alla Inquisitione di Spagna. Che non si offeriscano al Re diversi memoriali acioché né Fiamengo per parecchi anni si faccia, allegando o naturale aversione da Spagnuoli o inclinazione a ribellarsi, o vero nota di heresia, o di amicitia et conversazione o parentado de tali. Il che in questi tempi non sarebbe difficile che un solo che fosse in Anversa o altrove facesse credere si come per via di un altro Re si è operato (ancorché con brutti modi) nella passata congregazione. Che non si cominci a fare apertura a fare particolari religioni di una sola la quale adesso habbiamo, si come avvenuto di altre Religioni che si trovano, chi osservanti, chi conventuali, chi capuccini [...] sotto pretesto et con qualche colore di volere vivere secondo Instituto della Compagnia interpretato et usato dal P. Ignatio di cui son[o] in questa materia diverse lettere in Ispagna et altrove. Che non si vada cercando le razze antiche di Portughesi, i processi et altre maledini lontane dallo spirito di Dio con vedere se quei che fanno del rigoroso in questa materia sono figlioli di schiave, se hanno havuto altra macchia, o anco peccato carnale. Che il medesimo non si vada vedendo di Siciliani, Sardi, et altri. Che non si alleggi che [es]sendo il pubblico usurario se non se pente fra un anno scomuni[...] et tenuto per heretico da canoni, non si alleggi che Genovesi et molti altri d’altre patrie [es]sendo discesi da tali non conviene che siano ammessi nella Compagnia o alti gradi in essa. Che non si vadano cercando che sono stati micidiali, basterà et altre tal cose, [es]sendo che tali molti sono nella Compagnia et molti di quei che si stimano legittimi non forse [...] per tacere altro. Che non si vada procurando di fare convocare Congregatione Generale come sa Vostra Paternità che pochi giorni son fu scritto da una persona principale ad un’altra principale. Il che era segno che haveva in petto altre cose che non si considerano forse. Che non si proponga un giorno al Re di Spagna che in tutti i suoi stati si pongano diversi di Spagna che almeno in parte amministrino, poiché i collegii sono cose più pubbliche che delle altre Religioni. Che finalmente no si dimandi come hanno altre Religioni di haver una volta uno ultramontano, un’altra un Italiano, o vero uno commissario perpetuo in Ispagna (il che adesso non sarebbe difficile forse di persuadere a Sua Santità per il [...] et significo di avere [...] Compagnia. Che finalmente non si tieni la comunicazione dell’aiuto di una natione all’altra, si come già per opera dei nostri è stato facile di procurare, supposto il timore humano che fin qui N. ha mostrato et il non andare all’incontro a tali inventioni le quali subito furono avisate dal P. Valignano all’arrivo suo in Portugallo et dapoi nell’India ha causato che già i Spagnuoli sono stati rivotati dal Giappone et

have seen in the previous chapter when dealing with the *memorialistas* movement, Possevino's warnings were fully grounded, but ignored by Mercurian, who soon removed Possevino from his office of secretary of the Society and sent him to remote Sweden. Possevino, however, did not give up his stubborn fight against the discrimination that reached its apex in the legislation of 1593. Five years after the promulgation of the *de genere* decree, he again grabbed his well-worn pen to write another passionate memorial. This time its addressee was Mercurian's successor, Superior General Claudio Acquaviva.<sup>30</sup>

Possevino's second memorial originated as a reaction to the anti-Jewish and anti-converso atmosphere in the Society of Jesus that was galvanized by the 1593 decree. The text begins with the author's lamentation about the way some Jesuits had been discussing, during their leisure time, either among themselves or with lay people, the conversion of Jews and their descendants to Christian faith. Possevino bluntly asserts that this kind of discussion is against the spirit of God. But even much more against that spirit is the licentious buzzing about those of Jewish descent who had been called by God to the Society of Jesus.<sup>31</sup>

The memorial's structure is built on these two accusations: (1) the first part is a traditional biblio-historical *excursus* on the place of Jews in the development of the Christian Church from the beginning to the times of Pablo de Santa María, and on the character of baptism that echoes the pro-converso writings we have seen in Chapter One; (2) the second one deals with the role of conversos in the Society of Jesus, upon which the 1593 decree inflicted many wounds. The text concludes with a surprising note on Mercurian's contribution to unity

---

dapoi non hanno voluto alcune nationi oltramontane allegando il dubbio dell'heresia et poco ha che diedero segno di non volere Italiani che governino nell'India, le quali cose se già non fossero seguite mentre si tace, et si condiscende a gli humori. Il che et è dannosissimo come vedrà in una scrittura che va con questa del P. Mirone et mai non è prima avvenuto, potrebbe forse pensarsi che le sopra scritte ragioni non havessero quel peso che veramente hanno" (*Cong. 20b*, ff. 211<sup>v</sup>-212<sup>r</sup>)

<sup>30</sup> For a very brief summary of this document, see Donnelly, "Antonio Possevino," pp. 10-1.

<sup>31</sup> "Non penso essere spirito di Dio il ragionar al modo col quale fanno alcuni di nostri nelle ricreazioni et anco coi secolari circa la conversione degli Hebrei e circa quei che di loro sono venuti alla fede Christiana. Et molto meno si stima esser spirito di Dio lo spalar di quei che alla Compagnia furono da Dio chiamati: il quale modo è fatto più licentioso doppo l'ultima congregazione generale" (ARSI, *Inst. 184/II*, f. 349).

among the Jesuits, which is in stark contrast to what Possevino had written to the latter in his first memorial. This move was probably aimed to make Acquaviva feel guilty for the different way in which he managed the converso problem, compared to his predecessors, Mercurian (unfairly) included.

Possevino's biblio-historical *excursus* is unsurprisingly well-developed, for its author was eagerly involved, as we have seen in Chapters Two and Three, in the Jesuit apostolate with Jews in Rome and influenced Pope Gregory XIII's decision to create a college of neophytes for training preachers to convert Jews in Italy and the Levant.

According to Possevino, nobody can deny that Christ founded the Church by unifying two peoples in one fold: Jews and the Gentiles, both of whom were chosen to guide it. This way no tongue should dare to call those who became Christians by the name of "Jews," or "Greeks," or "Scythians," or "Gentiles," for all are one in Christ [Colossians 3:11], despite their shared responsibility for the death of Jesus.<sup>32</sup>

Following the similar ecclesiological premises expressed in Cartagena's *Defensorium*, Possevino draws the Jewish soteriology with large strokes: God could not nullify his faith because of the Jews' unbelief [Romans 3:3], and instead chose them as apostles and disciples to "fertilize the world with Christian faith" and preside over the Church of Jerusalem after the city's destruction in the personae of fifteen archbishops, as Eusebius had narrated.<sup>33</sup>

---

<sup>32</sup> "Quanto alla Chiesa cristiana, nessuno è il quale possa pretender ignorarla che Christo nel congregarla di ogni natione *quae sub coelo est* et che essendo egli pietra angolare fece *utraque unum*; la onde prese poi de Giudei et de Gentili facendo degli uni et degli altri non solo un ovile ma *etiam* diò i pastori et dottori di lei, volendo insieme che poi che erano fatti sue membra, *nil iis damnationis esset quoniam erant in Christo Jesu*, ne fosse lingua sì, o incredula o temeraria insieme, la quale osasse nominar i già fatti cristiani, o Giudei, o Greci, o Schiti, o Gentili, ma *omnes unum in Cristo*. Pero quel infinita carità di Christo con tutto che i Giudei et Gentili havessero chi col procurarlo, chi con acconsentirvi, imbrattare di fresco le mani del suo innocentissimo sangue" (*Inst. 184/II*, f. 349<sup>r-v</sup>).

<sup>33</sup> "Non però volle che *incredulitas eorum fidem suam evacuaret*. Anzi, perché le sue strade sono lontanissime da quelle del mondo, fece con fatti che *superabundaret gratia, ubi abundasset delictum* et che la sua chiesa insino alla consummatione del mondo ricevesse da quattro venti ognuno che a lei venisse. Così eleggendo fra gli stessi Giudei dodici apostoli et, doppo il tradimento di Giuda, un altro apostolo pur stato Giudeo et, poi che ascese in cielo, S. Paolo oltre i settanta discepoli et alla voce di s. Pietro convertendosene molte migliaia dentro di Gerusalemme et fuori et crescendo per mezzo et degli altri apostoli et discepoli et di questi altri già convertiti il numero grandissimamente, Christo raccolse tanto seme che puòte spargersi per fecondar il

Naturally, the Jewish soteriology cannot be construed without exemplifying St. Paul's thought, to which Possevino dedicates the next paragraph. Despite Paul's assertions, like the one that Jews still had a veil set over their hearts [2 Corinthians 3:15], Paul in his choices of building the Christian Church could not contradict the voice of God who was calling other Jews, as he had called Paul himself to become "a vase of election" and apostle [*Acts of the Apostles* 9:15],

For one is the God who justifies circumcision by faith and foreskin through faith [Romans 3:30]. Therefore, just as through the offense of one, all men fell under condemnation, so also through the justice of one, all men fall under justification unto life [Romans 5:18]. Who will make an accusation against the elect of God? God is the One who justifies. Who is the one who condemns? [Romans 8:33–4].<sup>34</sup>

Like for Bishop Cartagena in his *Defensorium*, the most evocative example of God's justification of the Gentiles for Possevino is the episode from the Acts of the Apostles 10 that narrates how Peter's vision about the irrelevance of the Jewish dietary restrictions for his faith in Christ made him reveal God's election of Cornelius.<sup>35</sup>

---

mondo de fede christiana. Ebbe poi di tali convertiti in Giudea si particular providenza che quantunque Gerusalemme per gli altri che restavano impenitenti dovesse esser giustamente sovvertita, nondimeno non permise che *capillus de capite eorum periret*; ma avisatigli *che fugerent a facie arcus* si salvarono nella città di Pella. Così la legge del monte di Sion et la parola di Dio in tutte le parti del mondo (siccome fu predetto) uscì da Gerusalemme, la quale quantunque fosse distrutta, volle però chi del popolo convertito restassero pastori tratti dal giudaismo alla fede Christiana, la onde Eusebio mostra che era continuata di quindici arcivescovi di Gerusalemme dell'istessa natione" (*Inst. 184/II*, f. 349<sup>v</sup>).

<sup>34</sup> "Non mancarono anco agli apostoli di constituer in vari popoli del mondo vescovi, i quali erano stati chi giudei chi gentili. Né s. Paolo, benché fosse specialmente destinato alle genti, si guardò di eleggere degli uni et degli altri, ma colla regola o archipen[...]olo di Christo tirò insieme coi suoi in altro edificio del Christianesimo. Or chi gli avesse detto, Che cosa fai s. Paolo di codesti giudei, poiché tu stesso hai scritto che *velamen habent super cordibus* et chi le antiche profezie sopra la durezza loro debbano compirsi, et che non [...] assumersi *neophytus in fide* all'ufficio di tali prelature. Certo lo stesso apostolo gli avrebbe risposto chi può resistere a Dio chi gli chiama? Anco io vollì ricalcitrar contra lo stimolo et mi è convenuto farmi Christiano. Et Cristo stesso di me persecutore ha fatto un vaso di elettione et apostolo a tutto il mondo. *Deus qui iustificat circumcisionem ex fide et praeputium per fidem. E sicut per unius delictum in omnes homines in condemnationem, sic et per unius iustitiam in omnes in iustificationem vitae. Et quis accusabit adversos electus Dei? Deus qui iustificat. Quis est qui condemnat?* (*Inst. 184/II*, ff. 349<sup>v</sup>–350<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>35</sup> "Chi parimente avesse detto a s. Pietro che cosa vuoi far di questi gentili faccia del mondo, idolatri, pieni d'iniquità. Avrebbe da lui avuto per risposta ciò che egli udì da Christo. *Quod Deus sanctificavit, tu immundum ne dixeris, surge et tu, occide et manduca*" (*Inst. 184/II*, f. 350<sup>r</sup>).



Bypassing briefly the examples of ancient martyred popes of Jewish ancestry, such as Linus<sup>36</sup> and Evarist,<sup>37</sup> Possevino highlights the contributions of the Iberian Christians of Jewish stock “to the penetration of the New World by the Christian faith and to the reparation of the Old World” in the period closer to his own life, such as Julian, Archbishop of Toledo, and Pablo [de Santa María] of Burgos, Bishop of Cartagena and Burgos as well as chancellor at the court of King León. Thanks to the latter’s preaching many Jews spontaneously converted to Christianity, as Doctor Navarrus [Martín de Azpilcueta, 1491–1586] had testified.<sup>38</sup> It is true, affirms Possevino, that many Jews from Spain and Portugal “went back to their vomit,” for they had falsely converted in order to maintain their property and avoid abandoning their homeland and relatives. Yet he is hopeful that many of these can still become saints, “converting from the fear of slave to that of son and from the fear of death to religion,” as [John] Cassian [c. 360–435] had noted. Their relapse cannot justify the prohibition against admitting other conversos to the Christian faith. Otherwise, we should also give up every effort to convert pagans, since many of those who had converted in Asia, America, or Europe later abandoned Christianity and killed those who had converted them. The relapse of the latter is even graver, for they received grace, sacraments, and bigger gifts than the Jews did.<sup>39</sup>

---

<sup>36</sup> St. Linus is traditionally considered the successor of St. Peter as the bishop of Rome (r. 64/67–76/79).

<sup>37</sup> Evarist, as an example of a Jewish Christian, was mentioned by Cartagena in his *Defensorium* that we have seen in Chapter One.

<sup>38</sup> “Ma furono poi da Dio chiamati dal giudaismo et assenti al pontificato et oltre altri martiri, al martirio, Lino, Evaristo et se altri tali furono. Ma lasciando a parte ciò che potrebbe dirsi di quei dei seguenti secoli, vediamo se come anticamente Iddio volle che si procedesse con quello spirito così vicino alla presente età, ha voluto usarne, servendosi poi dalla Spagna et di Portogallo per far penetrar la fede christiana nel mondo nuovo et per ripararvi in qualche parte il vecchio. Et prima chiara cosa è che s. Giuliano, archivescovo di Toledo et molti dotti rabbini in lei si convertissero talmente alla fede che poi ridussero molti alla Christiana religione. Et Paolo borghese, il quale di giudeo divenne per gratia di Dio Christiano et il quale fu prima il vescovo di Cartagena et dapoi di Burgos et supremo cancelliere di Castiglia et del re don Leone, convertì alla predicazione quasi tutta la città di Burgos dal giudaismo in maniera che sicome nel libro 5 di suoi consigli scrisse il dottor Navarro, *sponte omnino sua baptismum suscipierunt, quoque descendentium nullum adhuc audivimus deviasse a fide catholica. Et quales* (soggiunge) *sunt multi qui sola Dei verbi efficatia sine ullo metu illato converti sunt et passim convertuntur*” (*Inst.* 184/II, f. 350<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>39</sup> “Che se altri poi sono ritornati al vomito, o piuttosto nascostamente sono stati pertinaci nella loro perfidia, quali sono stati molti fra coloro i quali in Portogallo o in Spagna in alcuni luoghi furono per forza costretti a ricevere esteriormente la

The second part of Possevino's memorial challenges another reason cited by some Jesuits for banning Jews from the apostolate and their descendants from the Society of Jesus: these men have forgotten with what kind of spirit God had wanted to found the Jesuits, who in their service to the New and Old World played a role analogous to the primitive Church. To found the Society, God chose ten people, most of them Spaniards: some of them were Old Christians, some New;<sup>40</sup> some noble, some ignoble, for God does not make favoritisms of persons [Romans 2:11]. Thus, the first superior general was an Old Christian, and his immediate successor a New Christian. Indeed, Diego Laínez—as Possevino had already abundantly written in his first memorial—was employed in many important missions by his predecessor, Ignatius of Loyola. Loyola, illuminated by God's light, followed God's will rather than human respect, for the Society was a universal body to serve the entire world and did not have some particular interests of a local religious order. Ignatius's spirit was reflected in the choice of General Congregation 1 to elect Laínez the new superior general, in spite of his own caveat that he might not qualify for the position due to his Jewish lineage.<sup>41</sup>

---

religione Christiana. Et questo fecero per conservare la roba o per non abandonar la patria e i parenti loro, questi non hanno luoco fra i veri convertiti; non più di quei che fintamente o si confessano o abiurano le heresie o per qualche falso rispetto entrano in famiglie religiose, coi quali la ragione vuole che molto circospettamente si proceda et che ci siano canoni et leggi, le quali prescrivano il modo o di tenergli lungi da noi o di dispensargli *ex causa* massime che anco di questi si trovano molti, che dal timor servile possono convertirsi in filiale e i convertiti per la paura della morte alla religione possano diventare santi, sicome mostra Cassiano. Ma si la ricaduta poi dovesse farli astener di procurare la salute o l'admissione degli altri, bisognerebbe senza dubbio per simile ragione lasciar tutta la cura della conversione della gentilitia, poiché tanti popoli et regni già convertiti dagli istessi apostoli dell'Asia et consequentemente da altri in Africa et nell'Europa ritornando indietro, uccisero che convertiti gli aveva. Bisognerebbe dico abbandonare ogni impresa di ridurre gli eretici, il peccato et l'offendicolo dei quali è più grieva (sicome disse s. Tomaso) di quel dei giudei, in quanto hanno ricevuto la gratia, i sacramenti et maggiori doni di loro" (*Inst. 184/II*, f. 350<sup>v</sup>). On Azpilcueta's relation to the Jesuits, see Maryks, *Saint Cicero and the Jesuits*, pp. 51–2, 58, 59, 66, 70, 82, 111–2, 145.

<sup>40</sup> As we have seen in Chapter Two, Laínez and Bobadilla were conversos, but so also perhaps was Rodrigues. Unfortunately, Possevino is here quite oblique, except for about Laínez.

<sup>41</sup> "Della Compagnia poi conviene dire che ella è stata da Dio secondo l'esempio della primitiva chiesa, dovendo ella servire per aiuto del vecchio et nuovo mondo. Perciò la divina sapienza di primi 10 eleggendo alquanti Spagnuoli i quali furono poi principali instrumenti di lei, volle che questi furono parte dei vecchi, parte de nuovi christiani, sicome anco parte nobili, parte ignobili, non essendo Dio accettator di persona. Et fatto il primo generale dei vecchi christiani, subito volle che si facesse il

God was not indignant, continues Possevino, seeing the work of other New Christians in the Society, such as that of Alfonso de Polanco of Burgos (which is a city that Loyola must have known well, being close to his native Guipúzcoa).<sup>42</sup> He was secretary of the entire Society during the tenures of the first three superiors general [and Possevino's direct predecessor] and was the second most important person in the Order. Possevino had already dedicated much space in the 1576 memorial to Polanco, when dealing with the conspiracy against him during General Congregation 3. In Possevino's view, the Society's openness to admit and help every person whom God called was the reason why the Jesuit Order was so popular and requested by so many lay rulers. Possevino repeats again that the Iberian Jesuits of Jewish ancestry excelled in their learning as major teachers in Italy, France, Germany, and elsewhere. Their books had been and will be of great help, especially against the heretics. God called others for martyrdom, such as the Portuguese Pedro Ramón,<sup>43</sup> who joined in heaven other

---

seguinte dei nuovi, di cui si era anco servito il P[adre] N[ostro] Ignatio sempre, come quel che prima et meglio di tutti haveva ricevuto lume dal cielo per conoscere che il voler di Dio si doveva anteporre ad ogni rispetto humano, non caminandosi in una religione che doveva essere universale per aiuto di tutti nel modo che per particular honor o interesse del mondo caminano altre, o catedrali o private, religioni. Così soleva egli dire che la Compagnia era molto obbligata al P. Giacomo Laínez, nato però in Almanzano di padre quale si sa. Il quale P. Laínez eletto poi in generale, et esso ricusandolo con accennar anco ingenuamente il suo nascimento, la congregazione unita di quei primi padri che venuto avevano il sincero spirito della Compagnia, giudicò nel cospetto di Dio frivola ogni obiezione la quale nascesse dalla consideratione di simili rispetti del mondo. Così avendo il detto padre servito prima in Italia, dove anco nella repubblica di Venezia fondò il collegio et la prima casa professa che vi sono, et essendo stato nella guerra di Africa indefesso, et nella tempesta del mare intrepido, et di somma edificazione, et avendo poi fondato vari collegi in Sicilia dove guadagnò l'animo di quel vicerè Giovanni di Vega, servi poi et di secondo generale al nostro ordine et di difensore della fede in Francia contra gli eretici et di pilastro nel concilio di Trento et di perpetuo predicatore insino alla morte. Nei quali tempi non mancò di essere desiderato da Marcello Cervino, il pontefice, per consultare le cose di tutto il papato et di esser voluto far cardinale da Paolo IV, et di esser chiamato da cardinali nel conclave per comporre i dispareri i quali troppo lungamente disservivano la creatione del papa, che poi fu Pio IV, et di esser anco da alquanti cardinali prima di detta creatione proposto per farlo papa" (*Inst.* 184/II, ff. 350<sup>r</sup>-351<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>42</sup> By this statement Possevino seems to suggest that Loyola must have known Polanco's converso background. A hint that this is true may come from our investigation in Chapter Two, where we noticed that a Vives's disciple, Álvaro de Maluenda from the converso clan in Burgos, to which Polanco's grandmother belonged, was also Loyola's acquaintance in Paris.

<sup>43</sup> Pedro Ramón was actually from Saragossa, where he was born in 1549. He entered the Society in Alcalá de Henares in 1570 and was ordained priest three years later in Coímbra. He was master of novices in Goa since 1576 and in Japan 1578-88.

martyrs, among them Rodolfo Acquaviva, a nephew of the addressee of the present memorial.

Possevino concludes this part of his memorial by stating that if a man knows the [indiscriminatory] spirit with which God founded the Church and instituted the Society of Jesus—which he has described so far—it is easy to conclude that the reasoning of those Jesuits whom Possevino criticized as jeopardizing their unity at the beginning of his text would never have been accepted by Father Ignatius because of its harmfulness to the body of the Society and to the salvation of the neighbor.<sup>44</sup>

The inability to foresee how grave and incurable this harmful discriminatory reasoning is for the Society's body, writes Possevino, explains finally why some Jesuits are engaged in prejudiced and mocking anti-converso conversations. There are four more precise aspects of the mentioned harm resulting from such behavior: (1) sedition and arguments among confreres caused by the mean fingering of some respected and beloved Jesuits as Jews, which is against the Jesuit Constitutions that punish as plague those who engage in such acerbic reciprocal biting in the Society;<sup>45</sup> (2) the profound anger inflamed by lineage hunting characterized by endless genealogical digging in search of heretics, which makes “the Society divided into Jerusalem and Samaria” and to which the Spaniards object, saying, for example, that the French Albigenian heresy is 300 years old and has been not

---

He translated into Japanese the converso Luis de Granada's *El Compendio de la Guía de la Fe* (Amakusa, 1592) and *Introducción al Símbolo de la Fe* (Nagasaki, 1611). He died in Nagasaki (not as a martyr, though) in 1611 (see Fejér, *Defuncti*, 2:190; *DHCJ* 4:3289; and Donnelly, “Antonio Possevino,” pp. 10–1).

<sup>44</sup> “Dalle quali cose tutte conoscendosi con quale spirito habbia Dio proceduto nel fondare la sua chiesa et nell'instituire la nostra Compagnia, sarà facile il giudicare se alcuni procedendo con contrari concetti et ragionando in modo che giammai non sarebbe stato permesso da N[ostro] P[adre] Ignatio, giovino o nocciano all'edificio nostro et alla salute dei prossimi. Che le tante lacrime et penitenze contro ogni minima regola al P. nostro Ignatio, quante pensiam che costasse quella in che consiste l'unione e il nervo principale della Compagnia” (*Inst. 184/II*, f. 351<sup>v</sup>).

<sup>45</sup> “La prima ferita è quella che nasce da chi semina seditione et risse *inter fratres*, la quale è tanto più grande quanto s'infamano le centinaia per non dire le migliaia di uomini chiamati da Dio a questa vocazione, computandosi quei che sono andati al cielo. Che si ingiuria e il porre sospetto che uno non sia Cristiano, quanta sarà in una religione tali il nominar i Christiani religiosi con dispregio et acerbità giudei. Et qual rispetto o pace interna potrà esser giamai mentre si mostrano a dito coloro i quali dallo spirito vero della Compagnia erano rispettati, amati et impiegati debitamente. Le *Constitutioni* poi castigando giustamente et dovendo *tanquam pestos arcere talos a societate*. Chi di questa maniera ragiona o chi dia occasione perché se ragioni in tanto pregiudicio altrui, come si eseguiranno [...] ma senza dubbio *si ivicem mordimus, ab invicem consumemur et omne regnum in se divisum disolabitur*” (*Inst. 184/II*, f. 351<sup>v</sup>).

eradicated yet;<sup>46</sup> (3) the offense to the many New Christian founders and financial supporters of Jesuit colleges in Spain and Portugal, which testify to their infamy;<sup>47</sup> and (4) the depreciation of the Society by lay and ecclesiastical rulers because of this bitterness reigning among the Jesuits, which results from considering New Christians to be profane.<sup>48</sup>

Antonio Possevino concludes his memorial to Acquaviva by repeating his thesis from the previous memorial, that the wounds he has just mentioned already could be foreseen during General Congregation 3, which elected Mercurian as the new superior general. Mercurian was expected to affirm that the variety among the Jesuits was the foundation not only of the Society's conservation and vigor but also of its promotion. Indeed, after his election Mercurian beseeched the Jesuits to embrace each other by saying, "You all are brethren and sons of the same vocation. Thus there is no Poland, no Spain, no Germany, no France, but one Society, one God in all, all in one Lord Jesus Christ, whose members you are."<sup>49</sup> Possevino proved, however, in his first memorial,

---

<sup>46</sup> "La seconda ferita è che si è aperta la porta et accesa una fiamma interiore negli animi di molti per esaminarli le progenie altrui, se sono nati di heretici, se essi lo sono stati, se furono i padri o avoli loro inquisiti, si per questo fuggirono dai loro stati, se favorissero gli eretici, se i lor padri e avoli sono stati o sono antichi usurari, se nati di schiavi o Turchi o apparentati con chi ne sia nato, se discesi da schismatici o essi nutriti nello scisma, se bastardi o discesi da tali et si in altra maniera notati, colle quali cose se mai saranno o proposte a nuove congregazioni sotto i titoli di offendicoli o lungamente saranno fomentate da altri col far della Compagnia Gierusalemme et Samaria, *quomodo Societas poterit* consistere oltre che mentre vive la causa di tali concetti che meraviglia è se si piglia occasione con principi di far che non si pigliano ormai altri dei nostri che dei propri sudditi. So io che [es]sendo rimproverato a Spagnuoli da alcuni Francesi questa nota di nuovi Christiani, essi risposero che già più di 300 anni sono che l'eresia degli Albigenesi nacque in Francia, la quale mai non si potuta diradicare" (*Inst. 184/II*, ff. 351<sup>v</sup>-352<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>47</sup> "La terza ferita è che molti in Spagna, in Portogallo et altrove, chi erano di nuovi Christiani avendo o fondato o aiutato a fondar la Compagnia e i collegi nostri, possono tener per affronto non solo che i loro siano esclusi dall'esser in lei ammessi, ma insiem abbiano inanti gli occhi le case, le chiese per segno o nota d'infamia, li quali aiutarono a fabbricare" (*Inst. 184/II*, f. 352<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>48</sup> "La quarta ferita è che non tutti saranno a segno per tacere con i principi et coi vescovi et coi popoli, si coloro che tengono per profani quei che in alcun modo fossero nella Compagnia discesi da Christiani nuovi, siano essi manifestati o per nati di eretici o di altra maniera sicome sopra si è detto, et lasciandosi questa amaritudine sparsa nei principi di essa Compagnia, *et quis erit finis?*" (*Inst. 184/II*, f. 352<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>49</sup> "Però savissimamente N.P. Everardo poi che fu eletto generale et lungamente in quella congregazione si preveddero gli incurabili danni che nascerrebbero da questo modo di procedere, ragionò a lei con efficacissime parole in materia dell'unione degli animi, nella quale avendo detto che più che nella moltitudine o dottrina consisteva

how Mercurian's actual policy contradicted his desire, expressed in the quoted speech, for the union of hearts in the Society of Jesus.

During the twenty-year period that separates the two memorials of Possevino, two other condemnations of the 1593 decree were composed: one by Diego de Guzmán, another by Pedro de Ribadeneyra.

### *Diego de Guzmán*

We have already told the story of Guzmán's vocation in Chapter Two, when discussing his relation to the converso Gaspar de Loarte. There we also brought up his testimonies about Ignatius of Loyola's and his envoy Jerónimo Nadal's adamant non-discrimination policy in admitting candidates of Jewish stock, whose most illustrious example was Giovanni Battista Eliano.

Guzmán's 2,300-word letter was apparently sent to Pedro de Ribadeneyra,<sup>50</sup> but its style suggests that it was a proposal of a memorial to be forwarded to Superior General Acquaviva: it requested the abrogation of the *de genere* decree. The text has the same structure as Alarcón's: it is divided in two parts, the first of which lists six ways in which the spirit of the 1593 decree differed from the early Jesuit practice and the *Constitutions*. In addition to the first reason we have already seen in Chapter Two, Loarte's closest friend cites the obvious unpopularity of the decree among the Jesuits,<sup>51</sup> many of whom are very important and known for their virtues, learning, and wisdom. The daily experience shows how the implementation of this decree creates in the Society an occasion for many ills, such as jealousies and discords, contentions and alterations, which eventually lead to the loss of peace, unity, and true love that Jesus Christ left as precept to his Apostles during the Last Supper.<sup>52</sup>

---

non solo la conservazione et vigore ma anco la promotione della Compagnia. Al[la] fine scongiurò tutti per la misericordia di Christo che strettamente la riabbracciassero, soggiungendo per fine queste istesse parole, *Omnes enim eiusdem vocationis, et fratres et filii estis. Itaque nulla sit Sarmatia, nulla Hispania, Germania nulla, nulla Gallia, sed una Societas, unus in omnibus Deus, omnes in uno Domino Jesu Christo, cuius membra estis*" (*Inst. 184/II*, f. 352<sup>v</sup>). See also Libri Archivi Collegii Dillingani, in Arch. Prov. Germ. Sup., Mscr. C1, ff. 9–10.

<sup>50</sup> See ARSI, *Instit. 186e*, ff. 353–8.

<sup>51</sup> Acquaviva was strongly convinced of the opposite, as we have seen in Chapter Three.

<sup>52</sup> "Y se ve cada día que todos comúnmente bien de este decreto, diciendo que se tiene experiencia cierta que dondequiera que hay este tal decreto, se ha visto y se ve

The third and fourth reasons echo again Alarcón's memorial: after the promulgation of the decree, many influential and valued Jesuits, whose work brought many fruits in the Society, left the Order. Some of them left even though they were not required to do so by the decree; but they were afraid that the gathering of information about their background would jeopardize their honor. Others, who were forced to leave because of their lineage, which had never bothered anybody before, did so in spite of their notoriety as very gifted persons both in virtues and learning, through whom the Lord brought much fruit among both the faithful and heretics.<sup>53</sup>

Guzmán's fifth reason is a warning about enmities and other inconveniences that will result from lineage investigations that could produce false testimonies. It had already happened in some military orders and university colleges and certainly will happen in the Society, which was founded to remedy all sins and every occasion that would lead to them. How can the Jesuits help and console many persons who are affected by this situation, if persons know that the Society itself has produced such a decree?—asks Diego de Guzmán rhetorically.<sup>54</sup>

The last reason articulated in the first part points out that in order to pursue its mission of helping people in many parts of the world, the Society needs many good subjects. Thus, Father Ignatius wrote down

---

una grande ocasión de muchos males como son discordias y envidias, contenciones y mutaciones, y finalmente perderse la paz y unidad verdadera y caridad que Jesús Cristo nuestro Señor nos dejó por único precepto suyo, como lo dejó a sus santos apóstoles la noche del jueves santo, cuando se despidió de ellos" (*Instit.* 186e, f. 355v).

<sup>53</sup> "La tercera razón es ver que después que hay este decreto se han retirado muchos sujetos que tienen partes muy señaladas y de grande estimación y que fueran muy estimados y de gran fruto en la Compañía; y aunque no les tocara a algunos de ellos ser excluidos por este decreto, mas por no poner su honra en peligro, que con las informaciones suele acontecer a muchas personas, por esto se retiran afueras. La cuarta saber que hemos tenido en la Compañía algunas personas muy señaladas en muchos dones de nuestro Señor así de virtudes como de letras y dignidad en la misma Compañía; y que han sido muy estimados, dondequiera que estuvieron, por el gran fruto que por medio suyo hizo nuestro Señor entre fieles y herejes; y se sabe que les tocaba tener parte de este linaje, lo cual nunca dio a nadie ocasión de ningún escándalo" (*Instit.* 186e, ff. 355v–356f).

<sup>54</sup> "La quinta es saber que en las informaciones que se hacen para los que pretenden las encomiendas de religiones militares y también para los colegios que hay en las universidades suelen suceder de ellas muy graves escándalos y falsos testimonios y enemistades y otras muchas inconvenientes que abrazan gran multitud de gente; cuanto más podemos tener por cierto que sucederá esto en la Compañía y con más razón, pues la ha fundado nuestro Señor para quitar y remediar todos los pecados y ocasiones de donde ellos proceden; y como podrán los nuestros ayudar y consolar a muchas personas a quienes sucede algún escándalo acerca de esta materia, si se sabe que tenemos en la Compañía este mismo decreto" (*Instit.* 186e, f. 356f).



what good characteristics the candidates should have. Now, many people meet these requirements but fail the lineage background check. Consequently, the Society loses many subjects of this kind, while just one of them could gain many others. Thus, “by losing one grain, we lose a great harvest,” Guzmán observes.<sup>55</sup> To illustrate his point, Guzmán interestingly brings here an example of a Jesuit not of Jewish but Morisco lineage, by whom “nobody was offended.” His name is [Juan de] Albotodo,<sup>56</sup> and he is presented as an indefatigable worker for the people of Granada, who were “edified by seeing that our Lord had taken such a rose amid the thorns” and who supported him with thousands of ducats that he distributed among the poor of the city. So, when he died, everybody felt as if his or her own father had died.<sup>57</sup> Diego de Guzmán concludes this part by praying that these and many other reasons will persuade the superior general to abrogate, or at least mitigate, the decree, which could be done, he suggests, by the pope, without the burden of convoking a general congregation.<sup>58</sup>

---

<sup>55</sup> “La sexta, hay necesidad en la Compañía de buenos y muchos sujetos para proveer a tantos y diversos asuntos que abraza para ayudar las ánimas en tantas partes del mundo y para esto ordena nuestro Señor por medio del nuestro bendito padre Ignacio las partes que han de tener los que se han de admitir en la Compañía. Ahora se ve claramente que hay muchos que tienen todas las partes que son menester, mas les faltará sola aquella; y así se priva de los tales sujetos que uno solo de ellos pudiera ganar a muchos, y perdiéndose un grano se pierde una gran mies” (*Instit.* 186e, f. 356<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>56</sup> Juan de Albotodo (1527–78) was born into a Morisco family from Granada. He worked among the Moriscos of his native city, using Arabic. His success convinced his superiors to establish a Jesuit house and school in the Morisco quarter of Albaicín, where he operated with other Jesuits for a decade until the Morisco rebellion in 1568–70. Subsequently he worked in Seville, where he died. His funeral testified to the great esteem that the citizens had for his work (see *DHCJ* 1:38–9). Guzmán himself was from Seville and moved back there nine years after Albotodo’s death (1587), which explains why he would choose the latter as an example here. On Albotodo’s work in Granada, see Coleman, *Creating Christian Granada*, pp. 156–7.

<sup>57</sup> “Tengamos en la memoria el gran fruto que hizo el Padre Albotodo que era del linaje de los moriscos de Granada el cual hizo maravillas, dondequiera que estuvo, en ayudar las ánimas y socorrer infinitas necesidades espirituales y corporales especialmente en [...] y la tenía toda en su mano. Y aunque todos sabían que él era de aquel linaje, ninguno se ofendía por ello, antes se edificaban viendo que nuestro Señor había sacado una tal rosa de medio de las espinas y le daban muchos millares de ducados que distribuyese entre muchos pobres y obras pías de la ciudad. Y así cuando nuestro Señor se lo llevó, fue tanto el sentimiento de todos, como si cada uno perdiera su propio padre” (*Instit.* 186e, ff. 356<sup>r-v</sup>).

<sup>58</sup> “Y si por estas razones y por otras muchas que hay muy eficaces fuese persuadido nuestro Padre General que este decreto se abrogase, o a los menos se moderase, no excluyendo a otros que los que el decreto común excluye para ser sacerdotes, mas para coadjutores se puedan recibir, esto podría Su Paternidad concluir tratándolo con Su

The second part of Guzmán's letter-memorial takes the form of an appendix that contains a list of ten brief points. They present inconveniences that the *de genere* decree creates in the Society. The first one, which would be picked up also by Alarcón, points out a big risk of using lineage as a hidden excuse to dismiss someone from the Order.<sup>59</sup> Guzmán seems to be surprised by the fact that the decree must be observed outside Spain, even though elsewhere the issue of lineage is nonexistent—for example, in Rome, where a famous Dominican preacher, known as “the Jew,” is much esteemed for his doctrine and grace of preaching. (This preacher had been baptized along with his father after he had been catechized in a Jesuit house in the time of Ignatius.) Besides, even in Spain, other religious orders do not have such a decree, and the Dominicans observe it only in some convents and with limitations.<sup>60</sup>

Repeating what he had already written in the first part, Guzmán calls the witness of many grave people “of lineage” who are scandalized by the promulgation of such a decree in the Society, blaming its [general] congregation for having been presided by the demon.<sup>61</sup> Another scandalous and divisive inconvenience can be created during the examination for admission, if a superior is “of lineage” and has to bar a candidate

---

Santidad del papa. Y así no sería menester que hubiese congregación general por los muchos inconvenientes que hay en venir a Roma de tantas provincias, mayormente en estos tiempos todos puestos en tantas guerras y temores de haber las mayores en todas partes. Ordene nuestro Señor lo que el sabe que mas conviene para mayor gloria suya y bien de esta mínima Compañía. Amen” (*Instit.* 186e, f. 356<sup>v</sup>).

<sup>59</sup> “Sucede muchas veces ser menester despedir algunos de la Compañía según lo mandan las Constituciones por diversos casos y defectos que tienen o han tenido. Y habiendo ahora este decreto, hay gran peligro de escándalo que se diga que por el linaje se despiden; y así se impida el [...] por mucho que convenga para el bien de la Compañía que se vaya” (*Instit.* 186e, ff. 356<sup>v</sup>–357<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>60</sup> “Porque este decreto no solo toca a España, mas a las otras naciones donde no se suele hacer caso del linaje, sino que los reciben muy fácilmente, si tienen las otras buenas partes, como por ejemplo en Roma hay un predicador de santo Domingo que llamen el hebreo y que se bautizó junto con su padre y se catequizó en nuestra casa profesa en tiempo de nuestro Padre Ignacio, el cual es muy estimado en todas las ciudades de Italia por su doctrina y gracia de predicar. Pues si por allá y en otras partes ha de ser guardado este decreto, necesariamente ha de suceder escándalo notable pues las otras religiones no lo tienen en España. Lo tienen los padres de s. Domingo en algunos conventos, mas con mucha limitación, como es que si uno es caballero aunque le toque por otra parte ser del otro linaje no le impide nada” (*Instit.* 186e, f. 357<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>61</sup> “Que se sabe que personas muy graves en dignidad y letras y linaje se hayan escandalizado por este decreto y dicho abominaciones de la Compañía, como que el demonio presidía en aquella Congregación y cosas semejantes” (*Instit.* 186e, f. 357<sup>r</sup>).

because of his lineage.<sup>62</sup> That is why Spanish families do not want to send their sons to Jesuit colleges, being afraid that, should they discover vocation and want to enter the Order, they would expose themselves to embarrassment, as is already happening.<sup>63</sup> Sometimes, though, such families insist that the Society admit their sons, as in the grotesque case Guzmán quotes: “We have heard that somewhere, because the Jesuits did not receive somebody of this lineage, the relatives arrived masked in the night and threatened to kill the Jesuits if they did not admit their son, and the Jesuits were forced to do so for the fear of death.”<sup>64</sup>

Conversely, there will be people without vocation to the Society who will want to enter only because they want to be considered of pure lineage.<sup>65</sup> Thus, the Society becomes unavoidably abhorred not only by “the people of lineage” but also by many who are not but who are often bound to them by ties of friendship or blood. Consequently, the Society is seen as adverse, for it was founded to embrace and console all kinds of people.<sup>66</sup> Guzmán again regrets, then, that the Society closes its doors to the people who are most excellent in virtues and letters but cannot be admitted to the Order solely because of their lineage, even though they have vocation. Vice versa, the Society opens the door to less capable people just because they possess one thing that the others do not have.<sup>67</sup>

---

<sup>62</sup> “Que hay ocasión grande dentro la Compañía de haber escándalos y cizaña. Como será, si hubiese de los superiores que les tocase algo de aquel linaje y fuese menester hacer examen de algunos que pretenden entrar, puede decir, ‘Eres tu superior y tienes parte de este linaje y buscas me a mí si tengo algo’” (*Instit. 186e, f. 357<sup>v</sup>*).

<sup>63</sup> “Nuestros no querían enviar sus hijos a nuestros colegios por miedo que si tuviesen vocación y queriendo entrar, no los reciban y queden afrentados, como ya se ha sabido que acontece esto” (*Instit. 186e, f. 357<sup>v</sup>*).

<sup>64</sup> “Ya se ha sabido que en algunas partes por no haber recibido alguno que le tocaba algo de este linaje, han venido de noche sus parientes enmascarados y han amenazado de matar a los nuestros, si no lo reciben, y ha sido menester recibirlo por miedo de la muerte” (*Instit. 186e, f. 357<sup>v</sup>*).

<sup>65</sup> “Sucederá que algunos que aunque no tengan vocación a la Compañía cual sea verdadera, sino por ser tenidos por limpios de linaje quieran entrar” (*Instit. 186e, f. 357<sup>v</sup>*).

<sup>66</sup> “Necesariamente se hace la Compañía odiosa a gran multitud de gente no solo a los que les toca de aquel linaje, mas también a otros muchos aunque no les toque nada, porque siempre hay de los que tienen amigos muy íntimos que les toca y también a otros que tienen parientes y muy cercanos que les toca, de manera que abraza esta ocasión de odio y de aversión una gran multitud de universidades y calidad de gentes, lo que es escándalo que todos podemos ver, habiendo nuestro Señor fundado la Compañía para abrazar y consolar a toda suerte y calidad de personas” (*Instit. 186e, f. 357<sup>v</sup>*).

<sup>67</sup> “Se cierra la puerta a personas muy señaladas en mucha virtud y letras y autoridad y dignidad que, aunque tengan vocación de entrar en la Compañía, si [...] les

Guzmán concludes his draft of the memorial by saying that even Cardinal Archbishop of Toledo and Inquisitor General Gaspar de Quiroga considered the Society dishonored by promulgating a law that bars from the Society not only priests of lineage but also lay brothers of the kind.<sup>68</sup>

Diego de Guzmán must have written his memorial from Seville sometime between the promulgation of the 1593 decree and his death in 1606, just two years before the decree's limitation that he fought for. He wrote it to Pedro de Ribadeneyra not only because of the bond of friendship that tied them but also because the latter was known to have good connections at the court in Madrid, through which he might have been able to pressure Acquaviva. At any rate, Ribadeneyra himself engaged in a campaign that targeted the 1593 decree, employing some of the arguments offered by Guzmán.

### *Pedro de Ribadeneyra*

The most cohesive reaction of Pedro de Ribadeneyra to the purity-of-blood discrimination in the Society of Jesus is contained in his memorial under the title, *Las razones que se me ofrecen para no hacer novedad en el admitir gente en la Compañía* [The reasons that I think of for not making any change regarding the admission to the Society], which is the only text of the kind that was published in its entirety.<sup>69</sup> We have already seen parts of this text in Chapter Two, when quoting the instances of Loyola's desire to be a Jew by blood and instances of the adamant condemnation by early Jesuits (Láinez and Nadal) of such a discriminatory policy as "opposite to the spirit of God."

---

toca alguna cosa de tal linaje y se le abre esta puerta a otros que sean muy menos que los otros en todas estas partes por no tener algo de lo que tienen los otros" (*Instit.* 186e, f. 358<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>68</sup> "Se sabe muy cierto lo que sintió en esto el Cardinal Arzobispo de Toledo, Inquisidor General don Gaspar de Quiroga, que fue que en lugar de ganar honra se ha la Compañía deshonorado con este tal decreto, cerrando la puerta no solo a los sacerdotes, mas también a los coadjutores, lo cual apenas se puede guardar en los colegios de las universidades, cuanto menos en una religión como esta. Y lo mismo sintió el obispo santo desear, don Francisco Sarmiento de buena memoria" (*Instit.* 186e, f. 358<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>69</sup> ARSI, *Instit.* 184 I, ff. 292<sup>r</sup>-295<sup>v</sup>; and *Mon Rib.* 2:374-84. The particularity of this text comes not from the author's advanced age, as Anna Foa has suggested in her "Limpieza and Mission" (p. 306), but from the author's converso background and from authoritativeness within the Society.

Ribadeneyra begins his memorial by bluntly affirming that the lineage discrimination constitutes a substantial change in the Jesuit *Constitutions*, which do not exclude those of Jewish stock; even Loyola's anti-converso relative, Antonio de Araoz, had to succumb willy-nilly to their authority. Yet, Araoz must have been quite stubborn in his prejudice, for Ribadeneyra quotes two letters that Loyola's successor, Diego Laínez, wrote to him in this regard. The first one was composed in November 1560 and the second in November 1564. Both letters strongly opposed "the national humor" in Spain against the conversos—"as if they were made of other metal"—as destructive to the unity of the Society. Ribadeneyra employed the traditional argumentation for Christian unity used in Pauline epistolography and the Acts of the Apostles that we already have seen abundantly in other pro-converso writings.

Like Possevino, Ribadeneyra highlights the stark contrast between the pro-converso attitude during the governments of the first three superiors general—especially during the generalate of Francisco de Borja, who "was still easier in accepting this kind of people than Fathers Master Ignatius and Master Laínez"<sup>70</sup>—and the novelty introduced by the 1593 decree. To a Jesuit objecting to this openness, Borja would reply that he was pursuing the same kind of policy that the Spanish monarch was, in whose service many conversos were employed. Additionally, Borja would point out that he could not restrict the admission to the service in the house of that Lord, who "makes no favoritism [*acceptatio personarum*: Romans 2:11] neither between Jew and Greek [Romans 10:12], nor between Barbarian and Scythian [Colossians 3:11]." Curiously, Ribadeneyra also adds that the discriminatory practice was alien to the current Superior General Acquaviva, but this statement was probably a kind of *captatio benevolentiae* trick, aimed—as we have seen it already in the first memorial by Possevino in respect to Mercurian—at persuading the addressee to change the policy, so that his authority be not jeopardized.<sup>71</sup>

Ribadeneyra also refutes the accusation that the *memorialistas* movement was composed of Jesuits of Jewish origin, for which they would have been punished by the 1593 decree. To the contrary, he

---

<sup>70</sup> See *Mon Rib.* 2:377.

<sup>71</sup> See *Mon Rib.* 2:377–8.

stresses, the leader of this group of *perturbatores*, [Francisco] Abreo, was considered pure,<sup>72</sup> and many converso Jesuits, at any rate, showed that “they were very faithful and true sons of our Father [Ignatius] and of the Society.” The people who initiated major turmoil in the Society—continues Ribadeneyra—were not of Jewish stock; and even if they were, it would not suffice to punish them with this kind of decree, for we have to remember that among those people in the Society we find the most excellent men in sainthood, letters, prudence and of rare gifts, like Giovanni Battista Romano. Like Guzmán, Ribadeneyra is surprised by the lineage obsession in Spain, while elsewhere this issue is nonexistent—for example in Rome, where a great Dominican preacher, Father Alexander, who converted from Judaism, operates with no obstacle.<sup>73</sup>

Consequently, the honor of the Society and of Spain is compromised, for the Italians consider it entirely Jewish or crypto-Jewish. This bias undermines the Society’s union, for its members look at one another as enemies who belong to a different caste or sect. The atmosphere of suspicion and division that seems to be a civil war is viewed by Ribadeneyra as “vinegar added to the fire that will consume the entire Society.” This concern for the Society’s future was expressed—Ribadeneyra reminds—by many holy and illustrious friends of the Society, Master [Juan de] Ávila included, who predicted that the Society would be destroyed if it introduced distinctions of lineage and blood.<sup>74</sup> Acquaviva’s special envoy to investigate the consequences of these distinctions, García Girón de Alarcón, wrote in response to the superior general the most comprehensive and systematic critique of the Jesuit purity-of-blood legislation.

---

<sup>72</sup> Francisco Abreo was born in 1528 in Fuente Guinaldo (Ciudad Rodrigo, Salamanca) and entered the Society in 1569 in Salamanca. His Sephardic name, birthplace, and intellectual interests, however, suggest converso origin. Before he became a Jesuit, he studied law in Salamanca and consequently taught there and in Oviedo with much success. Mercurian refused to admit him to the profession of solemn vows, and Acquaviva dismissed him in 1588 due to his alleged (financial) independence, but he left the Society only in 1592 and moved to his birthplace. See *Información en derecho. En defensa de la Bula conservatoria, dada por los Pontífices Pío V y Gregorio XIII a la Compañía de Jesús, Casas, Colegios y Religiosos dellos* (s.l., c. 1575); “Contra Institutum S.I.,” in ARSI, *Hist. Soc.* 163; *DHCJ* 1:7; Astrain, *Historia*, 3:354–7, 413, 418sq, 490–3, 537sq; and García Casar, *Fontes iudaeorum regni castellae*, vol. VI: “El pasado judío de Ciudad Rodrigo” (Salamanca: Universidad Pontificia de Salamanca, 1992).

<sup>73</sup> See *Mon Rib.* 2:379–80. This part would suggest that Ribadeneyra used Guzmán’s text to write the present memorial.

<sup>74</sup> See *Mon Rib.* 2:380–3.

*García Girón de Alarcón*

García Girón de Alarcón was born in 1534 in Albaladejo (Cuenca) to Alonso Girón de Alarcón and Juana Pacheco. As the oldest son he inherited the *mayorazgo* of his father in Albaladejo and Piqueras, and that of his maternal uncle, Juan de Silva y Pacheco, in Villarejo. Most likely he was also related to doña Juana de Alarcón of Villa de Minaya (Cuenca), who was married to don Juan de Pacheco, whose son, Alonso, also entered the Society.<sup>75</sup> After his six-month experience with the Jeronymites, which constituted for him a legal impediment to join the Jesuits, he nevertheless entered the Society in 1555, supported by a request directed to Francisco de Borja by the converso Juan de Ávila, with whom Alarcón had been acquainted in Granada. After his studies in Alcalá he was ordained priest in 1567 and celebrated his first mass in a church of the Jesuit novitiate that he had founded in Villarejo. Among many other administrative duties he was superior provincial of Andalusia. As such, he participated in General Congregation 4 (1581), which elected him assistant general for Spain, and he was thus a colleague of Hoffaeus, Maggio, and Rodrigues, whose anti-converso campaign we have studied in the previous chapter. Alarcón kept his office until General Congregation 5 (1593), which promulgated the *de genere* decree. The Jesuit Superior General Acquaviva appointed him (1595–7) visitor in the provinces of Castile and Toledo, both of which expressed their opposition to that decree. At the end of his visit to these provinces and close to death, García de Alarcón commissioned Juan de Montemayor to write a memorial on his behalf.<sup>76</sup> The latter was elected in 1597 to participate in the Congregation of Procurators in Rome, and the next year he would

---

<sup>75</sup> See ARSI, *Fondo Gesuitico 1652*, N. 263. There was another Jesuit named Pacheco who was mentioned in the previous chapter. His first name was Juan Bautista, and he was born most likely to a converso family in Uclés, in the same province of Cuenca. Alarcón might be also related to the famous playwright Juan Ruiz de Alarcón, whose father, Pedro, immigrated from Albaladejo in Cuenca (where García was born) to Taxco in Mexico. In 1572 Pedro married a descendant of the Cazalla merchant converso family from Seville, Leonor de Mendoza. See Willard F. King, *Juan Ruiz de Alarcón, letrado y dramaturgo: su mundo mexicano y español* (Mexico: Colegio de México, Centro de Estudios Lingüísticos y Literarios, 1989), Chapter 1 and the genealogical tree of the House of Albaladejo (Appendix B).

<sup>76</sup> Kamen in his *Crisis and Change* (p. 14) mentions an anti-*limpieza* memorandum from 1613 by Juan de Montemayor, though without providing enough details about it, so I could not establish whether it is the same text we are discussing here.



become superior provincial of Castile. The document was dated 16 December 1597 and was carried to Rome,<sup>77</sup> where it has survived in the Jesuit Archives until today but has been virtually unnoticed.

The purpose of this text addressed to Acquaviva is to advise the superior general about the suggestion made to him by “many eminent men from the Society, either in doctrine, piety, religion, or government, who are known for their love and faithfulness to the Society and its superior general” to obtain from the pope some limitation to the third canon of General Congregation 5, which prohibits the admission of candidates of Jewish lineage and orders the dismissal of those subjects who anytime before their religious profession would be discovered to have such ancestry, without giving to the general the power to grant exemptions.<sup>78</sup>

Alarcón’s text has a twofold structure: the first part reflects the author’s training in law and presents a set of papal and conciliar documents refuting the discrimination of Jewish Christians based on their lineage alone; the second offers fifteen reasons whereby the 1593 decree was harmful to the Society of Jesus itself. Despite the initial suggestion of the decree’s mitigation, Alarcón’s argumentation makes this decree *wholly* unacceptable, for he quotes the documents that call not just for the alleviation of discriminatory legislation but, further, prove its unlawfulness *tout court*.

The most important papal document of this kind that the Castilian Jesuit cites almost entirely—as did his former Jeronymite confrere, Oropesa, in his *Lumen*—is Nicholas V’s bull *Humani generis inimicus* (1449),<sup>79</sup> which we have already seen in Chapter One as a reaction to

<sup>77</sup> See ARSI, *Inst.* 184–I, ff. 296–312.

<sup>78</sup> “Pater Garcia de Alarcon Visitator Castellae et Toleti mihi Romam proficiscenti valde commendavit simul etiam inunxit ut ipsius nomine Patri nostro generali deferam, quae ei multi viri e Societate, in doctrina e pietate, in religione et gubernatione praecipui, et in amore et fidelitate in Societatem, necnon ad Patrem nostrum generalem valde praeclari proposuerunt circa canonem tertium Quintae Congregationis generalis (quo cavetur ne in Societatem admittantur, qui ex Hebraeorum genere originem trahunt: quod si errore aliquo quispiam admissis fuerit, quocumque tempore ante professionem detegatur, dimittatur, quin generalis super hoc dispensare possit) haec autem deferenda censuit non ut canon derogatur, aut penitus deleatur, sed ut ei aliqua declaratione Summi Pontificis nonnulla limitatio adhibeatur” (*Inst.* 184–I, f. 297). Note that Alarcón does not mention the debarment of Moriscos in this summary of the 1593 decree.

<sup>79</sup> Anna Foa has noted in her “*Limpieza* and Mission” (pp. 302–3) the similarity of the title of this encyclical with the never-promulgated anti-racist *Humani generis unitas* of Pope Pius XI, which was co-written by three Jesuits: the American John LaFarge

Sarmiento's first purity-of-blood legislation and whose very existence Bishop Simancas undermined in his *Defensio Toletani Statuti* (1573).

The jurist Alarcón highlights its eight points:

- (1) Three major monarchs of Castile and León “established under severe penalty that there be no preference between the new converts to the faith, especially from the Jewish people, and the Old Christians in keeping or receiving honors, offices and dignities, both ecclesiastical and civil.”<sup>80</sup>
- (2) The pope had seen these royal sanctions supplied with their authentic seals, which he sufficiently discussed and—after mature deliberation—approved with apostolic authority on his own initiative, fully certain that they complied with the sacred canons and law.<sup>81</sup>
- (3) Nicholas declared the contrary judgment as erroneous, therefore those who follow it are dubbed “new sowers of zizania” (*novos seminatores zizaniae*), “contemptuous of the documents of our faith and unity” (*contemptores documenti salutaris fidei nostrae et unitatis*), “those who renew dissent that had been extirpated by the Apostle Paul” (*renovatores dissidii, quod ab apostolo Paulo extirpatum*), “totally alien to our Lord Christ” (*alienos ab infinitis Christi Domini nostri*), “deviators from the truth of the Catholic faith” (*aberrantes ab veritate fidei catholicae*), “opponents of the authority not only of the Sacred Scripture, but also of the sanctions of the most illustrious lay princes” (*contradictores non solum auctoritatis Sacrae Scripturae, verum etiam sanctionum illustrium Principum saecularium, quae visae sunt et discussae, approbatae et roboratae a Sede Apostolica*), “sowers of falseness against the norm of Christian religion and what is contrary to peace and unity” (*seminatores falsitatum contra Christianae religionis normam [et] quae contraria sunt paci et unitati*), and “scandalous to the neighbor” (*scandalizatores proximorum*).<sup>82</sup>
- (4) The pope's *motu proprio* orders all Catholics, whether ecclesiastic or lay, of any status, rank or condition, under penalty of excommunication, to admit all the converts to the faith of the Gospel and those who will convert in the future, and their descendants of both

---

(1880–1963); the German Gustav Gundlach (1892–1963), and the French Gustave Desbuquois (1869–1946) (see *Archiv der Deutschen Provinz der Jesuiten*, 252 C 377).

<sup>80</sup> “Sanxerunt sub gravibus poenis, ut inter noviter conversos ad fidem, maxime de populo israelitico et antiquos christianos nulla fiat discretio in honoribus, dignitatibus, officiis tam ecclesiasticis quam saecularibus suscipiendis et habendis” (*Inst. 184–I, f. 299*).

<sup>81</sup> “Ipsummet Pontificem vidisse praedictas sanctiones authenticas eorum sigillo munitas eas quae sufficienter et mature discussisse et post maturam discussionem eas approbasse, apostolica quae auctoritate roborasse, non ad petitionem partis, sed ex proprio motu, et ex certa scientia, ut iuri et sacris canonibus conformes” (*Inst. 184–I, f. 299*).

<sup>82</sup> See *Inst. 184–I, ff. 299*–300.

the clergy and laity, as long as they live as good Christians, to all dignities and offices, and everything else, i.e., communities of men religious, to which all other old Christians are universally admitted, and that there be no discrimination between the latter and other Christians because of their recent acceptance of the faith.<sup>83</sup>

- (5) Under penalty of excommunication, Old Christians should not disgrace the New Christians by word or deed, nor should they let others do such things, but rather they should contradict and oppose it with all their might; and with all their charity they should accompany them and honor without favoritism of persons.<sup>84</sup>
- (6) Nicholas ordered bishops to punish those who teach the opposite in words or deeds and those who inflict injuries by means of various penalties from imprisonment to pecuniary ones.<sup>85</sup>
- (7) Apostates from the faith ought to be punished according to common law.<sup>86</sup>
- (8) The Apostle Paul at the beginning of the Church extirpated an acrimony that was born between Jews and Gentiles, to which he abundantly related through almost entire Letter to the Romans.<sup>87</sup>

The second most authoritative papal document that the Salmantican alumnus cites in his letter to Acquaviva is Paul III's bull *Cupientes Iudaeos* (1542), a papal document that was issued under the sway of the founder of the Order of Jesuits, Ignatius of Loyola, a fact that Alarcón may have not known. The fragment in which Alarcón is especially interested was inserted into a collection of decrees commissioned by Pope Gregory XIII; it is actually a quotation of the decree *De his qui volunt ad fidem converti* of the Council of Basel (1431–7). Alonso de

---

<sup>83</sup> "Praecipitur sub excommunicationis poena omnibus catholicis ecclesiasticis et secularibus, cuiuscumque status et conditionis sint, ut omnes ad fidem evangelii conversos et in posterum convertendos et eorum posteros tam ecclesiasticos quam saeculares catholice et secundum quod decet Christianum viventes admittant ad omnes dignitates et officia et universaliter, ait, ad omnia alia, communitates scilicet religiosorum et similia adque alii Christiani quantumcumque antiqui admitti solent, nec propter fidei novae receptionem interos et alios Christianos discretiones fiant" (*Inst. 184-I, f. 300<sup>v</sup>*).

<sup>84</sup> "Praecipit sub eadem poena excommunicationis ne quis eos verbis aut factis contumeliis afficiat, neve ab [301<sup>v</sup>] aliis affici permittat imo ut pro viribus contradicat et se opponat iniuria afficere volentibus, et tandem ut sine acceptione personarum eos caritate prosequantur" (see *Inst. 184-I, ff. 300<sup>v</sup>–301<sup>v</sup>*).

<sup>85</sup> "Praecipit Episcopis, ut docentes contrarium aut eos verbo vel facto, aut quoquo modo iniuria afficientes puniant captura, privatione, inhabitatione, poenis pecuniariis et aliis huius modi, omnia omni iuris solemnitate, sola facti veritate inspecta" (see *Inst. 184-I, f. 301<sup>v</sup>*).

<sup>86</sup> "Apostantes a fide iubet puniri iuxta ius commune" (see *Inst. 184-I, f. 301<sup>v</sup>*).

<sup>87</sup> "Apostolum Paulum extirpassse con simile dissidium antelationis exhortum initio nascentis Ecclesiae inter Iudeos et gentiles quod Apostolus late prosequitur epistola ad Romanos fere per totam" (see *Inst. 184-I, f. 301<sup>v</sup>*).

Cartagena hammered it out there and included in his *Defensorium*, as we have seen in Chapter One: “Those recently converted to the faith must enjoy the same privileges, exemptions, and liberties that the Old Christians do, ‘for the members of the family of God and the saints become citizens by the grace of baptism and it is much more worthy to be regenerated in the spirit than to be born in the flesh’.”<sup>88</sup>

The spirit of this decree, continues Alarcón, was reflected in a document by Pope Alexander III, who reprimanded a bishop for being unwilling to admit to his Church and give an ecclesiastical benefice to a convert from Judaism; Alexander argued that the bishop should not dishonor the man because of his Jewish origin.<sup>89</sup>

Additionally, Alarcón cites the names of other popes who, albeit not directly, were driven by the same kind of spirit that Nicholas’s bull contained, among them Pius V, Gregory XIII, Innocent III, and Gregory IX. The latter underlined that what makes someone a good servant in God’s eyes is not his provenience but the nobility of his virtues and the honesty of his life, words that echo St. Paul’s First Letter to Corinthians (1:24–6): “To those who have been called, Jews as well as Greeks, the Christ is the virtue of God and the wisdom of God [...], for not many are wise according to the flesh, not many are powerful, not many are noble.”<sup>90</sup>

For the sake of fairness, Alarcón admits that there are some statutes approved by the Apostolic See, whereby “those who are from the circumcision” are rejected in some Churches, but he explains that those papal documents do not have universal value, for they were proposed in specific circumstances, where their confirmation seemed to be a prudent solution.<sup>91</sup> Yet, those churches, which adopted such restrictions,

---

<sup>88</sup> “Praeterea extat constitutio Pauli 3 [*Cupientes Iudaeos*] edita anno 1542 quae habetur lib. 7 decretalium compilato auctoritate Gregorii 13 [...] qua statuit, ut noviter ad fidem conversi gaudeant cunctis privilegiis et libertatibus et immunitatibus civitatum et locorum quibus alii Christiani veteres gaudent, quia, inquit, ‘per gratiam baptismi cives sanctorum et domestici Dei efficiuntur, longeque dignius existit [*sic* sit] regenerari spiritu, quam nasci carne’” (see *Inst. 184–I*, f. 301’).

<sup>89</sup> “Praeterea in iure communi extat decretalis Alexandri 3...de rescriptis quae episcopum reprehendit eo quod quemdam ex iudaismo ad religionem Christianam conversum, in suam Ecclesiam admittere nolebat, neque ei deferre canonicatum seu praebendam, his verbis concludens, ‘Pro eo quod iudaeis extiterit ipsum dedignari non debes’” (see *Inst. 184–I*, f. 301’).

<sup>90</sup> See *Inst. 184–I*, f. 301’; and *Decretalium D. Gregorii Papae IX. Compilatio Liber Tertius*, Cap. 37 ([www.thelatinlibrary.com/gregdecretals3.html](http://www.thelatinlibrary.com/gregdecretals3.html)).

<sup>91</sup> “Etsi obijciatur nunc reperiri aliqua statuta a fede Apostolica confirmata, quibus a nonnullis Ecclesiis qui sunt ex circumcisione reiciuntur, dicendum est temporis quo

soon realized how harmful and inconvenient they were and, consequently, petitioned from popes or monarchs their abrogation. An example of this practice was the Church of Burgos, which saw in the observation of this discriminatory law many inconveniences;<sup>92</sup> likewise the Church of Toledo itself, under the rule of Archbishop Alonso Carrillo de Acuña (to whom Oropesa dedicated his *Lumen*, as we have seen above), issued a decree that Alarcón himself consulted in the archives of the Santa María Church in Alcalá de Henares. In it, the irritated Carrillo complains that in Toledo, as well as in other cities and towns of his archdiocese, many confraternities, chapters, and colleges do not admit New Christians, falsely justifying it with piety. In such places, the candidates are scrutinized with regard to their origin, which produces many scandals and undermines peace and unity. In reaction to this division of “nations and origins,” which he considers to be contrary to law and charity, Carrillo prohibited under penalty of excommunication the observance of such statutes.<sup>93</sup> Carrillo’s decree

---

condita sunt illa statuta Pontifici fuisse propositas occasiones et circumstantias, quibus prudenter impulsus est ad illa confirmanda” (*Inst. 184–I*, ff. 301<sup>r-v</sup>).

<sup>92</sup> “Addo etiam nonnullas ecclesias, in quibus haec statuta confirmata sunt, videntes damna et inconvenientia maxima quae ex illis emanabant a summo Pontifice petisse ut illa abrogaret, qua etiam rationem nonnullae religiones habentes consimilia statuta a fede Apostolica approbata, ne scilicet ad sui habitus susceptionem, qui sunt ex circumcissione admitterentur, ab eodem Pontifice eorum abrogationem petiverunt, et eadem ratione licet aliquae Ecclesiae in Hispania denuo curaverint condere similia statuta a Rege nostro eiusque regiis consiliis reiecti sunt: imo et Ecclesia Toletana Burgensi consuluit ne tale statutum conderet propter quotidiana damna et incommoda quae ipsa inobservatione sui statuti experta est” (*Inst. 184–I*, f. 301<sup>v</sup>).

<sup>93</sup> “Quia, iuxta Apostoli sententiam ab omni specie mali nos decet abstinere et... in infra percepimus (quod dolendum est) quod in civitate Toletana et in aliis civitatibus, oppidis et villis nostri Archiepiscopatus reperiuntur multae confraternitates, capitula et collegia, quae sub fuco pietatis non recipiunt ad suam societatem noviter conversos ad fidem, alii non recipiunt eos, qui ab antiquo ad fidem conversi sunt, hoc in sui erroris praesidium assumentes, quod ad id teneantur adstricti statutis et ordinationibus pactis, iuramento et aliis poenis, ac vinculis roboratis. Et si quis ad eorum societatem recipiendus est, prius inquire faciant de qua progenie ortus sit, ex quo sequuntur gravia scandala inter Chistianos, quae nos attendentes et ex intimis visceribus pacem et tranquillum statum nobis subditorum affectantes, sancta synoda approbante omnia et singula statuta huius modi consuetudine, iuramento et aliis poenis roboratae, irritamus, et nullius roboris et valoris esse decernimus et contraria iuri et charitati declaramus et relaxamus quaecumque iuramenta hac occasione edita et reprobamus et anathematizamus omnes confraternitates, collegia, capitula, et coetus, in quibus in posterum tales divisiones nationum et generum fieri contigerit publice vel occulte sub quocumque colore; et iubemus quod si qui aliquod statutum circa hoc fecerunt et congregationes, ubi tales divisiones observantur quamdiu in talibus schismatibus persaverint et infra. Prohibemus etiam omnibus personis ecclesiasticis sub excommunicationis maioris poena ne praedictas personas convenire permittant

was confirmed in 1483—reminds Alarcón—by his successor, Cardinal Pedro González de Mendoza (1428–95). Also, Cardinal Francisco Jiménez [de Cisneros] (1436–1517) followed the policy of these two archbishops of Toledo: he advised his Franciscan confreres not to refuse the candidates “who had origin from Hebrews.”<sup>94</sup>

To finish his list of highest Church authorities who disapproved lineage discrimination, Alarcón—following perhaps a similar treatise by the Franciscan Gaspar de Uceda<sup>95</sup>—adds that of the Dominican Cardinal Cajetan (Tommaso de Vio, 1468–1534), who was consulted in 1514 (when the conversion of Jews was quite recent and, hence, when their “return to the vomit” more frequent) by the academics from Salamanca about whether it was licit to refuse the admission of those who converted. He replied that refusing only for the reason of their Jewish origin seemed to him irrational, “for our salvation comes from Jews, from whom Christ, the Apostles and many fathers of the faith were born according to the flesh. This refusal would generate in Jews an excuse not to convert to Christianity, knowing that their children would be rejected forever.”<sup>96</sup>

---

in suis ecclesiis vel paroecis nec eis celebrent missam vel divina officia, quandiu in praedicto schismate perduraverint. Haec ibi concilium ubi tales institutiones quibus ratione generis repelluntur noviter conversi ex communitatibus [...] scandalosas, schismaticas, et contrarias iuri et charitati” (*Inst. 184–I*, ff. 302<sup>r-v</sup>).

<sup>94</sup> “Quam constitutionem deinde illustrissimus cardinalis Petrus Gonzalez a Mendoza Archiepiscopus etiam Toletanus approbavit et confirmavit anno 1483 in quadam provisione data Victoriae, fuit enim gubernator horum regnorum. Reverendissimus etiam cardinalis Frater Franciscus Jimenez Archiepiscopus Toletanus ordinis Divi Francisci consuluit suae religioni ut trahentes originem ab Hebraeis non repellerent quin potius admittentur ad sui habitus susceptionem” (*Inst. 184–I*, ff. 302<sup>v</sup>). Cardinal Cisneros kept a converso physician, whose nephew, Alfonso de Pisa (1528–98), also a physician, entered the Society in 1552 in Alcalá, as we have seen in the previous chapter.

<sup>95</sup> Gaspar de Uceda, a theologian from Salamanca, wrote a treatise against the purity-of-blood statutes in his Franciscan Order in 1586. See Elvira Pérez Ferreiro, ed., *El Tratado de Uceda contra los Estatutos de Limpieza de Sangre: una reacción ante el establecimiento del Estatuto de Limpieza en la Orden Franciscana* (Madrid: Aben Ezra Ediciones, 2000).

<sup>96</sup> “Et Cardinalis Caietanus consultus a doctoribus academiae Salmanticensis anno Domini 1514 quando erat satis recens conversio iudaeorum ad fidem, an esset licitum eos repellere a religione respondet tomo I opusculorum tractatu 3 [...] qui continet 17 responsiones, responsione 6 in eius fine his verbis: “Irrationabile mihi videtur perpetuum statutum aut opus huius modi refutationis respectu illorum qui nulla alia suspicionis nota sunt affecti nisi quod originem ex iudaeis traxerunt, tum quia salus nostra ex Iudaeis est, ex quibus natus est Christus secundum carnem et Apostoli et plurimi patres fidei, et ignari invenimur sui generis filios repellendo: tum quia occasio daretur Iudaeis, ut ad fidem non convertantur dum intelligunt conversorum filios in generatione et generationem repulsos a religione, tum quia religio status est talis, ubi

The second part of Alarcón's letter deals with the unconstitutionality of the 1593 decree and highlights the harm it had brought to the Society of Jesus. The decree alters the Jesuit Institute substantially, for the Jesuits accepted the Institute from Father Ignatius, who was believed to have received at least its substance directly from God. To add or delete something that Ignatius wrote in the *Constitutions* regarding impediments to a man's joining the Society means altering the Institute substantially. Even though General Congregation 5 itself (which approved the *de genere* decree) declared that the essential impediments for admission to the Society belong to the substance of the Jesuit Institute, it added the impediment of lineage as essential. But, Alarcón argues, when Ignatius made a distinction in the *Constitutions* between the primary and secondary impediments for the admission, he did not include lineage in either of the two.<sup>97</sup>

---

ipsi potius si in aliquo dubitant solidari in fide, potius quam alios deficere possunt." Haec Caietanus ibi, tempore quo erat recens eorum conversio et eorum natio valde ingrata Hispanis propter frequentem eorum publicam apostasiam, erat enim tunc cum multi essent ficti conversi, ne eicerentur ex Hispania, continuus redditus ad vomitum, ut ibidem ait ipse Caietanus" (*Inst.* 184-I, ff. 302<sup>v</sup>-303<sup>v</sup>).

Note that Bishop Simancas (as we have seen in Chapter One) challenged Cajetan's authority by saying that the conversos were trouble-makers in monasteries: "Caietanus dixit ad illa monasteria ire possunt, sed nolunt isti, nisi perturbare omnia" (Simancas, *Defensio*, f. 20). Even though the attribution of this text to Cajetan is dubious, it is true that Alarcón omitted a part of Cajetan's response, which Uceda included in his treatise and criticized. In it, the Dominican theologian stated that the purity-of-blood statutes did not constitute a mortal sin, arguing that as sons of priests are excluded from the Church due to paternal malevolence, so should the descendants from Judaism be excluded, due to the incredulity of their ancestors: "Primeramente digo que Cayetano erró tomando fundamento de este Concilio mal entendido [Council of Pisa in 1409], porque, aunque dijo, como arriba está referido, que los Estatutos de que vamos hablando eran irracionables por las razones sobredichas, juntamente añadió que no era pecado mortal hazer los tales Statutos: los hijos de los clérigos son excluidos de la Iglesia por la malicia paternal, luego también los descendientes del judaismo deben ser excluidos por la incredulidad de sus progenitores" (Ferreiro, *Tratado de Uceda*, pp. 137-8). Cajetan's ambiguity fed the arguments of both sides of the converso polemics.

<sup>97</sup> "Prima, quia statuto alteratur et mutatur eius institutum in re satis substantiale, quod nos a Patre nostro Ignatio accepimus eumque probabiliter credimus illud a Deo immediate recepisse quoad omnia substantialia. Probat quia addere vel adimere aliquid circa ea, quae Pater noster Ignatius in Constitutionibus reliquit circa impedimenta substantialia excludentia aliquem a Societate est alterare institutum in rebus substantialibus. Nam ut recte vidit congregatio 5.a generalis, canone 17 impedimenta essentialia, quae aliquem in ingressi Societatis impediunt, res est ad substantiam instituti spectans, at hoc statutum circa huius modi impedimenta unum addit substantialia" (*Inst.* 184-I, f. 304).



Indeed, Loyola established in the *Constitutions* ([165]–[176]) five essential impediments<sup>98</sup> that bar a candidate absolutely from being accepted into the Society:

- (1) “To have separated oneself for a time from the bosom of the Holy Church, by denying the faith in the midst of infidels, or by falling into errors against the faith and having been condemned because of them by a public sentence or by withdrawing as a schismatic from the unity of the Church.”<sup>99</sup>
- (2) “To have been a homicide or infamous because of enormous sins.”
- (3) “To have received the habit of a religious institute, or to have been a hermit with the garb of a monk.”
- (4) “To be bound by the bond of matrimony or of legal servitude.”
- (5) “To be mentally ill, with the result that the judgment becomes obscured and unsound, or to have a notable disposition toward such illness.”<sup>100</sup>

Additionally, there are nine secondary impediments ([177]–[189]),<sup>101</sup> “none of which by itself bars admission to the Society, but which nevertheless renders the applicant less suitable”:

---

<sup>98</sup> The *Constitutions* explain the character of these impediments as follows: “In regard of all these impediments it is expedient that neither the superior general nor the whole Society should be able to dispense, since it is universally good that no dispensation be granted from them. However, should one of these impediments be found in a person who has such other qualifications as to give certitude that the Society could be much helped by him in the service of God our Lord, and should the person himself petition the supreme pontiff or his nuncio or chief penitentiary for permission, notwithstanding the *Constitutions*, to be received into the Society, its superior general not being opposed, then the superior general may give his consent, so long as the door would not be opened to large numbers or to anyone, as has been stated, without exceptional qualities” [176].

<sup>99</sup> The *Constitutions* commented on this impediment as follows: “[166] Even though one has not been condemned by a public sentence, if his error has been public and he has been highly suspect and there is fear that proceedings may be instituted against him, he ought not to be admitted. But this judgment will be left to the superior general. [167] With respect to schism, if someone was born in a schismatic region, so that the schism was not simply an individual sin committed by the person himself but a general sin, he would not be understood to be excluded from the Society for this cause (and the same holds true of one born in a heretical region). Rather, what is envisaged is a person who is under infamy and excommunication after having contemned the authority and vigilance of our holy mother the Church, so that the heresy or schism is the person’s individual sin, not the general sin of the nation or country.”

<sup>100</sup> See *Inst. 184–I*, ff. 304<sup>r-v</sup>.

<sup>101</sup> The *Constitutions* explain this kind of impediments as follows: “[178] Each of the impediments of this second category could itself suffice to bar admission. But since there might be other compensating excellent qualities such that it would appear in our Lord that one of these defects ought to be tolerated, the discernment of this case

- (1) "In regard to the interior, passions, which seem uncontrollable, or sinful habits of which there is no hope of much emendation."
- (2) "An intention that is not as right as it ought to be for entrance into a religious institute but is mixed with human designs."
- (3) "Inconstancy or notable listlessness, so that the applicant seems unlikely to amount to much."
- (4) "Indiscreet devotions that lead some to fall into illusions and errors of importance."
- (5) "A lack of learning or of intellectual ability or of memory to acquire it, or of facility in speech to explain it, in candidates who manifest an intention or desire to progress farther than temporal coadjutors customarily do."
- (6) "A lack of judgment or a notable obstinacy in one's personal opinions, which is very troublesome in any congregation."
- (7) "In regard to the exterior, a lack of bodily integrity, illness and weakness, or notable ugliness."
- (8) "Age too tender, or too advanced."
- (9) "Debts or civil obligations."

As both lists clearly show—confirms Alarcón—the impediment of lineage that was established in the 1593 statute is not extant here. It is true that Loyola mentioned the question of ancestry in the section "General Exam" of the *Constitutions*, but not as an impediment—the text simply asks the candidates' examiner to ask whether his family comes from old or *modern* Christians. The purpose of this question is just to gather more information about the subject. Alarcón repeats again that adding this substantial impediment means altering the Institute substantially and that it opens a precedent to add other substantial changes in the future, which would result in the creation of a new Institute and a different religious order than the one Ignatius founded. The Society has always desired with all its might to avoid any such substantial alteration.<sup>102</sup>

---

is left to the discretion of the one who has the authority to admit. It will also belong to him to make a dispensation in such cases, subject to the judgment of the superior, who ought to be informed of any difficulty that might arise and whose opinion should be followed."

<sup>102</sup> "Huius autem impedimenti quod habetur in statuto nullam fecit mentionem, nam licet in examine [...] § 2 moneat, ut interrogetur recipiendus, an sit ex progenitoribus iam olim christianis, an modernis, hoc non est, quia impedimentum esse censet talis propagatio, sed ut maior notitia recipiendi habeatur, cuius signum apertum est. Nam eodem § 2 eodem tenore ait. Interrogetur an sit ex legitimo matrimonio et tamen non esse legitimum constat nullum esse impedimentum. Igitur denuo addere hoc impedimentum substantiale est alterare institutum in re substantiali, quo aditus

It has to be remembered—continues the Jesuit jurist—that Ignatius, even though he was originally from Guipúzcoa (whose people used to persecute with hatred those who are from the circumcision), nursed conversos with special love, inspired by God's spirit during his long prayers, penances, and sacrifices, and he did not reject them from his community. Rather, he admitted into the Society men of Jewish lineage, for they rendered the Society famous by their doctrine, sanctity, and erudition and conserved its integrity and indemnity during the Council of Trent. Although some in the Society during Ignatius's lifetime did try to introduce such an impediment, he dismissed them as alien to the Society's spirit and would do so now, if he found such people.<sup>103</sup>

Alarcón could still comprehend the need to introduce the Toledan statutes [1449], understanding that the conversion of Jews in Spain was then quite recent and that many of them were still being daily caught practicing "their perfidy," but he underscores that such a motivation to hound converts was not unnecessary in Spain, for many conversos are truly faithful and only a few of them relapse—their infamy and obstinacy have been eliminated and purified by the durability of their faith.<sup>104</sup>

If Ignatius had objected to the lineage statutes, Alarcón continues, it is necessary to refuse them also now. A similar issue had been

---

aperitur, ut in aliis substantialibus successu temporis alteretur, et sic fiat aliud institutum, alia quae religio ab ea quam a patre nostro Ignatio accepimus contra id quod tota Societas cunctis viribus semper curavit, ut institutum illaesum servetur, quin in aliquo substantiali mutetur" (*Inst. 184-I*, ff. 304<sup>v</sup>-305<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>103</sup> "Confirmatur [...] quia licet Pater noster Ignatius esset natione Gipuzcuanus, cuius rationi homines eos, qui ex circumcissione sunt praecipuo prosequuntur odio, tamen spiritus Dei afflatus, magna consultatione divina praemissa, post multas orationes, poenitentias et sacrificia, illos praecipuo amore prosecutus est, nec a sua communitate reiecit, quin potius admisit huius nationis homines, quia suae doctrinae, sanctitate et eruditione Societatem illustrarunt, eamque in concilio tridentino integram et indemnem in suo instituto conservarunt, et licet tempore patris nostro Ignatio non desuerunt, qui hoc addere impedimentum curarunt; eos tamen ut alienos a spiritu Societatis reiecit, nec minus nunc reiiceret si adesset" (*Inst. 184-I*, f. 305<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>104</sup> "Imo magis, quia tunc maior erat ratio et occasio ita statuendi eo quod tunc recentior erat conversio Iudaeorum in Hispania, et quotidie deprehendebantur re labi in suam perfidiam, quia fecte fuerunt conversi, ne compellerentur ex Hispania egredi, quod praecipua causa fuit Siliceo condendi statutum Toletanum, nunc autem cessat in Hispania ista ratio, cum constet vere et ex animo eos esse fideles, paucique inveniuntur qui ad perfidiam pristinam revertantur [305<sup>v</sup>], ut eorum infamia et praesumptio, ne iterum in veterem perfidiam relabantur ob recentem conversionem et malam educationem, per diurnitatem in fide abolita est et purificata" (*Inst. 184-I*, ff. 305<sup>v</sup>).

raised during the generalate of Father Francisco [de Borja], who knew well Spanish affairs, but even though he was pressured to go in that direction, he refused it with all his strength. Moreover, argues Alarcón, the proper purpose of the Society, according to the *Constitutions* and papal bulls, is to bring all men to the faith, even infidels, whatever nation they come from, and help them attain salvation and perfection. So that the Jesuit ministers may be pleased by all nations, it is necessary that no decree be offensive to any nation, making these ministers unwanted by such a nation.<sup>105</sup>

It is demonstrated, writes García de Alarcón without hesitation in a form of a syllogism (a reasoning dear to Cartagena), that if the *Constitutions* established that the Society must admit those who are considered apt and useful and if somebody “from the circumcision” is judged to be apt and useful for the Society’s goal (which happens often), *ergo* it is against these *Constitutions* not to admit such a subject. The lineage decree stated, he reminds, that those who are offensive to the people to whom the Society directs its ministries should not be admitted, but this offense is not being experienced in Spain, especially in Castile, Toledo, and in the Bética Province [where Alarcón was sent as general’s special envoy]. Furthermore, the evidence shows that not only in the Society but also in other provinces of the mendicant orders (where this kind of statutes were not legislated), their members exercise without offense all kinds of ministries, especially that of confessor to important ecclesiastics and noblemen. They are canons, bishops, and cardinals as well, and even the Holy See does not consider them unfit or inept to exercise their religious ministries.<sup>106</sup>

---

<sup>105</sup> “Quare si tunc pater noster Ignatius obstitit huic statuto videtur necessario nunc repugnaturus fuisse. Similis quaestio excitata est tempore patris nostri Francisci, qui res Hispaniae bene comprehendebat; neque tamen ullus eum in hanc partem inclinari voluit, sed totis viribus reclamavit. Confirmatur secundo, quia secundum *Constitutiones* et bullas summorum pontificum, proprium munus Societatis est omnes homines, etiam infideles cuiuscumque nationis sint, ad fidem reducere, reductos quae ad assequendam suam salutem et perfectionem iuvare, ergo ut ministri Societatis grati sint omnibus nationibus oportet non esse decretum quod alicui earum offendiculum sit, eos qui invisos tali nationi faciat” (*Inst.* 184–I, f. 305<sup>v</sup>).

<sup>106</sup> “Confirmatur tertio, quia *Constitutio* p. 1 c. 1 § 1 ait admittendos esse qui ad finem Societatis apti et utiles esse iudicabuntur, ergo quando aliquis ex circumcissione aptus et utilis ad Societatis finem iudicatur, quod frequenter contingit, contra *Constitutionem* est eum in Societatem non admittere. Verum ait decretum hos ad Societatem esse ineptos quod cum offensione populi eius ministeria exerceant, hanc tamen offensionem in Hispania, saltem in regnis Castellae, Toleti et Beticae non experimur, quin imo quotidie videmus non solum in Societate, verum in omnibus

Against the common accusation that those of Jewish ancestry are ambitious and that they have disturbed tranquility in the Society by writing memorials and asking lay princes for help by other illicit means,<sup>107</sup> Alarcón admits that some of them are ambitious, yet many more are humble, tranquil, lovers of evangelical peace, and imitators of the Crucified. Those who are ambitious and charged with exciting uproars must be punished not by a lineage decree but by exclusion from the Society, just like the Society would exclude any other Jesuit caught in infidelity to their religious Order and its superior. The reason for this [as Alonso de Cartagena had pointed out] is that these vices are characteristic not of a race but of an individual; they originate not from lineage but from free will. Representatives of other races have the same kind of vices, yet we do not assume that they characterize an entire race.<sup>108</sup>

Another argument against the lineage decree is that it has diminished the good reputation of Society's piety and sanctity, which has

---

aliis religionibus mendicantium, in quibus nullum huius modi statutum est, sine hac offensione exercere ministeria legendi, concionando, confitendi, consulendi, et quantumque sit notissimum, religiosum esse ex isto genere, nec pauciores poenitentes in confessionibus, quin imo frequentissime videmus omnes tam saeculares, quibus ecclesiasticos et optimates Hispaniae in eorum manibus non solum animas et conscientias, verum tamen facultates, et dispositionem statuum deponere. In Hispania item sine offensione exercent ministeria ecclesiarum cathedralium, et ministerium episcopatus, cur non sine offensione ministeria religionis exercebunt? Et mirum quidem est, ut a Summis Pontificibus et Hispaniae regibus, idonei et habiles iudicentur ad exercendum ministeria episcoporum, cum saepe etiam nunc ab eisdem ad dignitatem episcopalem promoventur, idonei item censeantur, ut ad capitula, ad praebendas et dignitates omnium ecclesiarum cathedralium, una aut altera dempta, admittantur et ad civitatum senatus et ad cardinalium collegium, imo et ad ipsammet sedem apostolicam, et tamen inhabiles et inepti iudicentur ad ministeria religionis exercenda et ut in eam admittantur" (*Inst. 184-I*, ff. 306<sup>r-v</sup>).

<sup>107</sup> Alarcón refers here to the movement of *memorialistas* that we have studied in the previous chapter.

<sup>108</sup> "Aliter dicitur eos esse ambitiosos et tranquillitatem Societatis perturbasse monumentis seu memorialibus, et aliis illicitis mediis, auxilium postulantes a principibus saecularibus verum contra hoc est, quod licet aliqui sint ambitiosi, alii et multo plures inveniuntur eiusdem generis humiles, tranquilli, pacis evangelii amatores, imitatores Crucis Christo, quare quorundam malitia omnibus nocere non debet, sed puniendi illi essent si de ambitione et perturbatione convicti sunt, non quidem hoc decreto, sed eos a Societate excludendo simul cum aliis nobilibus, qui cum eisdem in eadem infidelitate cum sua religione et capite deprehensi sunt. Nec huius modi vitia sunt propria generis sed personae, quae quidem non ex genere, sed ex libero arbitrio originem trahunt, nunc autem ex culpa quorundam non debent omnes tales praesumi, sicut ex hoc quod in multis alterius generis similia vitia reperiantur, non ideo omnes tales praesumuntur" (*Inst. 184-I*, f. 306<sup>v</sup>).

been so renowned among the Jesuits themselves and other important men, inquisitors included. Such men have suggested that this decree was made without prior prayer and deliberation in front of God, which is opposite to what Ignatius used to do. Consequently, respect and obedience, which are required for the superior general's directives, will be diminished.<sup>109</sup>

The third argument against the decree is that for members of the Society to become examiners of genealogies seems alien to the Society's Institute. Following the view expressed by Cardinal Francisco Mendoza de Bobadilla (1508–66) in his *Tizón de la nobleza* (1560), Alarcón highlights how very annoying and burdensome it is to inquire and investigate the ancestors, grandparents, and great grandparents of candidates: Spanish Jews, especially in the provinces of Castile, Toledo, and Bética, have made great efforts to obfuscate their origins by contracting matrimony with the noble families of Old Christians.<sup>110</sup> Ironically, this blood mixture can be found in those who are said by their relatives to be free of it. Thus, the examination of genealogies of candidates can bring offense to many nobles, especially if they are already unaware of their forgotten and buried genealogical past. Some candidates would be discouraged from entering the Society, paralyzed

---

<sup>109</sup> "Secunda sit quia bona existimatio et opinio sanctitatis et pietatis quam Societas apud omnes habet, tam apud suos, quam apud externos hoc decretum valde diminuta videtur, nam plurimi tam de Societate, quam saeculares nobiles et gravissimi viri et ex tribunalibus supremis inquisitorum censent illud conditum esse non praemissa tanta oratione et consultatione divina, ac edita est constitutio de opposito a patre nostro Ignatio, sed in quibusdam aliquid humani intervenisse in eo stabiliendo, et cum omnia Societas decreta, quae hucusque edita sunt, huius modi sint, ut non solum bona et iusta censeantur, verum etiam optima reputentur, non tantum sancta iudicentur, verum etiam supremam evangelii perfectionem redoleant et contineant, hoc unum, quod a plurimis non ita perfectum iudicatur aliorum omnium minuet opinionem et auctoritatem, iamque in posterum congregationis generalis decreta attendi incipiet animis, quibus aliae communitates et confraternitates quae aliquando ducuntur passionibus. Atque hac via obedientia cultus et veneratio, quae decretis omnibus habebatur valde diminuta invenitur, nec non bona existimatio quam tota Societas erga viros spirituales habebat, eam fundatam esse in spiritu et in omnibus suis decretis et decisionibus spiritu tantum agi divino. Veneratio etiam et oboedientia, quae mandatis nostri Patris generalis debetur, valde repescet et debilitata manebit" (*Inst. 184-I, ff. 306<sup>v</sup>–307<sup>r</sup>*).

<sup>110</sup> Fernán Díaz, the Realtor of Juan II, noted that there was barely a noble house in Spain that had no converso in its family tree. If Jewishness was attached to blood, genealogy would become a weapon of the weak, and the nobility of Iberia would be destroyed. See Nirenberg, "Mass Conversion," p. 35.

by fear of compromising the social status of their relatives, many of whom come from very illustrious families.<sup>111</sup>

Fourth, this decree in Spain will exclude from the Society those men who would sufficiently and aptly perform the Society's ministries, which require a great number of talented people. At the same time, there is a risk that the Society will accept pure-blooded people of mediocre talents, which is an aberration of the rules established in the "[General] Exam" of the *Constitutions*.<sup>112</sup>

---

<sup>111</sup> "Tertia, quia alienum esse videtur ob instituto Societatis, eius religiosos examinatores fieri generum et genealogiarum et valde molestum et grave inquirere et investigare progenitores, avos et proavos omnium admittendorum, quod finem ultorum offensione fieri minime potest. Cuius aperta ratio est quoniam eius gens Hebraeorum in Hispania, praesertim in provinciis Castellae, Toleti et Veticae, summo conatu curet suam nativitatem occultare, totis viribus conatur cognationes inire cum christianis veteribus et nobilibus, et idcirco perpauca sunt, qui si divitiis affluentibus contrahant cum hominibus eiusdem generis, sed haec in parte consilium Pauli 3 sequenda quaeruntur Christianos veteres et generos nobiles et [...] illustres, ex quo sit domus etiam illustrissima Hispaniae, maximam quae partem populorum sanguini eorum iam esse permixtam. Unusquippe horum brevi tempore solet familias totius civitatis praecipuas suo sanguine commiscere. Unde iam ita valde extensa est evolutio sanguinum horum duorum populorum in his provinciis, ut collega fide dignus mihi dixerit ex oppositoribus collegiorum, etiam si hi tales sint, ut in sua opinione securi sint a tali missione, nihilominus dum informationes exacte summuntur, maior pars eorum reperitur admixta; et hac causa reiciuntur. Si ergo haec mixtio reperitur etiam in his qui iuxta suam et cognatorum sententiam ab ea liberi sunt, quid erit de reliquo populo? Praetera sibi qui in Hispania vulgo dicuntur libertados descendentes ex unica illa muliere dicta, Antona Garcia, brevi tempore ita aucti sunt, quia aliarum familiarum connubiis se miscuerunt, ut in tribunalibus regis delimitando illorum privilegiis tractetur, ne prae illorum multitudine tributare regia minuantur. Quae commistio sanguinum erit iam ex tot millibus Hebraeorum qui in Hispania remanserunt? Erit igitur molestissimos nostros examinatores fieri harum genealogiarum et cum offensione multorum etiam nobilium. Nam dum informatio alicuius summitur in aliquo oppido, palam fierit mixtio aliorum etiam nobilium, quae iam oblibioni [sic] erant inaditae et penitus occultae" (*Inst. 184-I*, ff. 307<sup>v</sup>-308<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>112</sup> "Quartum quia hoc statutum in Hispania in causa erit ne admittentur homines qui sufficientem et apte ministeria Societatis exequentur. Nam cum omnia eius ministeria sint proximos iuvare lectionibus humanitatis, philosophiae, theologiae scholasticae et positivae, concionibus, et confessionibus desitque chorus, quo religiosi mediocris ingenii sollent occupari, ad quae omnia exiguntur homines non solum virtute verum etiam ingenio, eruditione, et iudicio pollentes conici potest, ad haec omnia, quae magnam insignium hominum copiam requirunt, de futuros homines, qui his omnibus idonee satis faciant, in religione ita extensa et dilatata quoad quidem ex parte iam coepimus experiri in tyrociniis. Ab illo enim tempore, quo statutum conditum est, vix aliquis magnae expectationis receptus est. Licet enim sint plurimi omnino liberi ab isto sanguine, caeterum nollunt sui et cognatorum honoris periculum facere. Et ideo homines propectae aetatis aliqua insigni qualitate praediti paucissime erunt, qui Societatem ingredi tentent, et conentur. Qua forte ratione in quadam religione monachali, ubi hoc statutum servatum esse hoc videmus, quantumque sit a principibus divitiis et honoribus aucta et locupletata, non tamen in ea reperiri homines qui etiam suos proprios monachos in paucissimis collegiis docere valeant, sed opus est praemiis



The fifth argument against the decree comes from Alarcón's preoccupation with the weak economic situation of the Society, whose wealth depended much on the support of the affluent converso nobility that sent their sons to the Order, as Possevino also pointed out in his second memorial. The decree could make them change their previously written wills by which they had donated their assets to the Society; the families could choose to allocate their assets to other pious works.<sup>113</sup>

Moreover, the converso families—which usually come from urban environments—will lose their devotion and piety towards the Society, knowing that their relatives are being thrown away because they are considered dishonorable. Consequently, they will turn towards those congregations that welcome their sons, threatened furthermore by their fear that the lineage inquiries could compromise their social status. As a result—complains Alarcón—“many people of great expectations will escape from us and the Society will feel poor and deficient without them, as the experience has already shown.”<sup>114</sup>

---

non mediocribus ex academiis magistros saeculares adducere, qui suos monachos in propriis domibus erudiant, et illorum cathedras regant; imo et necessarios ad chorum non inveniunt, sed opus est eas quaerere, rogarem invitare, et illorum debita solvere coguntur qui recipere homines, qui ministeria Societatis apte exequi non possent et tales deinceps Societas cogetur recipere; imo cum constet eos decretum non tangere, parvi ducentur et interdum etiam obtegentur alii defectus vocationis ingenii, conditionis, et aliarum rerum quae ad institutum magis spectant et necessariae sunt, de quibus in Examine c. 2 §4 et c. 3 §14” (*Inst. 184–I*, ff. 308<sup>r-v</sup>).

<sup>113</sup> “Quinta, quia Societas non solum detrimentum patietur in reputatione spiritus, et in hominibus aptis ad institutum, verum etiam in facultatibus et in rebus temporalibus, quarum inopia valde premitur tota societas. Est quidem certum ex experientia iam comprobata facultates aliorum omnium qui societatem ingrediuntur aut nullas esse aut valde tenues. Qui enim nobiles in Hispania religionem ingrediuntur, communiter aut eas non habent, aut si habent, eas cognatis relinquunt, existimantes ad eorum statum, ut pote nobilium, omnia esse illis necessaria. Qui vero nec nobiles sunt nec ex Hebraeorum genere oriuntur, agricolae sunt, ita pauperes, ut communiter tam ipsi quam eorum parentes ex proprio labore vivant. Qua propter excludendo a Societate eos qui communiter abundant opibus aditus intere luditur quo Societas in temporalibus sublevari posset. His accedit quod multi huius generis saeculares, qui suas facultates iam testamento nostris donaverant, cum se a Societate contemni viderent mandata abrogabunt et ad alia pia opera se convertent” (*Inst. 184–I*, ff. 308<sup>v</sup>–309<sup>r</sup>). Alarcón himself donated money for the foundation of the Jesuit novitiate in Villarejo, where his family held property.

<sup>114</sup> “Sexta, erit occasio, ut plurimi externi nos in domibus nostris relinquunt et alias religiones adeant: pietatemque et devotionem erga Societatem eiusque ministeria intermittant. Cum enim sint plurimi in civitatibus ex hoc genere trahentes originem, cum videant universis sui generis ab hominibus huius religionis contemni et repelli ut indignos sua societate, cum videant item saepe suos filios aut cognatos studio ingrediendi Societatem teneri eosque repelli, qui eorum filii sunt aut cognati quam devotionem erga societatem poterunt conservare? Ad alias potius religiones suum affectum convertent et cum religiosis illis potius fabulari et tractare curabunt, qui nec

The seventh disadvantage of the *de genere* decree (which labels the converso Jesuits as inept to hold governmental offices) diminishes the conversos' love towards their superior general. The latter's refusal to promote such subjects based on their origin and regardless of their merits produces in them hatred and not love towards the Society, by which—if they are ambitious—they will negatively influence other people of the same origin and many other noblemen, with whom they exercise much authority. That will force them to threaten to request the appointment of an external visitor for the Spanish provinces, which would result in their separation from the administration of the general. As Possevino did already twenty-five years earlier, Alarcón predicts that this will happen if the Institute of the Society changes its substantial features, turning itself into another religious order.<sup>115</sup>

The decree makes maintaining Society's purity very difficult for the way the order would dismiss those who “do not walk in the spirit,” because the dismissed and their relatives—who could feel disgraced—might ascribe their removal to the problem of their origin and not to

---

eos nec eorum filios et cognatos a suis congregationibus reiciant. Atque haec offensio maiori erit, si post factam informationem intelligant ob illius defectum non suos filios vel cognatos admitti. Est igitur occasio magnam populi partem a nostris ministris avertendi et ut plurimi singularis expectationis adolescentes non audeant ingressum Societatis tentare, ne se periculo suum informandi genus exponant, atque ita ad alias religiones confugient; cum illud in primis animadvertant, in aliis scilicet religioinibus ad honores episcopatus et aliarum dignitatum petendas, non esse aditum interclusum. Qua propter aliae religiones hominibus maxime expectationis illustrabuntur, nostra autem Societas eorum paupertatem et inopiam persentiet, prout iam coepimus experiri” (*Inst. 184–I*, ff. 309<sup>r-v</sup>).

<sup>115</sup> “Septima, qui etiam in Societate huius generis reperiuntur, aliquis de amore Societatis et patris nostri generalis amittent, cum hac de causa se ab officiis honorificis excludi putent. Existimabunt namque se illi qui huius generis sunt ut ad tyrocinium admittantur, inepti censentur, etiam iam admissos ad rectoratus et alia honorifica munera ineptos iudicandos esse. Et quidem plures eorum prudentiae, lenitatis et aliarum qualitatum defectu ad regiminis munus ineptissimos esse continget; et tamen si ad haec non promoventur, non meritorum defectui sed ortus rationi tribuent. Qua propter, licet iniuste Societas amorem in odium commutabunt et (quod dolendum est) si Dei amore priventur et in spiritu ambitionis tangantur, per se atque eos qui sui generis sunt, imo et per multos alios nobiles eiusdem Societatis apud quos non parum autoritatis habent, visitatorem externum petere conabuntur, assignantes (ut dicunt) non causam pro causa. Non enim suae petitionis causam quae eos precipue impellit et movet assignabunt ne se ipsos prodant huiusce generis esse, sed alias causas reddent, quae vim maiorem apud externos habent. Atque ita ne harum provinciarum gubernatio a patre nostro generali pendeat, funditus tollere conabuntur. Quo fiet ut in rebus valde substantialibus alteretur institutum atque mutetur et alia religio fiat. Et quamvis vivente patre nostro generali propter ipsius animi constantiam, et invictum brachium non illis praevalituros probabile sit. Tamen cum nunc plures huius generis adolescentes sint, illo deficiente forte praevalebunt” (*Inst. 184–I*, ff. 309<sup>v</sup>–310<sup>r</sup>).

the lack of virtue. This situation could generate enmity, especially if dismissals were public. Eventually, the Society would be either compelled to either not dismiss or be risk being accused of injustice.<sup>116</sup>

Another problem that the *de genere* decree produces is the required dismissal of those converso Jesuits who are not yet admitted to their solemn profession, but whose lineage impediment was discovered after their admission to the Society, where—unlike in other orders such as the Jeronymites—the period between the entrance and final vows is much longer (fifteen years or even more, if someone was not admitted to the profession for his entire life). It could happen, then, that a subject must be dismissed after many years of being a Jesuit, even though his qualities would make him eligible to the profession. Lineage—claims Alarcón—could become a weapon in the competition among men religious, especially confessors of influential women who could become involved in fabricating rumors about the lineage of their confessor's enemy. No wonder that many grave men from other religious orders affirmed that this decree was going to destroy the Society.<sup>117</sup>

---

<sup>116</sup> “Octava, quia medium dimittendi eos qui in spiritu non procedunt, quod potissimum est, ad Societatem in sua puritate conservandam, hoc decreto reddetur valde difficile. Nam saepe eveniet aliquos ob morum defectus dimittere; et tamen eorum cognati et qui cum eisdem inimicitias gerunt, defectui generis exclusionem adscribent; praecipue quando publica contentio est, an illius cognati huic sanguini admissi sint; quo Societas omnibus illius cognatis reddentur invisa, imo cum videant se ipsos exclusionem infamari, nostros cogent, vimque inferent ut dimissionis causas publice patefaciant, quae saepe in re et apud nos sufficientes erunt apud externos tamen leves, et insufficientes iudicabuntur. Qua propter vel non excludere compellemur vel iniustitiae arguemur” (*Inst. 184-I*, ff. 310<sup>r-v</sup>).

<sup>117</sup> “Nona, cum iam lex spiritus valde in Societate tepescat et vetus homo praevaleat, erunt in posterum contentiones et aemulationes inter nostros, tam inter subditos et superiores quam inter magistros concionatores et operarios. Atque res saepe eo usque deveniet ut unus alteri opponat, eum essentielle ad Societatem impedimentum habere, eo quod in informatione generis quando admissus est, manifestus defectus fuerit. Et cum hoc impedimentum obici possit usque ad professionem, quae post longum tempus in Societate sit, hoc decretum innumerarum vitium et perturbationum seminarium erit quas quia experti sunt religiosi timorati ordinis Divini Hieronymi decretum suum (ut fertur) limitarunt, ut post tyrocinii annum, cum primum quis ad professionem admittitur, his obiectionibus locus non detur. In nostra autem Societate hunc defectum obiciendi occasio inter eos qui qualitates ad professionem habent, durat per quindecim annos et amplius inter eos vero qui ad professionem non sunt admittendi per totae vitae cursum. Et cum frequenter inter confessores esse solent aemulationes et invidiae circa confessiones praesertim mulierum, si vestigium aliquod inveniatur ad opponendum hoc impedimentum, illud obicient: auxilium quondoque ab ipsismet mulieribus petendo, ut testes sint vel testes quaerant qui hunc defectum superiori vel alteri confessori suas confabulationes prohibenti adscribant, quae omnia fient magno cum scandalo populorum. Propter quae plures etiam religiosi graves aliorum ordinum hoc decreto destruendam esse Societatem dixerunt” (*Inst. 184-I*, ff. 310<sup>v</sup>–311<sup>r</sup>).

The tenth disadvantage of the decree that Alarcón underscores in concert with Possevino is the possibility of creating in the Society divisions between the Spaniards and other nations, for the decree debars the descendants of Jews and Muslims, who come mostly from Spain, but not descendants of heretics and apostates, who troubled different nations much more than those Jews who—helped by God’s grace—converted. Thus, the decree contradicts common law and the papal decisions that do exclude from civil and ecclesiastical offices the sons and nephews of the heretics and apostates in paternal line, but not the sons of Jews who converted and not even the Jews themselves who converted. Therefore, right reason dictates that conversos be admitted rather than refused.<sup>118</sup>

Additionally, the decree debars those whose number in the Society is not small and who excel in letters, preaching, government, and sainthood, even though their names have to be silenced here for the sake of not exciting controversies. A Dominican noted the same sort of presence in his order—he made a catalogue of learned and holy people who excelled in these virtues: most of them were those of Jewish ancestry.<sup>119</sup>

The twelfth argument against the decree is that it does not follow the legal maxim that “in doubt a safer solution has to be chosen.” Thus, it is safer and more secure to admit than to exclude, given that nobody ever condemned the former, but pontiffs and many very learned men

---

<sup>118</sup> “Decima, occasio erit divisionis inter Hispanorum nationem et alias Societatis, cum enim in decreto a Mauris et Haebreis descendentes excludantur, quod Hispanos plurimum tangit, non vero descendentes ab haereticis quod nationes ad venas multo plus inficit, occasio erit decisionis indicandique rem plus multitudine suffragiorum quam rationum pondere definitam esse, nam secundum ius commune et omnium pontificum decisiones, qui Christi ecclesiam gubernarunt, quarum aliquae in principio sunt adductae, deterioris multo conditionis sunt descendentes ab haereticis et apostatis, quam ab Haebreis et aliis infidelibus, qui Dei adiuti gratia se ad fidem converterunt. Cum illos et eorum filios atque nepotes per lineam virilem ius commune ab honoribus et dignitatibus ecclesiasticis et saecularibus excludat (c. Statutum 2 de haereticis in 6) non vero filios Haebreorum, qui se ad fidem redegerunt, imo nec ipsosmet Hebraeos aut infideles qui ad fidem sunt reducti, repellit [...] eam re de prescriptis. Illos ergo admittere, hos reicere contra rectam rationem esse videtur” (*Inst. 184–I, f. 311<sup>r</sup>*).

<sup>119</sup> “Undecima. Quia si oculos convertamus ad eos qui in Societate litteris, concionibus, gubernatione, et sanctitate floruerunt non exiguum partem huius nationis fuisse inveniemus; quos sine ulla controversia possem, sed eos honoris causa silentio permitto. Quod ergo huc usque factum est, idem etiam in posterum sperari poterit. Maxime cum quotidie a suis progenitoribus, qui denuo sunt conversi magis ac magis recedant. Hunc accedit quod frate Dominicus Baltbanas ordinis Divi Dominici cathalogum fecit, quo ostendit ex hominibus doctis et sanctis, qui in sua religione doctrina et sanctitate floruerunt, maiorem partem ex Hebraeorum genere fuisse” (*Inst. 184–I, ff. 311<sup>r-v</sup>*).

did condemn the latter even in older times, when the risk of re-conversion of Jews was much more real. Cajetan, as was mentioned, considered such a debarment in the Dominican Order unreasonable. Perhaps there are some reasons, continues Alarcón, for such discrimination in the Portuguese provinces, where—as one says—the New Christians do not want to intermarry with the Old Christians and they used to have a different kind of education. Moreover, it is said that the Spanish Jews who fled to Portugal were from more villain families. Yet, this judgment must be left to those who know these things better.<sup>120</sup>

In Spain, no mendicant order has such statutes, even though some of them did have them when the Jewish conversion was still recent. Now, however—realizing the huge inconveniences of such laws—they have abrogated them. So, those orders will consider the Society odd and longing for vain fame if it now issues such statutes itself.<sup>121</sup>

The penultimate argument against the exclusion of those who have Jewish ancestry is, according to Alarcón, that it will become a source of many crimes and the occasion for numerous sins, which is incompatible with the mission of the Society as described in the papal bulls of Gregory XIII. Thus the Society, which was sent by God

---

<sup>120</sup> “Duodecima, quia in dubiis tutior pars est eligenda, c. invenis de sponsalibus, maxime inter viros qui de spiritu et perfectione evangelica assequenda pertractant. Tutius autem est et securius hos admittere quam repellere: quia hoc nullus unquam condemnavit; imo Pontifices in principio adducti et viri doctrina, religione, et nobilitate pollentes probant illud autem, loquendo iam his temporibus in Hispania et de religione ita extensa ac est societas, multi viri doctissimi condemnant et Caietanus loco supra allegato dixit etiam priscis temporibus, quando erat recens conversio Iudaeorum in Hispania, et frequens eorum relapsus, esse irrationabile eos a religione praedicatorum excludere. Signumque a Sede Apostolica confirmatum reperitur, id est quia tunc praecipitationes fuerunt quae huius modi statutum honestunt. Sicut forte nunc in Lusitaniae provincia esse possent rationes tale statutum honestantes, in qua (ut fertur) qui ex circumcissione sunt cum christianis veteribus connubia non contrahunt educationemque ab aliis christianis antiquis satis diversam habent. Et ex Iudaeis qui in Hispania remanserunt, quando ab his provinciis reiecti sunt, familiae viliores ad regnum illum confugerunt. Verum huius rei iudicium iis qui haec proximius norunt, relinquendum est” (*Inst. 184–I*, ff. 311<sup>v</sup>–312<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>121</sup> “Decima tertia, quia in Hispania nulla religio mendicantium tale statutum habet, imo etsi aliquae earum in principio quando Iudaeorum conversio recens erat, et relapsus continuus illus rationabiliter condiderunt. Deinde postquam maxima sunt inconvenientia experti, illud tandem abrogarunt. Qua propter Societas, cum eam omnes illud denuo edidisse videant, singularitatis et inanis gloriae cupida existimabitur” (*Inst. 184–I*, f. 312<sup>r</sup>).

to eradicate sins in his Church, should make every effort to eliminate such statutes.<sup>122</sup>

Finally, since the Society—unlike other communities—is supposed to be governed paternally, its every member, regardless of his nationality, is expected to respect, love, and esteem his superior, and especially the father general as his natural father. With this decree, however, many subjects who are not of his nationality [i.e., non-Italians], will perceive the father general not as a father but as a judge. So that everybody will consider him a father, it seems to many of his faithful sons that, using his power and authority, he should seek from the pontiff some kind of declaration that would alleviate the decree's rigor.<sup>123</sup>

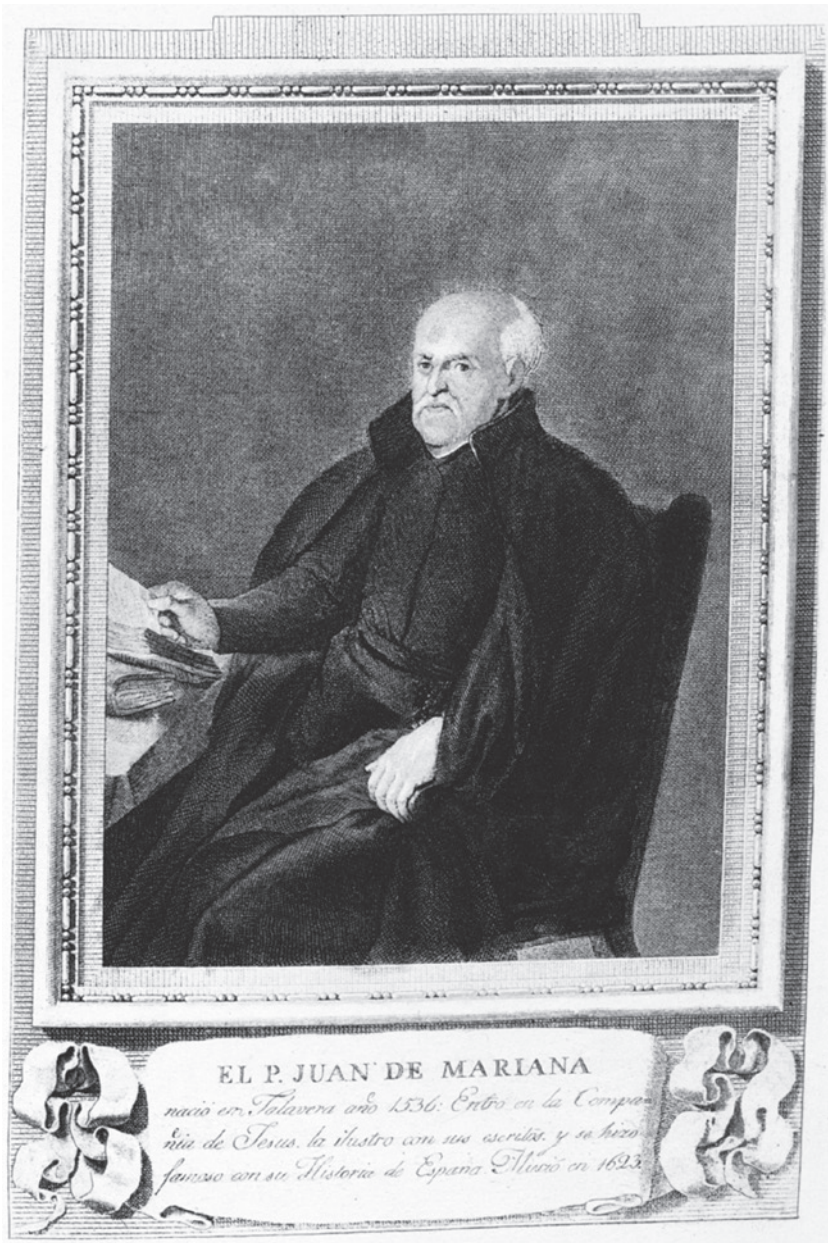
On a much lesser scale, Alarcón's claim of the harm inflicted on society in general by discrimination against conversos was further supported by one the most influential writers of the Spanish *Siglo de Oro*, Juan de Mariana, known as the Spanish avatar of Titus Livius.

---

<sup>122</sup> "Decima quarta. Quia Societas potissimum Deus in suam ecclesiam misit (ut testatur Gregorius 13 in bullis eidem Societati concessis) ad populorum peccata eradicanda, et funditus autem confraternitatum et aliarum communitatum excludentia eos qui ex circumcissione sunt, intrumenta que plurimorum delictorum et innumerabilium peccatorum occasiones ut supra Toletenum concilium testatur. Societas vero, quae totis viribus conari debuisset ut talia statuta delerentur, ut eis abrogatis, infinita etiam peccata cessarent, hoc statuto, cum aede ipsae communitates illud a viris pietate, prudentia, doctrina et sanctitate pollentibus emanasse intelligant, id quo post diuturnas orationes et sacrificia Deo oblata, sine ulla animi perturbatione neque passione, omnes denuo in suis statutis antiquis roborabuntur, imo et confraternitates quae eo carent nunc primum conficiunt. Quare Societas hoc statuto radices peccatorum originesque fovebit" (*Inst. 184-I, ff. 312<sup>r-v</sup>*).

<sup>123</sup> "Decimquinta. Quia Societas gubernatio non est ad aliarum communitatum gubernationi similis, sed qualis est in privata quadam familia, inter patres naturales et filios eorum nativos. Quare quotquot sunt in Societate, undecumque et ex quacumque natione sint, superiores, praesertim Patrem nostrum generalem, ut proprium parentem respicere, amare et venerari debent; et contra superiores eosdem ut filios nativos debent intueri, eorumque honori et solatio consulere. At stante hoc decretum, subditi, qui nunc sunt huius nationis, praesertim ii, apud quos non multum spiritus orationis viget, nonnullam occasionem habebunt patrem nostrum generalem non ut patrem, sed ut iudicem respiciendi. Ut igitur ab omnibus habeatur ut pater, prout revera est, semperque fuit; visum est multis eius fidelissimis filiis expedire, ut eius industria et auctoritate a summo pontifice aliqua illius statuti declaratio exigeretur, quo rigor eius temperetur" (*Inst. 184-I, f. 312<sup>v</sup>*).





Source: Alfred Hamy, *Galerie Illustrée de la Compagnie de Jésus* (Paris, 1893), #265. Courtesy of John J. Burns Library at Boston College.

Figure 17. Juan de Mariana (1536–1624)—the Spanish avatar of Titus Livius



*Juan de Mariana*

We have already mentioned Mariana in Chapter Two, when pointing out his blood ties to the converso clan of Suárez de Toledo, and in Chapter Three, when dealing with the *memorialistas* movement, to which he belonged.<sup>124</sup> Illegitimate son of a priest, Juan de Mariana was born in 1536 in Talavera de la Reina (Toledo). He entered the Society of Jesus in Alcalá in 1554; was ordained priest in Rome in 1562; and professed his final vows there in 1564. After eight years in Italy, with Juan de Maldonado he laid foundations of the first Jesuit College in France, Clermont de París. Together with Francisco Suárez and Baltasar Gracián, he is considered one of the major thinkers of the Spanish Golden Age. In addition to his learned biblical commentaries, he authored a history of Spain, *Historiae de rebus Hispaniae libri XX* (Toledo, 1592),<sup>125</sup> which also investigated the Jewish settlement in pre-Visigothic Iberia; a treatise on economy (*De monetæ mutatione*, 1609), for which he had been under house arrest for fifteen months; a comparative study of the Arab and Christian calendar (*De annis arabum cum nostris comparatis*, 1609); and a work on government in the Jesuit Order (*De reformatione Societatis* [*Discurso de las cosas de la Compañía*], 1625). He died in 1624 in Toledo.<sup>126</sup>

In more generic terms than Alarcón, Juan de Mariana expressed the desire to limit the purity-of-blood statutes in his (in)famous treatise that included the approval of a collective tyrannicide,<sup>127</sup> *De rege et regis institutione* (Toledo, 1599):

The virtuous person must never find the door shut to any honour or reward, however elevated these may be, and it should matter little that he is Spanish or Italian, Sicilian or Belgian. . . . The prince must decide firmly not to allow whole families to be disgraced because of vague rumours among the populace. The marks of infamy should not be eternal, and it is necessary to fix a limit beyond which descendants must not pay for

<sup>124</sup> For Astrain's interpretation of Mariana's engagement in the movement, see his *Historia*, 3:574–7.

<sup>125</sup> The Spanish revised and updated version appeared under the title *Historia general de España* in Toledo in 1601.

<sup>126</sup> For his Jewish ancestry, see Antonio Possevino, *Memorial*, f. 208<sup>r</sup>. See also Kamen, "Limpieza and the Ghost of Américo Castro," p. 23. On the role of Mariana as a book censor of the Spanish Inquisition, see AHN, Inquisición, lib. 580, ff. 27<sup>r</sup>, 147<sup>r</sup>, 164<sup>r</sup>.

<sup>127</sup> The work only added oil to the fire of anti-Jesuitism in France, where Mariana was charged with inspiring the assassination of Henry IV by a would-be Jesuit student, François Ravillac.

the faults of their predecessors, carrying on their brow always the stain that marked these.... Can one believe that it does no harm for the state to be split into factions, always harassed by the unbelievable hatred of the majority of its citizens, hatred from which at the very first opportunity civil war and discord must arise? One could possibly run no risk in depriving of all honours those who bear this stain, if they were few in number. But today, when the blood of all degrees in the state is confused and mixed, it would be highly dangerous, since we have in our country as enemies all those who are excluded from public affairs, not for their own fault but for that of their forefathers. It is the nature only of tyrants to sow discord among their subjects... Lawful kings always direct their principal care to seeing that all classes in the realm are united in love.<sup>128</sup>

In conclusion, the outspoken Jesuits Antonio Possevino, Pedro de Ribadeneyra, Diego de Guzmán, García Girón de Alarcón, and Juan de Mariana strongly opposed in their writings the Jesuit anti-converso legislation, employing the old arguments of the pro-converso literature that we have presented in Chapter One, but also bringing some new points of view related to the specific circumstances of the early Jesuits. Even though the 1593 decree was actually moderated, if only superficially, by the Sixth General Congregation in 1608,<sup>129</sup> it was not abrogated until more than three hundred years later, in a decision of General Congregation 29 (1946),<sup>130</sup> which considered the impediment of ancestry unconstitutional, even though it did not condemn the racial discrimination practiced by the Society in the previous centuries. The legislation of 1593 was abrogated almost certainly under the sway of the Shoah.<sup>131</sup> This story, however, is the material for another book.

---

<sup>128</sup> See Juan de Mariana, *Obras* (Madrid: Biblioteca de Autores Españoles, 1950), vol. 31, pp. 540–2. The translation is by Henry Kamen (see his *Crisis and Change*, p. 10). Another similar document addressing the purity-of-blood statutes in Spain was *Memorial para quitar o limitar los estatutos de limpieza* (1632) by Fernando de Valdés (d. 1642), rector of the Jesuit Imperial College in Madrid, censor of the Suprema and superior provincial of Toledo (1637–40). See Kamen, *Crisis and Change*, pp. 20–1; and Ronald W. Truman, *Spanish Treatises on Government, Society and Religion in the Time of Philip II. The 'De Regimine Principum' and Associated Traditions* (Leiden: Brill, 1999), pp. 333–5.

<sup>129</sup> For more details about this process, see Medina, “Ignacio de Loyola,” p. 608.

<sup>130</sup> For a different chronology of this process, see Baron, *Social and Religious History of the Jews*, pp. 15–6; and Pike, *Aristocrats and Traders*, p. 68.

<sup>131</sup> See *DHJC* 2:1946–7; Vincent A. Lapomarda, “The Jesuits and the Holocaust,” *A Journal of Church and State* 23 (1981): 241–58; and James Bernauer, “The Holocaust and the Search for Forgiveness: An Invitation to the Society of Jesus?” *Studies in the Spirituality of Jesuits* 36/2 (2004): 1–41. Instrumental in the abolition of this decree (see the text in Padberg, *For Matters of Greater Moment*, p. 625) was a French Jesuit of Jewish ancestry, Auguste Valensin. See Laurent Coulon, “*Hebraei sunt, et ego*. Judéité et philosémitisme chez Auguste Valensin,” *Archives Juives* 40/1 (2007): 58–77.



## CONCLUSION

Just as I was concluding writing this book in December 2008, The American Society of Human Genetics published an important article entitled “The Genetic Legacy of Religious Diversity and Intolerance: Paternal Lineages of Christians, Jews, and Muslims in the Iberian Peninsula.”<sup>1</sup> It presented a study by a group of international geneticists that analyzed Y chromosome haplotypes in 1,140 males from the Iberian Peninsula and Balearic Islands. Their admixture analysis indicated a high mean proportion of ancestry from North African (10.6%) and Sephardic Jewish (19.8%) sources. “Despite alternative possible sources for lineages ascribed a Sephardic Jewish origin, these proportions attest to a high level of religious conversion (whether voluntary or enforced), driven by historical episodes of social and religious intolerance, that ultimately led to the integration of descendants. In agreement with the historical record, analysis of haplotype sharing and diversity within specific haplogroups suggests that the Sephardic Jewish component is more ancient” (p. 725).

These scientific results should not be surprising to the reader of this book. It has testified to the significant presence of a minority of Jewish people on the Iberian Peninsula and Balearic Islands before 711 CE (estimated in the article at 100,000, which constituted about 1.25% of the projected Iberian population of 7–8 million) and to the creation of a no less considerable new social group of their descendants (conversos), especially after the massive conversions of 1391, which did not diminish the presence of Jews themselves (who are estimated in the article at 400,000 by the time of the 1492 Expulsion). When Ignatius of Loyola and many of the first Jesuits were born between the end of the fifteenth century and the beginning of the sixteenth, approximately 240,000 Jews decided to stay in Iberia (and therefore convert to Christianity). If we add the latter number to the number of conversos who multiplied in the one hundred years between 1391 and 1492, it is not unexpected to find that the converso

---

<sup>1</sup> Susan M. Adams et al., *The American Journal of Human Genetics* 83 (December 12, 2008): 725–36.

group was highly influential in both civic and ecclesiastical society, especially if we consider the mostly urban middle-class provenience of the Jewish converts.

Given the surprisingly high values in the proportions of Sephardic Jewish ancestry that the quoted genetic study has established, historians studying almost any aspect of the early modern Iberian world cannot neglect the role of conversos. If the Jesuits were founded by a group whose majority descended from Iberia, it is absolutely logical that they had to face the problem of converso presence in their ranks, as Chapter Two has shown. The first Jesuits brought to their Order the multifaceted experience of Spanish, Portuguese, and Balearic conversos.

As we have observed, the second superior general of the Society of Jesus, Diego Laínez, was a descendant of Castilian Jews who had converted to Christianity in the wake of the 1391 *pogroms*. The participation of Diego's family in the Catholic life was astonishing—his numerous relatives who entered the religious orders included his two brothers and two nephews who entered the Society of Jesus itself. Converso siblings joining the Jesuits can be seen as a pattern. Baltasar Loarte followed his older brother Gaspar; Baltasar Suárez entered after his older brother Francisco; and José de Acosta's other four siblings, Jerónimo, Diego, Bernardino, and Cristóbal, became Jesuits. The Acosta and Loarte families came from the same Castilian town of Medina del Campo, where other converso Jesuits—Baltasar de Torres and José de San Julián, as well as Pedro Cuadrado, who financially supported Loyola during his studies in Paris—were also born.

The financial aid that many converso families who offered their sons to the Jesuit Order gave to the order reflects their social and economic status in society. Melchor del Alcázar and Ana de la Sal Hurtado de Mendoza, parents of the famous Jesuit Luis del Alcázar, contributed financially to the foundation of the Jesuit San Hermenegildo College in Seville; the family of the Jesuit Alexandre de Rhodes donated 3,000 *librarum* to the Jesuit College in Avignon; and the list continues.

The influential position of the Jesuit converso families can be also seen in their high governmental posts. Hernando Ortiz de Cisneros, the great grandfather of Pedro de Ribadeneyra, was Queen Isabella's page and later governor of Toledo. Gregorio de Polanco, the father of the long-time secretary of the Society, Juan Alfonso de Polanco, was the *regidor* of the city of Burgos. Alonso de Toledo, the grandfather of Francisco Suárez, was the majordomo of the Catholic kings, with whom he moved to the re-conquered Granada from his native Toledo. The Toledan con-

verso family of Suárez de Toledo was related to Álvarez de Toledo, the Archbishop-Cardinal of Burgos; don Francisco de Toledo, Viceroy of Peru; and the prominent Jesuits Cipriano Sóarez and Juan de Mariana. The latter was born as an illegitimate son of a priest, as was the Jesuit martyr Ignacio de Azevedo, grandchild of the converso João Gomes de Abreu, famous Portuguese poet and navigator.

Suffice the reiterated invocation of these few names to confirm the magnitude of the role that Christians of Jewish ancestry played in the foundation and development of the Society of Jesus—from their initial influence to eventual debarment from membership—that this book has sought to explain. The relevance of the subject matter of this work lies in analyzing the correlation of two important historical topics that hopefully will continue to attract considerable scholarly attention: the origins and the adoption of the Iberian laws of *limpieza*; and the foundation of one of the most influential Catholic movements, the Society of Jesus, whose founder and most of its members came from Iberia, where the *limpieza* mania originated a century before the Order was founded.





## APPENDIX I

### BENEDETTO PALMIO'S MEMORIAL

*The untitled and unsigned manuscript is bound in the codex ARSI, Institutum 106, ff. 92<sup>r</sup>-132<sup>v</sup>, adjacent to another manuscript by the same hand, "De gubernatione Societatis." A sixteenth-century amanuensis wrote it in a neat hand, but it has corrections and interpolations by another hand. Along with my amendments the latter are noted in the apparatus criticus to the present critical edition of the manuscript. I have reorganized the text, numbered by folio, into paragraphs, to which I have assigned numbers between square brackets ([ ]). I refer to these numbers in citations to the manuscript throughout this book.*

[f. 92]

[1] Descrizione delle cause dalle quali sono procedute le discordie con molti mali et inconvenientii che tuttavia ci affliggono nella Compagnia, acciò essendo intese, si preghi Iddio che c'illumini per rimediare come conviene et è necessario per servitio e gloria sua.

[2] Meritamente vi contristate et vi affligete per la turbatione grande e divisione che in questi nostri tempi vedete essere scoperta nella Compagnia nostra che dal principio suo visse insino adesso in somma pace et unione, almeno in queste nostre bande.<sup>1</sup> Et vi maravigliate d'onde sia proceduta et entrata fra noi questa peste, ma conviene raccordarsi di quella parabola del Signore: E havendo seminato nelle campagne sui bellissimoi semi, *cum dormirent homines, venit inimicus homo et superseminavit zizania*,<sup>2</sup> che hora apertamente si vedono essere nati tra il frumento. Et se desiderate saper [92<sup>v</sup>] le cause et le occasioni delle quali s'è servito il demone per suscitare la tempesta della divisione fra noi et incendio delle discordie che ci affliggono, vi dico che sono state molte, ma per adesso vi manifesterò [solo] alcune

---

<sup>1</sup> That is in the Assistency of Italy, for which Palmio was superior general's assistant.

<sup>2</sup> *Mathew* 13:25.

che sono state le principali et la vera origine dei mali che patiamo. Et tra questi la prima è stata la moltitudine dei neofiti di Spagna.<sup>3</sup>

[3] Et per intendere questo havete a sapere<sup>4</sup> che sono due sorti di h[u]omini nella Spagna: alcuni che si chiamano Christiani vecchi et altri Christiani nuovi che hanno la discendenza loro dai Giudei et dai Mori che si convertirno<sup>5</sup> in Spagna al Christianesimo per gli editti che fece il Re cattolico contra di essi.<sup>6</sup> Et perché da quel tempo insino adesso si sono tra questi huomini scoperti, et tuttavia si scuoprono, persone [93] di pessimi costumi, così huomini come donne che sotto nome di Christiani vivono alla Giudaica et alla Moresca,<sup>7</sup> per raffrenar questa diabolica impietà fu introdotta nella Spagna l'Inquisitione così severa; ma, benché quasi ogni anno et di tempo in tempo di costoro si vedono essere abbrugiati<sup>8</sup> e condannati molti, non resta però levato lo scandolo di così grande impietà, perché sempre se ne vedono pullulare<sup>9</sup> in diverse città di Spagna. Di qui è proceduto che è questa sorte di huomini in tanto odio et abominatione nella Spagna, trovandosi le chiese piene di habitelli<sup>10</sup> di costoro che sono [stati] condannati dall'Inquisitione. Per questa causa si dice che quasi tutte le religioni<sup>11</sup> in Spagna (dopo d'havere sperimentato [93<sup>v</sup>]) che dove era alcuno

<sup>3</sup> This main argument of Palmio's memorial is repeated below ([22]).

<sup>4</sup> Read: Per intendere questo dovete sapere che...

<sup>5</sup> An old Italian form for *convertirono*.

<sup>6</sup> It is an allusion to the 1492 decree of the *Reyes Católicos*, Ferdinand and Isabella, which expelled from Spain all Jews who refused to accept Christianity. Palmio seems not to know that Jewish conversions to Catholicism took place already in late fourteenth (1391) and through the fifteenth century, or even earlier. Indeed, many converso Jesuits were descendants of Jews who already had converted before the expulsion.

<sup>7</sup> Read: che vivono alla giudaica o alla morisca.

<sup>8</sup> Read: bruciati.

<sup>9</sup> Read: perché di loro se ne vedono ancora pullulare molti...

<sup>10</sup> By *habitel[l]i* Palmio means here *san-benitos*, penitential garments of yellow cloth, resembling a Benedictine scapular in shape, whence the name. They bore a red St. Andrew's cross before and behind. See Lea, *History*, vol. 3, p. 172: "The custom of suspending in the churches the *habitelli* or *sanbenitos* of the reconciled and relaxed seems to have been borrowed by Italy from Spain, at least in some places. It is to the credit of the Roman Inquisition that it disapproved this barbarous practice, as appears from a decree of 1627 ordering them to be removed from the cathedral of Faenza and to be secretly burnt." In his autobiography, Palmio mentions the *habitelli* of the Jesuit Francisco de Toledo's grandparents hung in a church of Cordova: "L'Ambasciatore di Spagna sentendo questi ragionamenti sparsi per la corte disse al Papa che quest'huomo era novissimo cristiano et che erano in Cordova abitelli dell'avo et altri suoi parenti" (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, f. 24').

<sup>11</sup> "Religione" means here religious order, such as Jeronymites, Dominicans, Franciscans, and other.

di costoro, non si poteva vivere in pace, oltre i scandali<sup>12</sup> che da essi procedevano et le infamie che per conto loro pativano) hanno determinato di non accettar persona alcuna che si possa sapere che habbia discendenza da costoro. Per questa istessa causa alcuni anni sono che furono esclusi dalla chiesa Toletana che determinò con gravissimi decreti che in quella non potessero haver dignità alcuna.<sup>13</sup>

[4] Per la nota che patisce questa sorte di gente nella Spagna la felice memoria di Nostro Padre Ignatio nel 3° capo dell'Essame generale volse che alli Spagnuoli che entravano nella Compagnia particolarmente si domandasse se erano nuovi Christiani, pretendendo egli che da questa sorte di gente se ne ricevessero molto pochi et che fossero nella [94] Compagnia sempre conosciuti. Et quelli che furono ricevuti allhora sempre li tenne fuori di Spagna. Et di qui nacque che dovendo mandare alcuni nella Spagna et altri al Re Giovanni di Portogallo per le Indie, non volse mandar se non Christiani vecchi. Et così in Spagna mandò il Padre Antonio Araoz,<sup>14</sup> Biscaino,<sup>15</sup> huomo di gran giuditio et di singolar virtù, come dicono tutti quelli che l'hanno praticato e conosciuto; al Re Giovanni di Portogallo mandò Maestro Simón Rodriguez, Porthoghese, che piantò con la bontà et virtù sua la Compagnia in Portogallo, et il Padre Francesco Saverio in luogo del Padre Bobadilla<sup>16</sup> (che trovandosi ammalato gravamente, non poté, come era designato, andare in quella missione). Et giunto [94<sup>v</sup>] che fu in Portogallo, se ne andò alle Indie, dove da Dio era destinato. *Et huius memoria erit*

<sup>12</sup> Significantly, the term *scandali* o *scandalizzare* is employed by Palmio ten times in this memorial.

<sup>13</sup> Palmio refers here to the *limpieza de sangre* statutes.

<sup>14</sup> Compare with Palmio's autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, ff. 17 and 109°).

<sup>15</sup> It seems that by indicating Araoz's Basque origins Palmio tried to underscore his blood purity since the Basques were known to be proud of not having any Jewish antecedents. The *ordenanzas* of Guipúzcoa promulgated in 1527 prohibited the residence of conversos in their province as well as marrying them (see Sicroff, *Los estatutos*, p. 117, who observes that to say "vizcayno" was an indirect way to say "Old Christian"). Telling is Loyola's answer during the Inquisition's trial in Alcalá: "Otras observancias del sábado las ignoro, ni en mi tierra suele haber judíos" (*Fontes narr.* 2:548). However, the absence of Jews and conversos from the province of Guipúzcoa was a myth as José Luis Orella Unzué has demonstrated in "La Provincia de Guipúzcoa y el tema de Judíos en tiempos del joven Iñigo de Loiola (1492–1528)," in Plazaola, ed., *Ignacio de Loyola y su tiempo*, pp. 847–68. See Chapter Two for the details.

<sup>16</sup> Palmio mentions Bobadilla one more time in this memorial ([12]) as the main opponent of the converso role in the central government of the Jesuits after Loyola's death (1556).

*semper in benedictione sanctorum*<sup>17</sup> per la gran santità sua. Et fu egli il Padre che condusse il Giappone alla luce dell'Evangelo.

[5] Hora, se questa gente si fosse tenuta bassa, come si era cominciato, et non si avesse lasciato crescer tanto nella Compagnia, com'è cresciuta, sarebbe senza dubbio libera da tanti mali che in questi nostri tempi l'affliggono et la travagliano. Come adunque questo è avvenuto? Fatto che fu il Padre Francesco Borgia di buona memoria Commissario in Spagna<sup>18</sup> (cosa procurata troppo astutamente dai nuovi Christiani che pensorno,<sup>19</sup> con l'autorità di questo padre et con favore che speravano<sup>i</sup> da [95] lui, [di] dover prevalere a Christiani vecchi et a tanta presunzione non si sarebbero<sup>20</sup> mai alzati, perseverando il P. Antonio Araoz nell'offitio del Commissariato che gli era stato dato dalla buona memoria del P. Ignatio, et l'haveva tenuto insino all'hora), fece, *specie recti* ingannato, come fermamente crediamo, due cose totalmente contrarie a quello che sempre haveva fatto con gran giuditio et prudentia il P. Araoz. La prima fu che si dette supra modo a multiplicar collegiattii<sup>ii</sup> degli alcuni che erano di gran disturbo alla Compagnia [e che] già si sono lasciati. La 2<sup>a</sup> fu che aperse talmente la porta a questa sorte di gente che quasi non si riceveva allhora altre persone in Spagna, perché Christiani vecchi, vedendo tal cosa, fuggivano [dal]la [95<sup>v</sup>] Compagnia. Et per la multitudin dei neofiti che in quella si ricevevano la chiamava il Re "sinagoga de gli Hebrei," come da persone d'autorità è stato detto et affermato. Et perché le altre religioni<sup>21</sup> non li volevano, per la facilità grande del P. Borgia<sup>22</sup> [di ammetterli], cor

---

<sup>i</sup> *correctum ex c'*ebbero

<sup>ii</sup> *correctum ex quelli dieci*

---

<sup>17</sup> A paraphrase of *Ecclesiastes* 45:1.

<sup>18</sup> Commissary's job was to supervise the superiors provincial of a region; in this case Borja supervised the three provincials of Spain and that of Portugal, among them Araoz. He was appointed for this office by Loyola in 1554 and relinquished it under Lafñez in 1559. During his trip to Iberia as commissary, Borja was accompanied by Dionisio Vázquez (see below [8]).

<sup>19</sup> *Pensorno* is an old-Italian *passato remoto* form for *pensarono*.

<sup>20</sup> *Sarebbono* is an old-Italian conditional form for *sarebbero*.

<sup>21</sup> Meaning: religious orders. See above [3].

<sup>22</sup> See the meaningful title of the chapter dedicated to this issue in Palmio's autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, f. 13<sup>v</sup>): "Dell'inganno del Demonio col quale procurò sotto pretesto di santità introdurre uno spirito nella Compagnia molto diverso da quello che per mezzo d'Ignatio gli aveva comunicato Dio N[ostro] S[ignore]." Palmio attributes this infidelity to the influence exercised over Borja and other Jesuits by a certain converso *frate* from Andalusia called Giovanni [Juan de Tejada]: "che era tenuto

revano a lui. D'onde è avvenuto che la Compagnia in ogni banda si trova piena di questa gente. Et benché il P. Antonio Araoz, considerando il danno che di qui ne riceveva a la Compagnia gagliardamente, s'opponesse et contradicesse, nientedimeno non poté mai fare cosa alcuna et impedir che le cose cominciate dal P. Borgia non andassero tuttavia avanti, perché quelli che governavano in Roma erano quasi tutti neofiti.

[6] Il buon Padre Lainez che veramente era un [96] santo,<sup>23</sup> pieno di singular virtù et d'eccellentissima dottrina, ancora che avesse discendenza da costoro, come egli stesso disse, assignando questa causa quando lo volsero far Generale per liberarsi da questo carico<sup>24</sup> (*erat enim vir iste ex filiis Abraam non secundum carnem, sed secundum spiritum: et verus Israelita in quo dolus non erat*),<sup>25</sup> vedendo i mali che cominciavano a pullulare nella Compagnia et troppo apertamente manifestare, desiderò provvedere, acciò non andassero avanti et non facessero maggiori radici, massime quando si accorse che quelli che gli stavano appresso non camminavano bene, ma prevenuto dalla morte non vi poté far altro. Nel<sup>iii</sup> principio però del suo generalato, perché [e]gli credeva [ciò che] [96<sup>v</sup>] gli persuasero: che era bene quello che faceva il P. Borgia, procurando parimente alienarlo da P. Antonio Araoz. Et perché quando buon Padre attendeva molto alli studii et si trovò occupato e nella Francia<sup>26</sup> e nel Concilio di Trento, et in altre

---

<sup>iii</sup> *antes* Prima però che morisse gli pers *deletum*

---

huomo di grandissimo spirito et estimado da Francesco de Borgia, che entrasse nella Compagnia et per l'affettione che li portava procurò con ogni diligentia di farlo fare sacerdote et perché ciò non si poteva ottenere in Spagna, lo mandò a Roma da Ignatio<sup>7</sup> (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, ff. 13<sup>r-v</sup>).

<sup>23</sup> Lainez is the only converso whom Palmio portrays benevolently. Most likely it is due to the fact that the former was instrumental in the latter's vocation to the Society—Palmio decided to make Spiritual Exercises after hearing Lainez preach in his native Parma.

<sup>24</sup> This information is also attributed to Possevino (see *Mon Lainez* 8:837).

<sup>25</sup> A paraphrase of *John* 1:47, *Romans* 4:1, and *Galatians* 3:7.

<sup>26</sup> Lainez was sent by the pope to participate in the colloquy of Poissy (1561), from where he headed to Trent. Palmio seems to forget here that Lainez was accompanied there by Polanco. Both would be back in Rome only in December 1564. During these three years of absence, Polanco was replaced by Cristóbal de Madrid who sometimes was assisted by Ribadeneyra. Both were accused by Palmio of being part of the converso conspiracy. On this trip, see Scaduto, *Azione*, pp. 113–35.

cose di grandissima importanza,<sup>27</sup> non fu [a] questi huomini molto difficile mandare avanti sotto di lui i loro disegni.<sup>28</sup>

[7] Questi mali ancora ebbero accrescimento per la diversità dello spirito in che fu il P. Francesco Borgia instruito da certi frati prima che entrasse nella Compagnia. Et in lui si videro sempre molte cose assai lontane dall'instituto della Compagnia et da quel modo che pretendeva la santa memoria di Nostro P. Ignatio che s'osservasse et si tenesse in essa. Et in effetto, la gente allevata [97] dal P. Borgia nella conversation sua a comparation di quelli che furono instituti dal P. Ignatio parevano veramente huomini d'altra religione,<sup>29</sup> dati a cerimonie et apparenze. Et più s'accostavano al vivere monastico e Carthesiano che all'instituto della Compagnia. Et di qui nacque che nel tempo del generalato del P. Borgia<sup>30</sup> [la Compagnia] s'è vista molto alterata. Et assai maggiore alteratione si sarebbe fatta se gli Assistenti<sup>31</sup> unitamente non havessero havuto l'occhio a conservar la purità dell'instituto et la disciplina che lasciò la buona memoria del Nostro P. Ignatio. Et benché potrei qui narrar molte cose che da alcuni, ai quali dava gran credito, gli erano proposte, acciò le introducesse sotto pretesto di conservare i novitii che entravano [97"] nella Compagnia et promuovere altri a maggiore perfetione, mi contenterò [di] scrivere una [cosa] sola, d'onde il resto si potrà intendere.

---

<sup>27</sup> Laínez and Salmerón participated in the Council of Trent in 1546. The two went back there in 1563, accompanied by Polanco and Nadal, after Laínez and Polanco had participated in the colloquy of Poissy. Palmio omits in his memorial the role of Polanco in Laínez's activities in France and Trent. Consider that all the Jesuits who participated in the Council of Trent were Spaniards and at least three fourth of them were conversos. On the participation of Jesuits in the Council of Trent, see, for example, Mario Amadeo, "La Compañía de Jesús y el Concilio de Trento," *Estudios* 74 (1945): 420–33; Antonio Astrain, "Los españoles en el Concilio de Trento," *Razón y fe* 3 (1902): 189–206 and 289–303; James Brodrick, "The Jesuits at the Council of Trent," *The Month* 154 (1929): 513–21 and 155 (1930): 97–108; Jacobus Laínez, S.I., *Disputationes Tridentinae ad manuscriptorum fidem edidit et commentariis historicis instruxit Hartmanus Grisar, S.I.* (Oeniponte: Typis et sumptibus F. Rauch, 1886); Kazimierz Piwarski, "Sobór Trydencki i jezuici," in Kazimierz Piwarski, ed., *Szkice z dziejów papieżstwa* (Warszawa: Książka i Wiedza, 1958), pp. 45–97; and Mario Reguzzoni SI, "Un contributo alla storia della pedagogia. I gesuiti a Trento," *Civiltà Cattolica* (1989): 260–5.

<sup>28</sup> See Palmio's autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, f. 19).

<sup>29</sup> Read: di un altro ordine religioso.

<sup>30</sup> Between the years 1565 and 1572.

<sup>31</sup> The four assistants general elected by GC 2 in 1565 were: Araoz (for Spain), Mercurian (for France and Germany), Palmio (for Italy), and Diego Miró (for Portugal, India, and Brazil). See below [13]. For their profiles as assistants, see Scaduto, *Francesco Borgia*, pp. 67–75.

[8] Dionisio adunque Vaschez<sup>32</sup> che fu la rovina della Compagnia Romana et autore di tutti i mali che sono venuti di Spagna, Rodriguez che era Provinciale, Ruiz Maestro di novizzi,<sup>33</sup> Ledesma che leggeva theologia in Collegio [Romano] con altri di questa sorte d'huomini, sotto certo pretesto di maggior bene gli<sup>34</sup> avevano dato ad intendere che bisognava dividere il Collegio Romano in quattro parti,<sup>35</sup> mettendo in una novizzi del 2<sup>o</sup> anno, nella 2<sup>a</sup> quelli che finivano il noviziato, nella terza quelli che si mostravano più desiderosi della perfezione religiosa [e] nella 4<sup>a</sup> quelli che erano inquieti,<sup>iv</sup> assegnando a ciascheduna di queste classi un capo che avesse a [98] reggere et a governare. Essendo deliberato di eseguir questo disegno, [Vázquez] se ne andò al Collegio, conducendome solo seco,<sup>36</sup> senza però dirmi che cosa volesse fare. Così, essendosi riposato dopo desinare<sup>37</sup> et havendo chiamati i sodetti padri, in presenza loro mi disse che haveva animo di far tal cosa, giudicando che sarebbe di grandissimo aiuto al Collegio et levarebbe diversi disordini che intendeva essere in quello, ma che desiderava sapere, prima che eseguisse cosa alcuna, il parer mio. Et perché<sup>v</sup> la cosa mi parve molto nuova, pericolosa et piena di grandissimi inconvenienti che sarebbero successi, quando si fosse posta in esecuzione, gli risposi che il negotio mi pareva degno di gran consideratione et che prima di rispondere [98<sup>v</sup>] desideravo saper le cause per le quali s'erano mossi i Padri che si trovavano presenti a persuadergli tal cosa. Così havendo inteso i motivi loro, nell'ultimo luogo parlando io dissi che

---

<sup>iv</sup> *Additum in margine*

<sup>v</sup> *Additum in margine*

---

<sup>32</sup> Palmio dedicates to Vázquez more paragraphs below ([13], [20–1] and [30]).

<sup>33</sup> See Chapter 18 (“Della turbatione causata per il Provincialato di Ruiz e de tanti assistenti che haveva introdotto il Borgia tutti Spagnoli”) of Palmio’s autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, ff. 33–33<sup>r</sup>): “homo di bona mente et da bene, ma alevato e nutrito in quella novità di spirito di quel frate Giovanni, di che si è detto di sopra, per il che P. Borgia il [sic] fece Maestro de Noviti in Santo Andrea. [Egli] comentiò a introdurre una certa forma di novitiato molto diversa da quella che si servò nel tempo di Ignatio, massimamente in Messina, dove si dette principio alla prima casa de novitii; [...] era più presto conforme al monachismo.” One wonders, though, why Ruiz was appointed to redact the rules for the Jesuit novitiate during GC 3, if he was such a bad novice master.

<sup>34</sup> That is to Borja.

<sup>35</sup> See Palmio’s autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, ff. 34<sup>r</sup>–35<sup>r</sup> and 151–151<sup>r</sup>). As a scholastic, Palmio himself studied at the Roman College 1553–6.

<sup>36</sup> Meaning: bringing me alone with him.

<sup>37</sup> *desinare*: to eat the main meal of the day, usually lunch.



mi maravigliavo che tal cosa si proponesse, che era non per giovare ma per rovinare il Collegio et empirlo<sup>38</sup> di odii, di dissensioni, di discordie, di divisioni et d'ogni sorte di male, rompendo e dissipando la carità, la pace et l'unione che era il fondamento di quel Collegio et di tutta la Compagnia, la quale necessariamente [si] corromperebbe ogni volta che il Collegio Romano [fosse] corrotto et depravato, trovandosi pieno di tante nationi, alle quali era necessaria non la divisione, ma l'unione. Et soggiunsi che quando<sup>vi</sup> si fosse [99] desiderata la ruina del Collegio et della Compagnia, non si sarebbe potuto trovare il miglior mezzo di questo. Dissi di più: che desideravo sapere i disordini, i scandali et li mali che erano nel Collegio, perché con la proposta che havevano fatto mi davano ad intendere che c'era gran gravità et corruttela et che quando così fosse, non giovarebbe la distinzione che s'era pensato di fare, ma già presto condurrebbe il Collegio in una estrema ruina et che molto meglio sarebbe licentiar dalla Compagnia tutti quelli che la turbavano con i pessimi costumi loro, ancorché<sup>vii</sup> fossero cinquanta, o sessanta, non essendovi speranza di poterlo aiutare con il mezzo che s'era proposto. Et perché allora rispondendo il P. Generale [Borgia], mi disse che per gratia di Dio [99v] non c'erano tanti mali et che il tutto si riduceva a certe imperfetioni di alcuni pochi, allhora dissi io, allegrandomi che così fosse et rendendone le debite gratie a Dio, che non conveniva per<sup>viii</sup> tali rispetti introdurre tante distinzioni e parti nel Collegio che non gli poteva essere se non di estremo danno, estinguendo la pace fra i collegiali, perché questo modo non serviva ad altro che [a] separar gli animi et introdurre nel Collegio diversi modi di vivere, et che alcuni si sarebbero nominati gli osservanti, altri conventuali; questi Capuzzini et quelli Carthesiani. Dipoi mi voltai al P. Ledesma, che era stato il principale autore di questa bella inventione, et gli dissi che se fosse vivo il P. Ignatio di santa memoria, non [100] lo haverebbe tenuto un' hora nella Compagnia, giudicandolo quasi huomo nemico di quella et estermiatore della pace et della unione, onde dipende tutto il bene della Compagnia.<sup>39</sup> Et per ragioni che io

---

<sup>vi</sup> *ante si desid deletum*

<sup>vii</sup> *ante che deletum*

<sup>viii</sup> *ante che deletum*

---

<sup>38</sup> Read: riempirlo.

<sup>39</sup> See the paragraph on Ledesma in Chapter Two, from which one learns that his role in building the foundations of the Jesuit pedagogical system was pivotal (see his various texts in MHSI, *Mon. paed.*). Apparently Palmio did not think so.

dissi il buon P. Borgia lasciò in tutto e per tutto quei pensieri et non si fece altro, perché conobbe che il mezzo che gli era stato proposto sarebbe stato perniciosissimo.

[9] Dal modo adunque di procedere del buon P. Borgia in tutto e per tutto diverso da quello che teneva il P. Araoz<sup>ix</sup> nacque tanta divisione tra i nostri di Spagna che tutta la Compagnia l'ha sentita non senza grave danno et disturbo suo. Et questo particolarmente in Roma, dove essendo[si] congregati huomini di diverse nationi, mai per i tempi passati si era udito una minima parola [100<sup>v</sup>] di tal divisione, anzi si viveva con tanta semplicità, unione e pace che fra noi si vedeva adempiuto per gratia di Dio quello che si legge negli Atti degli Apostoli, *erat illis anima una et cor unum*.<sup>40</sup> Né si fece mai una minima differentia fra nationi, *nec erat inter eos neque Scyta, neque Barbarus, neque Iudaeus, neque Gentilis, sed Christus erat omnia in omnibus et omnis eramus unum in illo*.<sup>41</sup> Crebbe talmente questa divisione fra Christiani vecchi e nuovi che prima che si cominciasse a celebrar la 2<sup>a</sup> Congregazione [Generale]<sup>42</sup> fu presentato a Pio 4<sup>43</sup> di felice memoria un libello pieno di querele. Et in quello era descritta molto alla lunga questa divisione che era nella nostra Compagnia in Spagna per conto dei Christiani vecchi e nuovi<sup>44</sup> [101] et che si trovavano fra loro due fattioni: una dei Christiani vecchi cui capo era Antonio Araoz,<sup>x</sup> l'atra dei Christiani nuovi che seguitavano come capo loro Francesco Borgia. Et in quella scritta, dopo un lungo catalogo che si faceva dei nuovi Christiani et particolarmente di quelli che allhora

---

<sup>ix</sup> *ex Araoza correxi*

<sup>x</sup> *ex Araoza correxi*

---

<sup>40</sup> *Acts of the Apostles* 4:32.

<sup>41</sup> This is a paraphrase of *Galatians* 3:28 ("Non est Iudaeus neque Graecus non est servus neque liber non est masculus neque femina omnes enim vos unum estis in Christo Iesu") and *Colossians* 3:11 ("Ubi non est masculus et femina, Graecus et Iudaeus, circumcisio et praeputium, barbarus et Scyta, servus et liber: sed omnia et in omnibus Christus").

<sup>42</sup> The Second General Congregation was convoked by Vicar General Borja in 1565. It elected him general.

<sup>43</sup> Pope Pius IV (Giovanni Angelo Medici) was born in 1499. He was elected pope by acclamation in 1560. Pius IV created cardinal his nephew Carlo Borromeo, to whom he assigned the task of inquiring about the Jesuit conflict mentioned in the next paragraph [10]. Pius IV appointed Claudio Acquaviva as papal chamberlain before the latter's entrance to the Society of Jesus. Pius IV died the same year as Lainez (1565).

<sup>44</sup> See Palmio's autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, ff. 150<sup>r</sup>-151).

governavano la Compagnia col P. Borgia, che era Vicario Generale,<sup>45</sup> con grandissima istanza si supplicava Sua Santità che si degnasse proveder quanto prima, acciò che questa fattione dei nuovi Christiani non andasse avanti, perché crescendo sarebbe divenuta a perdere et a dissipar la Compagnia et ad impedir il bene grande che Iddio per essa misericordiosamente si degnava operare.

[10] Havendo havuto il Papa questa informatione, [101<sup>v</sup>] commise all'Illustrissimo Cardinal Borromeo che considerasse con altri quattro cardinali ciò che si doveva fare per rimediare a questi disordini.<sup>46</sup> Il Cardinale Borromeo, perché amava molto la Compagnia, prima che trattasse niente di questo con altri Cardinali, perché molto si fidava di me,<sup>47</sup> mi comunicò questo negotio et mi disse che l'animo di Sua Santità era di provvedere per ogni modo, ma che prima di muovere cosa alcuna in questa materia voleva saper da me, se giudicavo che tal cosa si trattasse in Roma. Et mi disse che havrebbe fatto l'offitio col Papa che havessi giudicato doversi fare<sup>48</sup> per maggior servitio di Dio et maggior bene della Compagnia. Così havendo io pensato et raccomandato [102] questo negotio a Dio Nostro Signore, stando noi allhora congregati per fare il Generale et pensando firmamente che quello che fosse stato eletto havrebbe provveduto con il consiglio degli Assistenti che la Congregazione gli avesse dato<sup>xi</sup> senza publicar queste magagne<sup>49</sup> della nostra religione, persuasi all'Illustrissimo Borromeo che facesse offitio con Sua Santità che si contentasse che la Compagnia istessa da

---

<sup>xi</sup> *ex dati correxi*

---

<sup>45</sup> See Palmio's autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, f. 19<sup>r</sup>): "Un lungo catalogo de questi nuovi Christiani tra i quali ancora erano numerati alcuni che governavano a Roma la Compagnia et non si sapeva che havessero questa nota [...]. Et se è lecito a indovinare pare che tutto questo fusse presentato al Papa per impedire che Francesco Borgia non fosse Generale, come si temeva certo dovesse essere, massime vedendosi che era stato fatto vicario."

<sup>46</sup> See Palmio's autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, f. 106<sup>r</sup>-107<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>47</sup> Palmio was the head of the first Jesuit community established in Milan in 1563. He later became Borromeo's personal secretary. In spite of Palmio's job in Rome as assistant general, Borromeo insisted on having him in Milan for much time. That provoked a tension between the Jesuit curia in Rome and the cardinal (see *Mon Borgia* 4:250-1 and 264, and ARSI, *Ital.* 139, f. 283). For the epistolary between the two preserved at the *Ambrosiana* of Milan, see <http://epistolariosancarlo.ambrosiana.it/lettere.asp?idutente=3219>.

<sup>48</sup> read: si avessi giudicato che questo si doveva fare...

<sup>49</sup> *magagna*: flaw, imperfection, deformation.

se medesima provedesse, poiché si trovava in procinto per eleggere il nuovo Generale et per provvedere a molte cose che havevano bisogno di provisione con l'autorità della Congregatione Generale. Così, perché io affermai all'Illustrissimo Borromeo che la Compagnia havebbe proveduto, come io credevo di certo dovesse provvedere, accettò il consiglio e parer mio, giudicando [102<sup>v</sup>] che questo fosse il meglio. Ma in effetto non successe quello che mi era [stato] dato ad intendere [di] dover succedere, perseverando il P. Borgia nell'amore et nel credito che dava a questi nuovi Christiani. Però ancora che dasse intentione di voler provvedere, facendo io più volte grande istanza sopra di questo, sentendome essere obligato per l'offitio che havevo fatto con l'Illustrissimo Borromeo.<sup>50</sup> Nientedimeno non solamente non si pose rimedio alcuno, ma crescendo il numero et l'autorità di questi neofiti sotto il generalato del Padre Francesco, le cose si videro andar di giorno in giorno peggiorando, come gli eventi l'hanno mostrato: che è occorso nella 3<sup>a</sup> Congregazione, d'onde diversi altri scandali hanno [103] havuto origine.

[11] Questa divisione fra Christiani vecchi e nuovi di Spagna, sebene si manifestò et s'intese, come s'è detto, dopo che il P. Francesco Borgia fu fatto Commissario in Spagna et eletto in Roma Generale della Compagnia, nientedimeno [questa divisione] hebbe il principio suo quasi con [la nascita del]l'istessa Compagnia et si vide pullulare etiamdum<sup>51</sup> vivendo il P. Ignatio.<sup>52</sup> Et perché io ero<sup>xiii</sup> allhora uno dei quattro consultori dissegnato dall'istesso Padre [Ignatio], per alcune cose che udivo allhora venni in sospitione che non si camminasse con quella nettezza et semplicità che io mi persuadeva.<sup>53</sup> Et insino a quel tempo cominciai a temere dentro di me che non succedesse qualche imbarazzo nella Compagnia. Benché questa [103v] mia sospitione non

---

<sup>xiii</sup> *ex era correxi*

---

<sup>50</sup> For Palmio's defense of his presumed love for Spaniards and how he defended them from papal interference by convincing Borromeo to intercede, see his autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, f. 20).

<sup>51</sup> From Latin *etiamdum*: still, yet.

<sup>52</sup> Palmio is inconsistent here: earlier in the memorial he drew a picture of the early Society under Ignatius as resembling the early Church characterized by peace and union ([2] and [9]).

<sup>53</sup> *-eva* is an old Italian imperfect tense form for 1st person singular (modern *-evo*).

manifestai mai a persona alcuna, ma più presto mi riprendeva che se mi rappresentassero simili giuditii, stetti però sempre sopra di me, fuggendo alcuni che, essendosi avveduti meglio di me di queste rotture, alle volte ne parlavano. Et io per il gran concetto che havevo della santità del Padre Lainez,<sup>54</sup> glieli scopersi come persone che giudicavo fossero tentate e perturbate.<sup>xiii</sup> Ma col tempo ho conosciuto dipoi che havevano havuto, come si suol dire, un buon naso.<sup>55</sup> Et se nella Prima Congregatione<sup>56</sup> che si fece fossero stati uditi alcuni che per<sup>xiv</sup> rimediare ai mali della Compagnia parlorno liberamente, forse non sarebbono successe le cose che vediamo.<sup>57</sup>

[12] Ma perché [104] si lasciorno qualche volta trasportare più da quello che dovevano, *habentes quidem zelum Dei, sed non scientiam quam eos habere oportebat*,<sup>58</sup> non furono admesse le persuasioni et le ragioni loro. Di qui nacque l'indignatione del P. Bobadilla et d'altri Padri nella<sup>xv</sup> Prima Congregatione. Et fecero ogni diligenza per via di Paolo 4° di felice memoria che disfacesse il triumvirato che loro chiamavano et che havevano<sup>59</sup> allhora grande autorità in Roma, non si sapendo se non da pochi che erano neofiti, il governo dei quali sempre è dispiaciuto nella Compagnia et certo con ragione, perché procedevano già non come Padri, ma come padroni. Tanto che non è stata provincia nella [104<sup>v</sup>] Compagnia che non si sia gravissimamente lamentata [di loro] dalla 3<sup>a</sup> Congregatione insino allhora. Presenti<sup>xvi</sup> così le cose che erano secrete, per non haver mai voluto rimediarvi si sono fatti<sup>60</sup> saper con grandissimo scandalo al cielo et alla terra. Et io,

---

<sup>xiii</sup> *ex tentati et perturbati correxi*

<sup>xiv</sup> *additum supra lineam*

<sup>xv</sup> *ante de deletum*

<sup>xvi</sup> *ex presente correxi*

---

<sup>54</sup> See above [6].

<sup>55</sup> Meaning: Over time I have comprehended that they had foreseen what would have happened.

<sup>56</sup> Convoked after Loyola's death (1558) that elected the converso Láinez.

<sup>57</sup> Palmio refers here to the movement of *memorialistas* that in Palmio's view was led by conversos, especially Dionisio Vázquez, the main target of this memorial. See below [21] and [30].

<sup>58</sup> A paraphrase of *Romans* 10:2.

<sup>59</sup> Read: il quale aveva...

<sup>60</sup> Read: fatte.

essendo tornato da Milano,<sup>61</sup> ove mi tenne l'Illustrissimo Borromeo con ordine del Pontefice, il primo anno dell'Assistentaria<sup>62</sup> mia trovai le cose nostre in Roma così perturbate et gli animi dei nostri così alterati che non si sentivano se non querele et lamentationi. Et tanto apertamente si parlava d'una natione contra all'altra che pareva fosse stata affatto estinta quella nostra prima pace et unione, per la quale la Compagnia era allhora in admiratione al mondo.<sup>63</sup> Si che la prima causa et la prima [105] origine dei mali nostri è proceduta dalla moltitudine et dall'insolenza dei neofiti di Spagna et dal troppo credito che gli<sup>64</sup> [si] dette e troppo favor che gli<sup>65</sup> fece il P. Francesco Borgia.

[13] La 2<sup>a</sup> et 3<sup>a</sup> causa<sup>xvii</sup> et radice d'onde sono proceduti disturbi che ci travagliano è stata l'asprezza et la troppo grande iniquità del governo, perché s'erano i nuovi Christiani persuasi che la Compagnia non si potesse governar bene se non per mano di Spagnuoli. Però<sup>66</sup> di quattro provincie italiane tre erano governate dai provinciali spagnuoli<sup>67</sup> et il tutto si vedeva passar per mano di Spagnuoli. Erano soprintendenti spagnuoli,<sup>68</sup> visitatori spagnuoli,<sup>69</sup> secretari spagnuoli,<sup>70</sup> assistenti spagnuoli.<sup>71</sup> Perché allhora istessimo il Padre Everardo et

---

<sup>xvii</sup> *additum in margine*

---

<sup>61</sup> Palmio was summoned by Cardinal Borromeo to preach in Milan in the summer of 1563; there he remained until the Second General Congregation in 1565.

<sup>62</sup> Palmio was elected assistant general for Italy by GC 2 in 1565.

<sup>63</sup> Another example of Palmio's consistent inconsistency on the state of peace and union under Ignatius: see [2], [9], and [11].

<sup>64</sup> Read: loro.

<sup>65</sup> Read: loro.

<sup>66</sup> Read: infatti.

<sup>67</sup> Jerónimo Doménech in Sicily, Alfonso Salmerón in Naples, and Alonso Ruiz in Rome. The only Italian provincial was Leonetto Chiavone in Lombardy (see below [14]), replaced after his death by the Genoese Francesco Adorno.

<sup>68</sup> The office of "soprintendente" supervised college rectors.

<sup>69</sup> Palmio refers here especially to Ledesma and Ribadeneyra, who were appointed by Borja visitors of the Province of Lombardy (see below [14]). Visitors had delegated power over provincials.

<sup>70</sup> Palmio alludes here to Polanco, who was secretary general of the Society, and Vázquez, who was assisting him for the Iberian Peninsula.

<sup>71</sup> Besides the Spaniards mentioned in this memorial, one should add Doménech who succeeded Vázquez as rector of the Roman College; Jerónimo Rubiols who was rector of the colleges in Florence and Siena; Diego Suárez who was rector in Messina; and the converso Gaspar Hernández who was rector in Naples. See Fois, "Everard Mercurian," p. 21 and Padberg, "The Third General Congregation," p. 50.

io per un [105<sup>v</sup>] gran tempo [eravamo] fuori di Roma, io per Italia predicando et visitando, il Padre Everardo nella Francia con titolo di visitatore,<sup>72</sup> così in Roma furono<sup>73</sup> introdotti tutti questi dei quali si serviva il P. Borgia, et andio<sup>74</sup> mentre eravamo noi presenti assai più degli altri Assistenti eletti dalla [2<sup>a</sup>] Congregazione Generale (che era il P. Natale<sup>75</sup> sustituito al P. Antonio Araoz che non volse venire-crescendo a Roma<sup>xviii</sup> ogni giorno più le contese fra lui et il P. Borgia con grandissimo danno della Compagnia—Everardo, Mirone, et io<sup>76</sup>): Polanco, Madrid, Dionisio,<sup>77</sup> Ruiz,<sup>78</sup> Rodrighez,<sup>79</sup> Solier, Ribadanera, et molte volte chiamava ancora Ledesma,<sup>80</sup> Para et Emmanuel. Et benché in Roma fossero persone d'altre nazioni più [106] antiche et di miglior giuditio, tutti si lasciorno stare in un cantone. Di più, le cose di più importanza che si dovevano trattar dagli Assistenti eletti dalla Congregazione Generale, senza che a loro fussero<sup>81</sup> comunicate, passavano solamente per le mani di Polanco, Madrid [e] Dionisio,<sup>82</sup> di modo che gli Assistenti erano tenuti quasi per niente. Spesse volte se gli sentiva a dire<sup>83</sup> che il governo di Portugallo non poteva andar bene, se non fosse dato ai Castellani.<sup>84</sup> L'istesso si diceva di Germania, di Francia<sup>85</sup>

---

<sup>xviii</sup> *additum in margine*

---

<sup>72</sup> Both Palmio and Everard Mercurian were assistants general elected with Borja at GC 2 in 1565. Mercurian was appointed visitor in France 1569–71 (see Fois, “Everard Mercurian,” pp. 17–9) and Palmio was often requested by Borromeo to preach in Milan (see above).

<sup>73</sup> An old Italian form for *furono*.

<sup>74</sup> An old Italian word for *anche*.

<sup>75</sup> Nadal participated at the Second General Congregation and sat next to Polanco. The congregation elected him one of the six *definitores* and Borja asked him to work on the *aggiornamento* of the Jesuit Institute to the decrees of Trent, in which he participated with Lainez and Polanco two years earlier. He was appointed assistant general for Spain in October 1568, after his return from the Diet of Augsburg, where he was sent with Palmio's enemy, Diego de Ledesma, as papal theologians (1566).

<sup>76</sup> See above [7].

<sup>77</sup> Dionisio Vázquez. See above ([8]) and below ([20–1] and [30]).

<sup>78</sup> Alonso Ruiz. See above [8].

<sup>79</sup> Cristóbal Rodríguez. See above [8].

<sup>80</sup> See above [8].

<sup>81</sup> An old Italian form for *fossero*.

<sup>82</sup> Dionisio Vázquez.

<sup>83</sup> Read: si sentiva loro dire...

<sup>84</sup> Read: Castigliani.

<sup>85</sup> Under Borja, the superior provincial of France was Olivier Mannaerts and two Spanish converso Jesuits were professors there: Juan de Maldonado and Juan de Mariana. Fois argues that this situation was due to the low number of French Jesuits (Fois, “Everard Mercurian,” p. 18).



et di Fiandra; d'Italia non si diceva, perché diligentissimamente si metteva in prattica.<sup>86</sup>

[14] Et fecero quanto potero<sup>87</sup> per introdurre ancora nella provincia di Lombardia provinciale spagnuolo. Et a questo [106<sup>v</sup>] fine la fecero visitar da due Spagnuoli: Ledesma e Ribadenera. Et non poco si contristò quella provincia per il danno che hebbe da queste visite. Finalmente trovandosi il P. Borgia in Ferrara ammalato,<sup>88</sup> Polanco cercò occasione di visitarla et l'intentione che hebbe fu (come lui stesso disse a diverse persone che di tal parole si scandalizzarono) di sradicar l'odio che haveva quella provincia alli Spagnuoli per opera del P. Palmio. Così esaminando diverse persone in diversi collegi di quella provincia, corrippe malamente la simplicità di quella.<sup>89</sup> Imperoché molti vennero a suspicare<sup>90</sup> et a far giuditio di quelle cose, delle quali mai havevano sentito parlare, cioè che i Spagnuoli [107] volessero<sup>91</sup> dominare. In quella provincia insino allhora si viveva nella simplicità dei primi tempi et in essa tutte le nationi erano sincerissimamente amate et accarezzate.<sup>92</sup> Et così passando frequentissimamente per i Collegi di Lombardia, vedendo il candore et la carità con la quale si procedeva, restavano sopra modo edificati e consolati. Quello adunque che dispiaceva al P. Polanco et agli altri di sua qualità fu<sup>xix</sup> il veder quella provincia fosse governata da Italiani. Et perché io non havessi voluto<sup>xx</sup> acconsentire che Ribadenera vi restasse provinciale, come il P. Borgia, persuaso dai sodetti Padri, haveva deliberato di nominarlo Provinciale di quella Provincia.<sup>xxi</sup> Però<sup>xxii</sup> con le vive ragioni che io gli detti et per

---

<sup>xix</sup> Fuit deletum. Fu il *additum in margine*

<sup>xx</sup> ante havessi *insertum in margine*

<sup>xxi</sup> *additum in margine. Post in Lombardia deletum*

<sup>xxii</sup> *additum supra lineam*

---

<sup>86</sup> Meaning: the Italian Province was governed diligently. This statement sounds self-defensive—it was the author of this memorial who was provincial of Lombardy for six and assistant general for Italy for sixteen years.

<sup>87</sup> An old Italian form for *potessero*.

<sup>88</sup> See below [26]. In the middle of 1572 when Borja remained sick for four months on his return from France. Indeed, after his arrival in Rome, he died in two days (30 September).

<sup>89</sup> Contrasting the state of simplicity of the Italian province (and assistancy) before the ascendancy of conversos is a kind of rhetorical refrain of this and next paragraphs (see below [15]).

<sup>90</sup> An old Italian form for *sospettare*.

<sup>91</sup> Read: *volevano*.

<sup>92</sup> This is a self-defense allusion to the beginnings of the Lombardian Province, when Palmio was its superior.

la mala sodisfatione che si era havuta nella visita sua, [107<sup>v</sup>] fui causa che lasciasse<sup>93</sup> quel pensiero. Et havendo quella provincia huomini<sup>xxiii</sup> assai più sufficienti in dottrina et in bontà di<sup>94</sup> qualsivoglia [altro] che avesse potuto mandare, vinto dalle ragioni, il P. Borgia dichiarò Provinciale il P. Leonetto Schiavoni<sup>95</sup> che fu soggetto di grande essem-pio, di giuditio et di molta prudentia.

[15] Questa istessa inequalità si vide troppo apertamente nel dare la professione dei quattro voti et fino a questo tempo per la semplicità in che s'era vissuto in Italia, non s'era mai né pensato, né considerato inconveniente alcuno, ma gli effetti successi hanno scoperto et hanno fatto conoscere quello che si pretendeva. Imperoché nella Spagna s'è fatto grandissimo caso di questa professione [108] et molti l'hanno bramata et instantissimamente cercata. Et la causa di questo ardente desiderio non è stato<sup>96</sup> il voler morire al mondo et vivere a Dio, che è il fine della professione, ma dall'ambitione è proceduto, considerando loro che la professione dei quattro voti nella nostra Compagnia ha seco<sup>97</sup> congiunto il governo, perché i professi di quattro voti soli hanno nella Congregazione Generale voce attiva et passiva, soli questi sono Provinciali, Visitatori, Commissari et Assistenti. Et benché secondo le Costituzioni li collegi per ordinario dovrebbero<sup>98</sup> essere governati dai coadiutori spirituali,<sup>99</sup> nientedimeno quasi tutti hormai si vedono posti nella mano dei professi di quattro voti. Per il che l'ordine dei coadiutori spirituali è quasi affatto escluso [108<sup>v</sup>] dalle congregazioni provin-ciali, nelle quali si eleggono gli elettori che vanno alla Congregazione

---

xxiii *ante ogni deletum*

---

<sup>93</sup> Read: *lasciò*.

<sup>94</sup> Read: *che*.

<sup>95</sup> This is a misspelled name of Leonetto Chiavone.

<sup>96</sup> Read: *è stata*.

<sup>97</sup> An old Italian form for *con se*.

<sup>98</sup> An old Italian form for *dovrebbero*.

<sup>99</sup> *Const.* [421]: "The general, by himself or through another to whom he delegates his authority in this matter, will appoint one of the coadjutors in the Society as the rector," and [557]: "the professed [...] should not hold the ordinary of rectors of the colleges or universities of the Society (unless this is necessary or notably useful for these institutions)." These norms were abolished by GC 34 (1995) as a perceptive norm by explaining that "it has hardly ever been applied in a uniform way in the Society" (see *The Constitutions of the Society of Jesus and their complementary norms* (Saint Louis: The Institute of Jesuit Sources, 1996), p. 174.

Generale con li Provinciali.<sup>100</sup> Et perché a questa professione non si admettono se non quelli che hanno studiato quattro o almeno tre anni di theologia, hanno diligentissimamente procurato i Spagnuoli di studiar theologia, sapendo che questo era il mezzo di giungere alla professione di quattro voti.<sup>101</sup>

[16] Et quello [che] ci ha grandissimamente offeso è stato l'haver veduto darsi la professione di quattro voti ai neofiti, ai quali né per lettere, né per virtù se gli doveva dare.<sup>102</sup> Anzi, ad alcuni s'è data questa professione che meritavano [di] essere cacciati dalla Compagnia. Con molta offensione e mormoratione fu adnesso alla profe[s]sione [109] Aloisio Mendoza et da Roma fu mandato a Loreto con artificio, ove secretamente fu fatto professo. Et s'è escluso da questa professione il P. Fulvio Cardulo che per molti anni haveva servito alla Compagnia con singular pazienza e bontà. Et essendo huomo di bellissime lettere humane, versato nelle historie, poeta et oratore, et havendo insieme studiato theologia non meno di Aloisio, si lasciò,<sup>103</sup> sebene superava<sup>xxiv</sup> Aloisio et in meriti et in lettere. Gasparo Hernandez che era uscito dalla Compagnia et s'era fatto Carthusiano, fu di nuovo ricevuto et

---

<sup>xxiv</sup> *ante in ogni cosa deletum*

---

<sup>100</sup> See *Const.* [682]: "Those who should assemble in a general congregation are not all the subjects under obedience to the Society, nor even the approved scholastics, but the professed and some coadjutors if it seems opportune in our Lord to summon them." GC 34 "determined that formed coadjutors could be chosen as electors and substitutes for a general congregation, although there is a limitation on the number" (see *The Constitutions*, pp. 332–3).

<sup>101</sup> See *Const.* [518]: "[The professed] ought to possess sufficient learning in humane letters and the liberal arts and, beyond that, in scholastic theology and Sacred Scripture. And while some might be able to progress as much in a shorter time as others in a longer one, nevertheless for the sake of a common standard a terminus will need to be set, and this will be four complete years of theology following the arts course. Thus, to be admitted to profession one should have spent four years in the study of theology and made good progress to the glory of God our Lord. As evidence of his progress each one should before his profession defend theses in logic, philosophy, and scholastic theology. Four persons will be designated to object and to judge his sufficiency according to what they think in all truth and sincerity. When the subjects are found not to have enough learning, it is better that they wait until they have it. Similarly, those also ought to wait who have not obtained fully adequate testimony to their self-abnegation and religious virtues."

<sup>102</sup> Read: si doveva dare loro.

<sup>103</sup> Meaning: Cardulo accepted profession of three and not of four vows. Scaduto explains (*Francesco Borgia*, pp. 165–6) that Cardulo was offered profession of four vows, but he preferred to take only three.

fatto professo.<sup>104</sup> Et era nelle lettere nonché nei meriti assai inferiore al P. Fulvio. Capillia,<sup>105</sup> che due volte uscì dalla Compagnia in Spagna et si fece [109<sup>v</sup>] Carthusiano, venendo a Roma, fu ricevuto, ancora che gli Assistenti con molte ragioni a ciò s'opponessero, et adnesso nella Compagnia con questa solemnità.<sup>106</sup> Prima lo fecero Maestro dei Novizzi, offitio che in modo alcuno gli conveniva e per la instabilità et per essere stato Carthusiano, poi lo messero<sup>107</sup> a leggere theologia in Collegio. 3<sup>o</sup>—gli diedero la professione dei quattro voti et nientedimeno [Capella] di nuovo si partì dalla Compagnia et, ritornando, fu tuttavia ricevuto. La 4<sup>a</sup> volta partendosi dalla Compagnia, menò seco<sup>108</sup> un povero novizzo, il quale, vedendosi lontano da Roma tre o quattro miglia et intendendo che [Capella] voleva lasciar la Compagnia et farsi Carthusiano, lo piantò et se ne tornò indietro. Toledo,<sup>109</sup> [110] essendo uscito dalla Compagnia perché in Spagna non lo potevano tollerare, in Roma fu ricevuto con molta solemnità et, perché di nuovo si voleva partir se non lo facevano professo, gli diedero la professione. Con tutto questo ha lasciato la Compagnia et dei travagli che egli gli ha dati n'è scritto una lunga historia.<sup>110</sup> Venne a Roma Trancoso,<sup>111</sup> la cui vita fu infame in Parigi et di là si<sup>xxv</sup> partì con tanti scandali che è maraviglia

---

<sup>xxv</sup> ante i nostri deletum

---

<sup>104</sup> After having read the Carthusian Ludolph of Saxony's (c. 1300–78) *Life of Christ*, Loyola remained affected by the Carthusian spirituality. Indeed, he allowed the Jesuits to transfer to the Carthusian Order and even return to the Society from there. Thus, the story of Gaspar Hernández was not that exceptional as Palmio describes it here. See Charles van de Vorst, "La Compagnie de Jésus e la passage a l'Ordre des Chartreux (1540–1646)," *AHSI* 23 (1954): 3–34.

<sup>105</sup> No Jesuit with this name can be identified. Perhaps it is Maximilián Capella who pronounced his four vows in January 1566 (*ARSI, Germ. 1*, ff. 34<sup>r</sup>–35<sup>v</sup>), and represented the Lower German Province at the Congregation of Procurators in 1568 and took part in the Third General Congregation. Sometimes his name has a French form, Maximilien de la Chapelle, and is said to be originally from Lille (see Fois, "Everard Mercurian," p. 10) or from Flanders (*DHCJ* 4:3977).

<sup>106</sup> See Palmio's autobiography (*ARSI, Vitae 164*, f. 32).

<sup>107</sup> An old Italian form for *misero*.

<sup>108</sup> An old Italian word for *con sé*.

<sup>109</sup> There was no other Jesuit in that period with this name but Cardinal Francisco de Toledo Herrera (1532–96) who was a *converso* from Cordova (see the paragraph on him in Chapter Three). Palmio disparaged his Jewish ancestry and called him a "monster" in his autobiography (*ARSI, Vitae 164*, ff. 22–25; 45–6). However, Toledo never left the Society, as the text reads here, so it is unclear, to whom exactly Palmio refers, unless becoming a cardinal meant to him "leaving" the Society.

<sup>110</sup> Read: dei travagli che le (i.e. to the Society) ha dato n'è scritta una lunga historia.

<sup>111</sup> The Portuguese Antonio Trancoso.

che i nostri che restarono ivi per colpa sua non fossero lapidati. Et nientedimeno fu ricevuto nella Compagnia et con tante carezze che quasi ogni giorno mangiava col Generale et con gli Assistenti, con gravissima offensione di quelli che sapevano [110<sup>v</sup>] le cose sue. Questo huomo, essendo stato mandato al Collegio [Romano], dopo che l'ebbe tutto conguassato<sup>112</sup> et scandalizzato, si partì dalla Compagnia et con i favori che gli procurorno altri Spagnuoli che stavano nella corte di Roma,<sup>113</sup> fu ricevuto al servizio del Castellano.<sup>114</sup> Finalmente s'è vista tanta inegualità in ogni cosa che la Corte di Roma era piena di mormorationi contra di noi.<sup>115</sup>

[17] L'asprezza del governo era talmente cresciuta che, essendosi affatto perso l'amore, si viveva col timore e tremore sotto un governo dispotico et non paterno. Et per questa causa nell'interrogatorio che si scrisse nella 3<sup>a</sup> Congregatione Generale la prima cosa fu che si domandasse, se la persona che si haveva da eleggere per Generale si potesse sperare [111] che dovesse reggere con spirito paterno et non dispotico.<sup>116</sup>

[18] Questa terribilità si usava nelle altre nationi più presto che nei Spagnuoli. Et le scappate et mali diportamenti di questi s'escusavano et si coprivano. Et quando alcuni ne parlavano, lamentandosi dei mali diportamenti loro, subito si diceva che ciò procedeva dall'odio che si portava agli Spagn[u]oli,<sup>117</sup> come avvenne in<sup>xxvi</sup> Aloigio che

---

<sup>xxvi</sup> *ante ad deletum*

---

<sup>112</sup> Read: *conquassato*.

<sup>113</sup> I.e., the papal court.

<sup>114</sup> Meaning: he was received in Spain.

<sup>115</sup> Palmio's autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae 164*, f. 35<sup>r</sup>): "Tutta la corte murmurava, vedendo che non si faceva conto in la Compagnia se non d'una natione, d'onde nacque una grandissima aversione, non da Spagnuoli, ma da certa sorte di gente novamente condotta di Spagna in queste bande, molto diversa da tanti Spagnuoli santi, modesti et prudenti, che erano stati in Roma al tempo d'Ignatio et di Lainez, amati et honorati da tutti."

<sup>116</sup> That was the first article of a questionnaire given to the electors before the four-day period for investigating who appears most apt for the office of superior general: "[Future superior general] is one to believe that [...] will govern the Society in a paternal manner, and not in a tyrannical one, to use the words of Reverend Father Lainez, of holy memory, so that subjects have easy access to him and that they would happily in the Lord wish to open their hearts to him in confidence" (see Padberg, *For Matters of Greater Moment*: p. 136).

<sup>117</sup> This sentence sounds like Palmio's self-defense in front of the accusations of being an enemy of Spaniards. This apologetic style permeates Palmio's autobiography. See below, where Palmio makes clear his apology: "hanno detto che io perseguitava i Spagnuoli et che ero causa che gli altri similmente li perseguitassero" ([18]).

visse nel Collegio di Bologna con grandissimo scandalo et, uscendo dalla Compagnia, si fece conoscere quello che era.<sup>118</sup> Gioan Gorea in Milano,<sup>xxvii</sup> cui diportamenti havendo inteso il Cardinale Borromeo dal Castellano<sup>119</sup> di Milano, disse liberamente che la Compagnia lo doveva mandare in gallea.<sup>120</sup> Quest'huomo, dopo d'essere stato molti anni [111<sup>v</sup>] nella Compagnia sempre inquieto et havendo vissuto in quella assai licentiosamente et superbamente, da se stesso è uscito et ha fatto parlare assai di se stesso. Questo avvenne ancora a Padre Spessi,<sup>121</sup> il quale, dopo molti travagli e scandali<sup>xxviii</sup> che dette alla religione, l'ha abbandonata.<sup>122</sup> Et perché questi huomini volevano vivere licentiosamente, ogni volta che gli<sup>123</sup> superiori li volevano correggere et fare che caminassero come dovevano, serviendo a Roma, dicevano che nella Lombardia erano perseguitati i Spagnuoli. Et la persecutione che gli era fatta<sup>124</sup> (se però persecution nominarsi poteva) era questa che il Provinciale<sup>125</sup> non voleva permettere in modo alcuno che si stesse fuori di casa la notte insino a sei e sette ore a banchetti et a veder giocare cavallieri [112] et signore, come più volte fece Gorea in Modena e in Parma. Né gli permetteva<sup>126</sup> che tenessero danari, che si trattenessero tutto il giorno in visite di donnicciole et altre cose che non conviene scriverle. Et perché, mentre che io fui<sup>127</sup> Provinciale,<sup>128</sup> mai volsi comportare<sup>129</sup> simili cose, come han[no] fatto ancora quelli

---

<sup>xxvii</sup> il *deletum*

<sup>xxviii</sup> *additum in margine*

---

<sup>118</sup> Perhaps Luis Xuárez from Guadalajara, who probably left the Society in 1568 in Milan (see Scaduto, *Catalogo*, p. 160).

<sup>119</sup> Read: *Castellano*.

<sup>120</sup> Read: galea (galley) or galera (prison). Meaning: Cardinal Borromeo said that the Society should send Gorea [Gurrea] to prison. Yet, Cardinal Morone and Inquisitor Domenico da Imola were eager to have him in Modena for his exquisite talents in preaching. Palmio describes this episode in his autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, ff. 115<sup>v</sup>-6<sup>v</sup>). See also Scaduto, *Il governo*, p. 347 and 533-4; *L'azione*, pp. 528-9; and *L'opera*, pp. 5-6, 11, 41, and 317.

<sup>121</sup> \*1534 Saragossa; SJ 1553 Rome; priest 1559 Genoa; dismissed 1574 (see Scaduto, *Catalogo*, p. 140).

<sup>122</sup> Read: *la abandonò*.

<sup>123</sup> Read: (l)i.

<sup>124</sup> Read: che era fatta loro.

<sup>125</sup> That is Palmio himself.

<sup>126</sup> Read: né permetteva loro.

<sup>127</sup> Read: mentre io ero.

<sup>128</sup> During the years 1559-65.

<sup>129</sup> Meaning: *tollerare*.

che mi sono successi,<sup>130</sup> pensando [di] giustificarsi, hanno detto che io perseguitava<sup>131</sup> i Spagnuoli et che ero causa che gli altri similmente li perseguitassero. Et perché si lasciavano troppo dominar dalla passione, non volsero mai considerar che l'istesso modo si tenne con Aloisio Venetiano,<sup>132</sup> Olivela,<sup>133</sup> Antonio Venetiano<sup>134</sup> et altri che ancora che<sup>135</sup> fossero Italiani et di bello ingegno. Nientedimeno non si volse mai comportare il troppo licentioso loro vivere et, [112<sup>v</sup>] perché<sup>xxix</sup> non si volsero emendare et accettare paterni avvisi che gli erano dati,<sup>136</sup> finalmente si licentiorno dalla Compagnia. Lasciò Aloisio Guirino,<sup>137</sup> il Viperano,<sup>138</sup> Cosmo Figliarti,<sup>139</sup> et altri, pure Italiani, perché non si volevano correggere, si licentiorno, sì che la disciplina religiosa con carità et affetto paterno in tutti sempre si procurò. Né cosa mai indecente et ripagnante<sup>xxx</sup> alla religione si tolerò nei soggetti Italiani.<sup>140</sup>

Di Spagna uscì uno dalla Compagnia che si chiamava Urtado, parente di Ribadenera, et se ne venne a Roma,<sup>141</sup> ove si è diportato tanto

---

<sup>xxix</sup> *ante* benche e quelli e questi *deletum*

<sup>xxx</sup> *ex* ripagnante *correx*i

---

<sup>130</sup> Read: come fecero ancora quelli che mi furono successi. That is Chiavone and Adorno.

<sup>131</sup> Read: perseguitavo.

<sup>132</sup> Perhaps Alois Venato who was born in Naples, entered the Society in 1559, and was dismissed in Padua in 1560 (see Scaduto, *Catalogo*, p. 4)

<sup>133</sup> \*1542 Barcelona; SJ 1558 Catania. He was dismissed in 1562 in Bologna (see Scaduto, *Catalogo*, p. 108). He was not an Italian, as Palmio seems to believe here.

<sup>134</sup> \*1540 Monreale; SJ 1556. He abandoned the College of Padua in 1563 and returned to Monreale to become a poet (see Scaduto, *Il governo*, p. 265; Scaduto, *Catalogo*, p. 152).

<sup>135</sup> *Ancora che* means here "even though."

<sup>136</sup> Read: che erano dati loro.

<sup>137</sup> \*1535 Lecce; SJ 1557; priest 1561; dismissed 1571 (see Scaduto, *Catalogo*, p. 70).

<sup>138</sup> \*1535 Messina; SJ 1550; dismissed 1568. In a few years after Palmio wrote this memorial, Viperano was appointed bishop of Giovinazzo in Apulia (1589). He died in 1610 (see Scaduto, *Il governo*, p. 265 and Scaduto, *Catalogo*, p. 155 and 167).

<sup>139</sup> \*1542 Pistoia; SJ 1558; dismissed due to "bad health" in December 1569 (see Scaduto, *Catalogo*, p. 56).

<sup>140</sup> By its impersonal grammatical form Palmio attempts here to appear more objective, but he is talking about himself as the former superior provincial of Lombardy and assistant general for Italy.

<sup>141</sup> Palmio's autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae 164*, ff. 26 and 31<sup>v-r</sup>): "Giovanni Urtado di Spagna che era uscito là della Compagnia, et essendo nuovo cristiano non lo volevano più ricevere, così venne a Roma et fu abbrazzato da Borgia." The citation of Ribadeneira as a member of the converso party reinforces Palmio's claim of conspiracy based not only on ethnic background, but also on familiar ties.



male che sarebbe stato [di] grandissimo bene al Collegio Romano che mai l'havesse veduto. Costui però [lo] si tenne sempre, come si dice, nel bambaso<sup>142</sup> [113] [e] subito fu adnesso allo studio della filosofia senza che servisse mai in cosa alcuna della Compagnia et, perché ogni giorno doventava più insolente, essendo stato mandato in Spagna, finalmente uscì dalla Compagnia. Venne un altro par di Spagna nominato Loiando.<sup>143</sup> Et benché per l'insolenza sua mai l'havessero potuto tolerar in Spagna, in Roma fu abbracciato, imbalsamato et mandato al Collegio [Romano], d'onde pochi giorni dopo una mattina a buon'ora se ne fuggì. Fu ricevuto un altro che si chiamava Mena<sup>144</sup> [e] che era stato soldato. Et havendolo fatto studiar qualche poco, subito lo fecero ordinar sacerdote. Di questo huomo per spatio di dieci anni continui che stette in Perugia altro [113<sup>v</sup>] non s'è sentito che querele et cose di grandissima importanza, per le quali meritava essere severissimamente castigato et cacciato dalla Compagnia. Finalmente essendo capitate certe lettere in mano del Generale Everardo, che una donna scriveva al sodetto Mena, domandandogli che cosa voleva si facessero di certe robbe che gli<sup>145</sup> aveva lasciato in casa. Vedendosi scoperto et non havendo più i patroni che lo sostentavano, se ne fuggì.

[19] Vennero da Spagna sei o sette coadiutori tentati, perché volevano studiare et gli<sup>146</sup> fu concesso ciò che domandorno, per il che tutti i coadiutori del Collegio [Romano] gravissimamente si perturborno et ci fu da fare assai per quietarli. Et questi s'havessero [114] parlato di simil cosa, sarebbero stati molto bene sbassati e travagliati, come ad alcuni è avvenuto, i quali s'erano perturbati et mormoravano, vedendo questi essemi. Et questi Spagnuoli, a chi<sup>147</sup> fu concesso lo studio, insolentissimamente diportandosi, dettero<sup>148</sup> assai che pensare ai superiori et non vedevano, come mai potessero essere sacerdoti, se ben loro questo sopra ogni altra cosa pretendevano.

---

<sup>142</sup> *Bambaso* is a dialectical version of *bambagia*, which is the softest part of cotton. *Tener qualcuno nella bambagia* means to overprotect somebody.

<sup>143</sup> Unidentifiable.

<sup>144</sup> Rodrigo Mena.

<sup>145</sup> Read: le (alla donna).

<sup>146</sup> Read: loro.

<sup>147</sup> Read: ai quali...

<sup>148</sup> Read: diedero.

[20] Dionisio Vasches<sup>149</sup> messe il Collegio Romano in grandissima confusione, volendo mettere [in] prigione Camillo Carga, fratello di Giovan Carga, huomo di molta riputatione nella Corte, solamente perché haveva detto che non voleva fare non so che. Et comandò quattro di quei coadiutori spagnuoli ché lo prendessero, [114<sup>v</sup>] cosa che pose il Collegio in tanto conguasso che per molto tempo s'è risentito di quella alteratione, massime perché s'era inteso che haveva detto, che gli era stato dato il governo del Collegio Romano per domare i cervelli Italiani et per insegnarli<sup>150</sup> l'obediencia. Questo huomo è Christiano nuovo di bruttissimo aspetto et quello che importa più, pieno d'ogni sorte di doppiezza et di simulatorie. Et da lui sono proceduti infiniti scandali in Italia et in Spagna, come in altro luogo si narra più alla lunga.<sup>151</sup> Il Padre Borgia da Fiandra lo chiamò a Roma et a certo modo da lui si lasciò sempre governare. Et non sapessimo<sup>152</sup> mai, d'onde procedesse che il P. Borgia, huomo religiosissimo, dasse tanto credito [115] et estimasse tanto un huomo che a lui dette sempre grandissimi travagli et fu perniciosissimo alla Compagnia. Ma, benché tal fosse, nientedimeno ogni giorno di più procurava d'innalzarlo.<sup>153</sup> Più volte parlò meco<sup>154</sup> per farlo rettore del Collegio Romano et desiderava summamente che io approvassi questo suo disegno, ma la [mia] coscienza mai me lo permesse. Però domandandomi ogni giorno perché quest'huomo non mi piaceva, io gli risposi che per molte ragioni non mi poteva piacere. La prima era perché in lui regnava una gran doppiezza et perché lo vedevo pieno d'ambitione. La 2<sup>a</sup>—perché havevamo Italiani nel Collegio [Romano] per questo uffitio più idonei et dotati di gran virtù. La 3<sup>a</sup>—non essendo stato giudicato in Spagna atto a governare se non una [115<sup>v</sup>] casuccia, qual è Modena in Italia, con buona coscienza non se gli poteva dare il governo del primo<sup>155</sup> collegio che haveva la Compagnia. La 4<sup>a</sup>—essendo venuto nuovamente in queste bande,<sup>156</sup> non

---

<sup>149</sup> Vázquez. See above ([8] and [13]), and below ([30]). See also Palmio's autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, ff. 149<sup>v</sup>–150<sup>v</sup>).

<sup>150</sup> Read: insegnare loro.

<sup>151</sup> Palmio refers here probably to his autobiography (see ARSI, *Vitae* 164, ff. 149<sup>r</sup>–150<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>152</sup> Read: sapemmo.

<sup>153</sup> Meaning: to promote him.

<sup>154</sup> Read: con me.

<sup>155</sup> *Primo* not in a chronological sense, but as the most important and exemplary college, which the Roman College was.

<sup>156</sup> Meaning: in Italy.

haveva cognitione alcuna delle cose nostre. Et soggiunsi, “Et come Vostra Paternità suol dire che conviene che i Spagnuoli siano deputati ai governi di Spagna per la cognitione che hanno del paese et del modo che s’ha da tener con quella gente, per la medesima ragione, tenendosi soggetti Italiani di quelle parti atti et dotati<sup>xxxii</sup> che sono necessarie per<sup>xxxiii</sup> governare bene, par che a loro convenga dargli i governi d’Italia.”<sup>157</sup> La 5<sup>a</sup>-è la brutta sua ciera che pare un Moro et [116] ha gli occhi così traversi che spaventa quando si guarda. Però venendo alcun prelado per parlare al Rettore [del Collegio Romano] par non convenga se gli rappresenti avanti un huomo di così brutto aspetto e [in più] neofito. A queste ragioni non mi rispose una minima parola. Et nientedimeno, ancora che<sup>158</sup> tutti gli Assistenti, quando lo propose per farlo Rettore, gli contradicessero, lo volse per ogni modo far Rettore del Collegio Romano<sup>159</sup> et a me, che gli era stato tanto contrario, ordinò ché [io] lo intronizzassi.<sup>xxxiii</sup> <sup>160</sup> Ma il buon Padre [Borgia] molto presto se ne pentì et conobbe l’errore che haveva fatto per i scandali, tumulti et importantissime turbationi che successero nel Collegio per colpa di quest’huomo, il quale a me disse, lamentandosi del Padre Borgia, questo che qui seguita.<sup>161</sup> [116<sup>v</sup>] Che dandogli il sodetto Padre istruzioni e modo col quale doveva governare il Collegio Romano, gli disse che imitasse Gioan da Vega, il quale, essendo fatto Vicerè di Sicilia,<sup>162</sup> usò nel principio del suo governo rigorosissimamente giustizia con alcuni principali et, havendo a questo modo spaventati i Siciliani, li tenne sempre soggetti. Così fece questo povero huomo che bensì dimostrò

---

<sup>xxxii</sup> *additum in margine*

<sup>xxxiii</sup> *ante all \_\_\_ si deve comettere il governo d’Italia deletum*

<sup>xxxiii</sup> *correxi ex intronizzasse*

---

<sup>157</sup> This is a weak argument, for the community of the Roman College was international and not Italian.

<sup>158</sup> Meaning: even though.

<sup>159</sup> Palmio’s autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, f. 26–27<sup>r</sup>): “Come Dionisio Vazquez fu fatto Rettore del Collegio Romano da Borgia contra la mente de tutti li assistenti et d’altri Padri principali spagnoli che intravenero nella consulta.”

<sup>160</sup> Meaning: to invest him.

<sup>161</sup> Palmio’s autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, f. 27<sup>r</sup>–30): “Della grande turbatione et seditione che nacquero nel Collegio Romano per l’asprezza di Dionisio et della ferita mortale che all’hora hebbe la unione et la pace della Compagnia,” where much more colorful details of this episode can be found.

<sup>162</sup> The viceroy of Sicily Juan de Vega and his wife Leonor de Osorio were great supporters of the Society’s work on the island. Vega’s converso physician, Baltasar de Torres, entered the Society.

nel principio del suo governo essere senza giuditio et intelletto. Et perché secularmente et dispoticamente volse governare huomini religiosi, perse se stesso et mise tutti in grandissimo travaglio.

[21] Con questa institutione che disse [di] haver havuta dal P. Borgia volse mettere [in] prigione un Portoghese, chiamato [117] Roboredo,<sup>163</sup> il quale per quello che haveva fatto apena meritava, come si dice fra noi [gesuiti], di mangiare in tavola picciola.<sup>164</sup> Questo huomo adunque, veduto che lo volevano mettere [in] prigione, pian piano accostandosi alla porta del Collegio [Romano] pieno di timore, se ne fugì, correndo a casa dell'Ambasciatore di Portogallo.<sup>165</sup> Et Marco, [il compagno] del P. Generale [Borgia],<sup>166</sup> che si trovò presente a questo caso, con altri<sup>xxxiv</sup> Spagnuoli gli corse dietro. Questo vedendo i scolari, tutti uscirono fuori delle scuole, gridando "Piglia, piglia, ché il gat[t]ino fugge!," perché restassimo tutti molto bene mortificati. Ma dipoi molto più [restammo mortificati] per l'altra scempieria che [Vázquez] commesse contra Camillo Carga, che fu assai peggiore di questa, perché era, come ho detto, fratello [117<sup>v</sup>] di Gioan Carga, come ho detto, ben conosciuto et estimado nella corte.<sup>167</sup> Et Camillo era veramente buon giovane, se non che era alquanto vivetto. Allhora stando il Collegio [Romano] tutto in conguasso per questo caso et trovandosi il P. Generale assai turbato, mi ordinò che quanto prima andassi al Collegio et vedessi di quietarlo, come feci per gratia di Dio. Et hebbe allhora causa il P. Generale di conoscere che gli havevo detto la verità.<sup>168</sup> Essendo per queste cause Dionisio levato dal governo del Collegio Romano,<sup>169</sup> venne in tanta melanconia (perché la superbia et l'ambitione dalle quali era posseduto sopra modo l'affligevano) che

---

<sup>xxxiv</sup> *ante non so deletum*

---

<sup>163</sup> Unidentifiable.

<sup>164</sup> The little table is a penance where one eats at a low table while kneeling during the community meal.

<sup>165</sup> Perhaps Lourenco Pires de Tavora, who was Portugal's ambassador to the papal court since 1559.

<sup>166</sup> \*1527 Valls (Catalonia); SJ 1554; †1583 Barcelona (see Scaduto, *Catalogo*, p. 92), who probably was of Jewish descent.

<sup>167</sup> That is at the papal court.

<sup>168</sup> Compare Palmio's autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae 164*, f. 30–30<sup>v</sup>): "Come Dio fece conoscere al Borgia quanto s'era ingannato di Dionisio."

<sup>169</sup> After only one year in office as rector of the Roman College, Dionisio Vázquez was replaced by yet another Spanish Jesuit: Doménech. On Vázquez see above ([8], [13], and [20]) and below ([30]).

cominciò a dire che si voleva fare Cartusiano o Heremita. Et lamentandosi gravissimamente [118] meco del P. Borgia, lo nominava autore di tutte le scappate che egli haveva fatto. Con tutto questo [P. Borgia] non si risolse di lavarsi le mani di questo huomo.<sup>170</sup> Ma fomentando più presto la superbia di lui, con intentione di voler sollevarlo dalla malinconia che lo teneva oppresso, lo mandò a visitar la Provincia di Napoli, dove tuttavia persevera Viceprovinciale,<sup>171</sup> ancora che di lui ci venghino<sup>172</sup> scritte ogni settimana [sulle] diverse scappate che fa in quella provincia et mandate querele etiandio da gentilissimi<sup>xxxv</sup> forastieri [e] grandissimi benefattori nostri per li mali modi che tiene con loro. Per me son certo, essendo il P. Borgia huomo così virtuoso et religioso com'è, che desidera levare affatto dal governo quest'huomo, ma non lo fa, [118<sup>v</sup>] perché è ingannato et [perché] gli è [stato] dato ad intendere che questa sarebbe occasione agli Italiani d'alzarsi troppo contra Spagnuoli. Et nientedimeno chiaramente si vede che siano [Spagnuoli] in termine, [et] che se non si procede bene, e presto restarà macchiato il buon nome et la buona fama della Compagnia in Napoli, come [del resto] è avvenuto, perché finalmente è stato tolto Dionisio di Napoli come huomo infame.<sup>173</sup> Et nella Spagna è stato autore dei tumulti che ci travagliano et ci travaglieranno, se Dio per sua gran misericordia non ci mette la mano.<sup>174</sup>

[22] I vecchi Christiani e tutti i buoni Spagnuoli sanno et conoscono molto bene che di cuore gli<sup>175</sup> amiamo et di questo ne sono più che certi. Et [119] nelle Congregazioni Generali seconda e terza han toccato con mano che tutto il mal loro e nostro è proceduto dai neofiti et da quelli particolarmente che governavano in Roma. Et con che raggion si può lamentare la nation spagnuola che nella Italia si mettano Provinciali, Visitatori e Rettori italiani. Prima si lamentavano,

---

<sup>xxxv</sup> *ex gentillissimi correx*

---

<sup>170</sup> Meaning: Borgia did not decide to get rid of Vázquez.

<sup>171</sup> This information is inconsistent with what Palmio writes at the end of this paragraph, when he mentions that Vázquez was fired from his office in Naples and sent to Spain, where he would provoke many troubles. Also the next sentence is written as if Borja were still alive.

<sup>172</sup> Read: vengono.

<sup>173</sup> See Palmio's autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, f. 30<sup>r</sup>-31<sup>r</sup>): "Della turbatione che causò Dionisio in Napoli." See also *Vitae* 164, f. 44.

<sup>174</sup> See Palmio's autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, f. 105<sup>r</sup>). See above [11] and below [30].

<sup>175</sup> Read: li.

perché non si adoperavano gli Italiani, non vi essendo soggetti che fossero atti et idonei ai governi; adesso, ché ne vedono tanti sufficienti et ché s'adoperano come si fa in tutte le altre nationi, dicono che non ci<sup>xxxvi</sup> vogliamo servir dei Spagnuoli. Che diriano,<sup>176</sup> se in Spagna si mandassero Provinciali, Visitatori e Rettori italiani o d'altra natione? Ben disse un giorno la Santità di Nostro Signore<sup>177</sup> che questa natione s'alzava troppo [119<sup>v</sup>] nella Compagnia. Di più, sappiamo certo che queste sono querele et lamentationi dei neofiti che vogliono in ogni luogo dominare. Per il che la Compagnia si trova agitata<sup>xxxvii</sup> dalla tempesta delle discordie et delle dissensioni.

[23] Nella 3<sup>a</sup> Congregazione Generale<sup>178</sup> troppo apertamente si vide l'inequalità delle nationi, perché di quattro Provinciali che havemo in Italia, da quella di Lombardia solo vennero tre Italiani et dalle altre tre (Romana,<sup>xxxviii</sup> Napoletana et Siciliana) vennero Spagnuoli<sup>xxxix</sup> et furno nove. Et nientedimeno in tutte queste quattro Provincie [c']erano soggetti italiani degni d'essere eletti.<sup>xl</sup> Ma perché la maggior parte dei professi erano Spagnuoli, [li] elessero [120] della natia loro. Et così s'è dichiarato che facevano tanti professi spagnuoli a questo fine et li spargevano per le provincie. In somma di 47 voti che si trovorno nella sodetta Congregazione, 28 erano Spagnuoli et nientedimeno 24 bastavano per eleggere il Generale.<sup>179</sup> Alcune settimane prima che si

---

<sup>xxxvi</sup> *Ex si correxi*

<sup>xxxvii</sup> *ante nelle te deletum*

<sup>xxxviii</sup> *ante vennero deletum*

<sup>xxxix</sup> *ante tre deletum*

<sup>xl</sup> *additum in margine*

---

<sup>176</sup> Read: direbbero.

<sup>177</sup> It was said by Pope Gregory XIII during an audience with Palmio that is described by the latter below ([23]).

<sup>178</sup> Palmio's autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, f. 37<sup>v</sup>): "Della turbatione nella quale fu fatto Everardo generale et delle cose successe nel suo generalato piene di travaglio et di scandalo." See also *Vitae* 164, ff. 88–9. The Third General Congregation opened on 12 April and ended on 16 June 1573. It was convoked by Polanco who was elected vicar general after Borja's death. See Padberg, "The Third General Congregation," pp. 49–75.

<sup>179</sup> If there were 48 delegates at the congregation, the Spaniards comprised 50 per cent (24 votes), so they were actually one vote short of a majority (25)—contrary to what Palmio claims here. Eventually, Mercurian was elected with 27 votes on the first ballot, "se bene Polanco hebbe alcuni voti" (see Palmio's autobiography in ARSI, *Vitae* 164, f. 39<sup>r</sup>). 13 votes were cast for Spanish candidates. It follows that at least 3 Spaniards must have voted for Mercurian and that Polanco must have received fewer than 13 votes.

cominciasse la Congregazione si intese che si era dato informazione al Papa<sup>180</sup> che la maggior parte delle persone della Compagnia erano Spagnuoli et che non c'era soggetto che fosse atto al Generalato, se non tra Spagnuoli. Et ci fu gran congettura che detta informazione fosse data al Papa per mezzo di Polanco.<sup>181</sup> Et non è vero che tra le altre nationi non si trovasse persona idonea per il Generalato. Prima uno dei principali cardinali ci accusò [120<sup>v</sup>] di questa informazione data al Papa.<sup>182</sup> Et come s'intese da un'altro cardinale, questo fatto si scoperse in questo modo: perché alcuni cardinali molto principali parlorno al Papa, mossi dalle lettere del Re di Portogallo<sup>183</sup> et ancora, come si disse, del Re di Spagna, acciò Sua Santità provedesse che non fosse sempre Generale spagnuolo. Et benché sopra ciò havesse anch'Ella havute lettere dalli istessi Re del sodetto timore, [Sua Santità] rispose che non si poteva far Generale se non spagnuolo, perché haveva havuto informazione che eravamo quasi tutti Spagnuoli et che fra noi non v'era huomo atto al Generalato, se non dalla natione spagnuola.<sup>184</sup>

[24] Da questa risposta del Papa giudicorno i Cardinali che fosse trama dei Spagnuoli et così lo pregorno ché si degnasse cercar la verità. Però fatta la [121] Congregazione Generale, mi disse uno di quei Cardinali che haveva parlato al Papa che, per intendere se erano vere le informationi che gli erano state date, dette Sua Santità commissione a due cardinali che non mi nominò, né manco io cercai di saper chi fossero, acciò che si informassero diligentissimamente della verità, cioè del numero delle persone della Compagnia; degli elettori che dovevano venire alla Congregazione; quanti voti erano necessari per l'elettione del Generale; della qualità et sufficienza di diverse persone di diverse nationi, commettendo agl'istessi cardinali che da parte di Sua Santità comandassero alle persone che sopra ciò fossero da loro esaminate in virtù di santa obedientia a dir la verità. Et gli proibissero

<sup>180</sup> Pope Gregory XIII.

<sup>181</sup> As vicar general Polanco was summoned by Pope Gregory XIII on 15 April 1573.

<sup>182</sup> It was probably Cardinal Alessandro Farnese, the grandson of Pope Paul III (who approved the Society in 1540) and a major Jesuit benefactor. It was this cardinal who informed Polanco about pope's desire to receive him (see Padberg, "The Third General Congregation," p. 52).

<sup>183</sup> King Sebastian I of Portugal (1554–78). His confessor and companion was a Portuguese Jesuit, Gonçalves da Câmara, a cousin of L. Henriques, confessor of the Cardinal Infante.

<sup>184</sup> Pope Gregory XIII would have said that and suggested the candidacy of Mercurian during his audience with Polanco on April 15 (see *DHCJ* 2:1612).



sotto pena di scomunica, cui assoluzione fosse riservata [121<sup>v</sup>] a Sua Santità, ché non dicessero a persona vivente cosa alcuna di quanto erano stati ricercati, che dovessero dire per ordine e comandamento suo. A questo modo Sua Santità hebbe una essatta e compita informatione d'ogni cosa.

[25] Poi, havuta questa informatione, [Sua Santità] fece chiamare a se il P. Polanco et gli ordinò che disponesse le cose di tal maniera che non fosse eletto Generale spagnuolo. Et allhora interrogò molto esattamente di tutto quello che haveva inteso per vedere ciò che egli rispondeva. Et con le risposte che [Polanco] diede restò Sua Santità molto poco sodisfatta di lui. L'istesso offitio fece l'Illustrissimo Farnese<sup>185</sup> da parte di Sua Santità con Polanco et [questi] contrastò sopra di questo molto alla lunga con Sua Signoria Illustrissima. Et benché il Cardinale l'esortasse ad obedire et a non far tante [122] repliche, nientedimeno [Polanco] non si quietò.<sup>186</sup> Di tutto questo che trattò e col Papa e col Card. Farnese [Polanco] mai fece una minima parola con noi altri Assistenti, ma ben si vedeva ritirarsi con Madrid, Natale,<sup>187</sup> Ribadenera et altri Spagnuoli, il che ci dava non poco da pensare. Primo, per le cose che haveva fatte e dette in Lombardia. 2<sup>o</sup>, per esser venuto da Ferrara a Roma senza causa et haver procurato certo breve per il P. Borgia, nel quale il Papa si doleva della sua infirmità con allegrarsi però d'haver veduto *antiquum amicum et familiarem nostrum Polancum*, parole che ci dettero gran sospetto et dipoi si seppe che il sudetto breve era stato formato e scritto da un amico suo che lo volse servire con quelle parole. 3<sup>o</sup>, perché, essendo [122<sup>v</sup>] ritornato a Ferrara, fece grandissima istanza al P. Natale, Vicario,<sup>188</sup> ché mandasse il sodetto breve per tutte le province oltramontane sotto pretesto che in questo si vedesse et s'intendesse l'amore che il Papa portava al Padre Generale. Ma l'intention sua fu, come dipoi si scoperse, che in tutta la Compagnia s'intendesse che gli era caro il Papa per quelle parole. Ma gli avvenne tutto il contrario, perché *in conspectu omnium nostrorum* in camera del Papa restò confuso, come chiaramente si raccoglie da quello che Sua Santità gli disse, che è scritto e notato in un foglio da parte, quando andassimo

<sup>185</sup> Cardinal Alessandro Farnese.

<sup>186</sup> Polanco's objection was that excluding entire nation from the election would constitute constitutional problems (see Padberg, "The Third General Congregation," p. 52).

<sup>187</sup> Jerónimo Nadal (see above [12]–[13]).

<sup>188</sup> Nadal was vicar general during Borja's absence from Rome 1571–2.

per domandar la benedittione avanti il Collegio. Il ragionamento sopradetto che fece il Papa con Polanco ci fu narrato da un cardinale che l'haveva inteso [123] da Sua Santità. Il ragionamento e contrasto che passò con l'Illustrissimo Farnese ce lo disse Aloisio Mendoza,<sup>189</sup> il quale ancora che<sup>190</sup> fosse Spagnuolo, gravemente s'offese di Polanco.

[26] Andassimo, il P. Canisio et io,<sup>191</sup> con ordine d'una consulta che sopra ciò si fece a parlare a Sua Santità, che era in Frascati, sopra alcune cose che occorreano per la morte del Cardinale d'Augusta.<sup>192</sup> Et dipoi che furno trattate le cose per le quali eravamo andati, voltandosi a me Sua Santità, mi fece queste interrogationi in presenza del P. Canisio. Primo, se erano giunti i Padri che dovevano venire alla Congregatione. 2º, quante persone vi si dovevano trovar d'ogni natione. 3º, quanti voti erano necessari per fare un generale. Et benché fosse del tutto informata Sua Santità, nientedimeno da diverse [123'] persone domandava per vedere se ci<sup>xli</sup> accordavamo insieme. Intendendo dalle risposte che io gli diedi, il gran numero dei voti che havevano i Spagnuoli, et come il P. Canisio<sup>193</sup> non fosse elettore,<sup>xlii</sup> et che dalla provincia sua in luogo di lui fossero venuti Spagnuoli, movendo il capo con grande admiratione disse, "Questo non sta bene. Faranno Spagnuoli ciò che vorranno." Et volendo io escusare il fatto, allhora Sua Santità, stendendo la mano su la mia spalla, disse queste parole: "Non bisogna che una natione s'alzi tanto fra noi; non conoscete il francischino? Il vostro P. Lainez nel Concilio di Trento procurava che si riformassero le religioni<sup>194</sup> et il franceschino gli disse: "Padre Lainez, ringratiate Dio

---

<sup>xli</sup> *ex si correxi*

<sup>xlii</sup> *ante Ret deletum*

---

<sup>189</sup> See [16] where Palmio narrates that in the process of admission to the profession of four vows Mendoza was preferred over Fulvio Cardulo.

<sup>190</sup> Meaning: even though.

<sup>191</sup> From this account it is clear that Palmio influenced Pope Gregory's decision to intervene during GC 3 as argued by Padberg ("The Third General Congregation," p. 50).

<sup>192</sup> See Palmio's autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, f. 38<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>193</sup> Peter Canisius was not a delegate at the congregation. He happened to be in Rome at the time, having been summoned by the pope. The congregation invited him to attend without right to vote in the election of assistants (see decree 5 in Padberg, *For Matters of Greater Importance*, p. 139). The delegate from his Upper Germany province was the provincial Paul Hoffaeus, who was not a Spaniard.

<sup>194</sup> Lainez took a very active part in all three sessions of the Council of Trent, but nothing is known about his dealings with the reformation of religious orders (see *DHCJ* 4:3833–7).

[124] che s[i]ete in principio della vostra religione, ma parlatemi di qui a 60 anni. Guardatevi pure di non guastare, perché vi sarà da fare dipoi a conciarvi.” Et soggiunse il Papa che non gli piaceva nella nostra religione il dominio di questa natione. Tornati che fossimo a Roma, narrai al P. Polanco quanto il Papa ci<sup>xliiii</sup> haveva detto. Et inchinando il capo, [Polanco] non rispose pure una parola, ma ben si vide una grande alteratione nella faccia sua. Di tutto quello che ci disse il Papa restò il P. Canisio sopra modo ammirato. Finalmente dalle risposte che diede il P. Polanco, quando gli andassimo a dimandar [al Papa] la benedictione avanti il<sup>xliv</sup> quatruiduo,<sup>195</sup> restassimo tutti gravemente offesi, ma molto più la Santità di Nostro Signore. Et [questi] [124<sup>v</sup>] hebbe a dire: “Questo huomo vuole essere Generale.”

Et di ciò c'è stata<sup>xlv</sup> gran sospitione.<sup>196</sup> Prima, per l'offitio che fece in Ferrara col Generale, acciò nominasse il Vicario, dicendo che se Dio permettesse altro della persona sua, che di certo sarebbe fatto Vicario un Italiano in Lombardia. 2.º, per haver condotto il povero Padre Francesco a Roma quasi per forza, che era moribondo.<sup>197</sup> 3.º, per le parole che gli disse l'istesso<sup>xlvi</sup> Padre per la strada: “Polanchilio Polanchiglio, tu vuoi essere Generale e noncha<sup>198</sup> sarai Generale.”<sup>199</sup> 4.º, per haver detto lui etianidio al Lucio Croce<sup>200</sup> che non poteva essere Generale se non spagnuolo. 5.º, perché domandando in Roma a me et ad altri che giuditio si facesse del P. Natale et di Madrid et di [125] alcuni altri Spagnuoli, apertamente si lasciava intendere che niuno di loro era atto per il Generalato et così, *exclusis illis*, veniva a restar lui solo atto al Generalato. 6.º, perché propose nella Congregatione Generale se la persona poteva dare il voto a se stessa con buona coscienza, giudicandosi più degna et più idonea di tutti. Et questo parlare

---

<sup>xliiii</sup> *ante mi deletum*

<sup>xliv</sup> *ante di deletum*

<sup>xlv</sup> *ex stato correxi*

<sup>xlvi</sup> *ante is deletum*

---

<sup>195</sup> On 15 April 1573, three days after the congregation convened but before the period of four days, the *quatruiduo*, had passed.

<sup>196</sup> Compare Palmio's autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, ff. 38 and 39).

<sup>197</sup> See above [14].

<sup>198</sup> Meaning: never (from Spanish “nunca”). The Spanish Jesuits in Rome spoke a sort of *Span-lian*.

<sup>199</sup> See Palmio's autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, f. 38), where Palmio reveals that Luisio Mendoza, Agostino Mazzin, and Marcos (Borja's servant) narrated this episode.

<sup>200</sup> Between the years 1532 and 1596 (see Scaduto, *Catalogo*, p. 39).

dispiacque a tutti et si dubitò che disegnasse la propria sua persona, massime che si sapeva che né lui né altri havrebbero dato il voto né a Natale né a Salmerone, che erano quelli sopra i quali si poteva designare della natione spagnuola.<sup>201</sup>

[27] La 4.<sup>a</sup> causa è stata la protesta che fecero i Padri Portughesi<sup>202</sup> che andarobbono al Papa, si non si dava ordine firmissimo ché non fosse [un] nuovo<sup>xlvii</sup> [125<sup>v</sup>] Cristiano eletto generale. Et come si è detto di sopra, vedendo che c'era pericolo che Polanco fosse eletto, dettero le lettere che havevano portate dal Re di Portogallo, dal Re Filippo<sup>203</sup> et Cardinale di Portogallo<sup>204</sup> al Papa et a diversi cardinali.<sup>205</sup>

---

<sup>xlvii</sup> *additum in margine*: La 4.a causa viene dalla protesta che feceri [sic] portughesi per escludere il P. Polanco

---

<sup>201</sup> One wonders why Polanco and others would not vote for Nadal or Salmerón.

<sup>202</sup> The Portuguese Jesuits attending the Congregation were Pedro da Fonseca, Inácio Martins, and Leão Henriques—a substitute for the sick provincial Jorge Serrão (see Rodrigues, *História da Companhia*, 2/1:307). The latter's right to participate in the congregation was questioned for he was appointed rather than elected as delegate (see Padberg, "The Third General Congregation," pp. 51–2).

<sup>203</sup> Ribadeneyra claimed that Philip wrote to his ambassador in Rome, Juan de Zúñiga, on Henriques's request, but unaware of the latter's intrigues (see Medina, "Everard Mercurian and Spain. Some Burning Issues," p. 945).

<sup>204</sup> The uncle of King Sebastian, Cardinal Infant Don Enrique (see Padberg, "The Third General Congregation," pp. 53–4). After the election of Mercurian, Pope Gregory XIII wrote letters to both King Sebastian and Cardinal Henry on 10 September 1575, in which he assured them that he sought to satisfy their desires insofar they were made known to him. They are preserved in the Archivio Segreto Vaticano, Arm. 44, vol. 22, ff. 65<sup>r</sup>–66<sup>v</sup> (see Gonçalves, "Jesuits in Portugal," pp. 710–1). Henry's anti-converso feelings were confirmed on other occasions: he pressed to remove the rector of the University of Évora, Paulo Ferrer, appointed to the position by Borja, because of his converso provenance (ARSI, *Lus.* 68, f. 51).

<sup>205</sup> Palmio's autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, f. 37<sup>r</sup>): "La provincia di Portogallo talmente si trovava alterata et turbata che i Padri venero rissoluti di fare ogni cosa acciò che il generalato non andasse in mano di novi cristiani, come facilmente poteva avvenire. Portorno adunque lettere al Papa del Re di Portogallo et del Cardinale et de alcuni Spagnuoli [...] nelle quali si supplicava S.S. che provedesse in ogni modo che il generalato non venesse in mano de novi Christiani [...]. Narravano insieme molte cose orende et scandalose de i novi cristiani condanati dall'Inquisitione in Portogallo et in Spagna, donde nasceva che erano in tanto odio appresso tutti et che tanto da loro si temeva" (37<sup>r</sup>). See also Palmio's autobiography, f. 96 and, especially, ff. 100–2: "Ché questi novi cristiani siano esclusi non solo dall'elettione, ma etiandio dalla Compagnia et intendo che questo è che pretendono il Re di Spagna e di Portogallo et con questa intentione erano venuti questi Padri portughesi e non l'hanno nascosto questa loro intentione, ma chiaramente l'hanno proposta et l'hanno domandata con grande istanza che la Congregatione vi provedesse, [because] nella nostra Compagnia che tutta è occupata nella dottrina et fede catholica e però ha bisogno d'huomini che non habbiano macchia alcuna et hanno insieme protestato e detto pubblicamente che faccino ricorso a S.S.tà se la Congregatione non vi provedeva e così lo fecero: [...] volevano che si facesse decreto *de excludendis istis neophytis*."

Et questo fu causa che il Papa mandasse il Cardinale di Como<sup>206</sup> a comandare che non si facesse Generale spagnuolo, come si dirà più abasso. I Padri Portughesi ebbero gran causa di far quello che fecero per le cose troppo scandalose che loro et altri narravano che di continuo uscivano dai neofiti et, da quello che habbiamo detto di sopra, si vede chiaramente che tutti i mali e disturbi della Compagnia sono proceduti da loro, come dalla prima origine.

[28] Ma prima che si narri [126] il successo della 3<sup>a</sup> Congregatione Generale, bisogna sapere che essendo arrivati tutti i Padri a Roma che dovevano intravenire nella Congregatione, la prima cosa che si fece fu eleggere dodici di diverse nationi che trattassero *quid mali videretur esse passa Societas* et da questi eletti furono trattate<sup>xlviii</sup> molte cose d'importanza. Poi, per le cose che s'intesero, furono eletti dalla Congregatione Generale tre Padri: il Dottor Torres,<sup>207</sup> il P. Offeo<sup>208</sup> et io, con ordine che considerassimo tutto quello che s'era trattato fra i dodici, tra i quali erano ancora i sodetti tre, et formassero l'interrogatorio per la eletione del Generale, il quale interrogatorio fu approvato da tutta la Congregatione senza pure mutare un parola. Dipoi che furono prese le informationi conforme all'interrogatorio, il [126<sup>v</sup>] Papa, per la causa detta di sopra, la mattina stessa che entrassimo in conclave per eleggere il generale, mandò il Cardinale di Como, il quale fece da parte di Sua Santità comandamento espresso alla Congregatione che non s'elegesse Generale spagnuolo alcuno per buoni rispetti che non occorreva dire.<sup>209</sup> Partito che fu il Cardinale, il P. Polanco, che era Vicario, propose<sup>210</sup> se si doveva obedire.<sup>211</sup> Et parendo a tutta la

---

<sup>xlviii</sup> *ex* trattati *correx*i

---

<sup>206</sup> Bartolomeo Gallio (1527–1607) was the Cardinal Secretary of State 1572–85. He was born near Como and hence was called “cardinal of Como” (see *The Cardinals of the Holy Roman Church*: <http://www.fiu.edu/~mirandas/bios1565.htm>).

<sup>207</sup> Miguel de Torres (1509–93) was provincial of Portugal (1552–3, 1555–61) and of Andalusia (1554–5), and rector in Lisbon (see *DHCJ* 4:3824).

<sup>208</sup> Paul Hoffaeus was superior of German Province (1569–81) and Assistant General for Germany under Acquaviva (1581–91). See Chapter Three on his memorial on unity addressed to Acquaviva.

<sup>209</sup> Cardinal Gallio arrived on the day of the ballot (April 22), interrupting Possevino's speech to the congregation on the necessary virtues that the newly elected superior general should have.

<sup>210</sup> Read: *chiese*.

<sup>211</sup> In his account of the congregation, Sacchini wrote that Polanco explained to Galli that they would obey, but that the situation presented grave difficulties meriting further discussion (see Sacchini, *Historiae*, p. 5 and Padberg, “The Third General Congregation,” p. 54).

Congregatione cosa troppo indegna che si mettesse in dubbio fra noi, se si doveva obedire al comandamento pontificio, [Polanco] determinò di mandar quattro persone a Sua Santità, sì per renderle le debite gratie per la cura che si degnava tener di noi, sì per pregarla humilissimamente [perché] si contentasse lasciare la [127] elettione del Generale libera alla Congregatione. Fossimo elletti quattro per far questo offitio col Papa et uno fu di questi il P. Leone, Portuguese, che haveva portate e date le sodette lettere.<sup>212</sup> Havendo la Sua Santità di Nostro Signore inteso l'humile domanda che si gli fece da parte della Congregatione, benignissimamente si contentò [di] concenderli<sup>213</sup> ciò che dimandava, ma con questa conditione che, accadendo che fosse eletto Spagnuolo, non si publicasse, se prima non se gli faceva intendere la persona che era stata eletta, perché veramente non fu mai intentione né di Sua Santità, né dei sudetti Re, né di persona alcuna della Congregatione escludere la nation spagnuola da Generale, ma solamente provvedere<sup>xlix</sup> che il generalato non andasse in mano di [un] Christiano nuovo.<sup>214</sup> Il giorno seguente adunque, dopo che si ottenne la libertà dal Papa, fu eletto Generale il P. [127v] Everardo Mercuriale.<sup>215</sup> Dipoi si elessero i quattro Assistenti che furono: Fonseca della natione Portuguese, Egidio per la Spagnuola, per le nationi tramontane Oliverio, per l'Italia io che ero<sup>l</sup> ancora stato Assistente del P. Francesco Borgia.<sup>216</sup>

[29] La<sup>li</sup> 5<sup>a</sup> causa fu l'indignatione del P. Polanco che nella Congregatione dei definitori, che eravamo dodici, lesse una scrittura

---

<sup>xlix</sup> *ante sapere a deletum*

<sup>l</sup> *ex era correxi*

<sup>li</sup> *in margine: La 5.a. La indignatione del Padre Polanco*

---

<sup>212</sup> According to Ribadeneyra's account, on the cardinal's departure the Spanish delegates did not reply and the delegates from other provinces were enraged at who may be the author of the intrigue. All eyes turned to the Portuguese and Leão Henriques threw himself on his knees, confessed his conspiracy and asked for forgiveness, offering himself to go back to the pope and request that Gregory revoke his interference. See *Historia de la Compañía de Jesús de las provincias de España y parte de las del Peru y nuova España y Philippinas* (ARSI, *Hisp.* 94, ff. 112–3). See also ARSI, *Congr.* 20b, f. 210<sup>r</sup>.

<sup>213</sup> Read: concedere loro.

<sup>214</sup> See Palmio's autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, f. 39).

<sup>215</sup> Mercurian was elected on 23 April.

<sup>216</sup> The four assistants general were elected on 9 May: Oliver Mannaerts for Germany, France, and Flanders; Gil González Dávila (*in absentia*) for Spain; Pedro da Fonseca for Portugal; and Benedetto Palmio for Italy, who indeed was assistant general already under Borja.

per la quale narrava l'elezione del Generale come ambita e procurata. Crebbero i disturbi per il decreto che<sup>lii</sup> proposero alcuni di questi nuovi Christiani in favor loro, per il quale pretendevano che niuno potesse<sup>liii</sup> essere escluso dal Generalato sotto questo titolo [solo] perché fosse Christiano nuovo.<sup>217</sup> A questo decreto si opposero i Portughesi con decreto contrario che presentorno, acciò restasse questa gente in [128] perpetuo esclusa dal Generalato. Per ottenere adunque questi neofiti l'intento loro<sup>liv</sup> procurorno secretissimamente per mezzo di un Cardinale [di] ottenere che il Papa comandasse che la Congregatione accettasse il decreto da loro proposto. Et procurorno fare ancora appresso Sua Santità sospetta l'elezione del Generale et dell'Assistente del Portogallo. Sopra queste cose si fece grandissima inquisitione per ordine del Generale et, essendosi eletti cinque padri di diverse nationi,<sup>218</sup> gli fu commesso et ordinato che procurassero d'intendere se nell'ottenere [il voto] n'era intravenuta macchia alcuna d'ambitione.<sup>219</sup> Et havendo questi padri fatta la debita diligenza col giuramento in publica congregatione, attestorno che le electioni erano state legittimamente fatte et che falsa era l'accusatione che fu deferita a Sua Santità. Però l'istessa Congregatione [128<sup>v</sup>] ordinò che il Generale desse<sup>220</sup> piena informatione della diligenza che s'era usata et della verità che s'era trovata con dichiarargli insieme che la Congregatione giudicava che per mantener la pace et unione nella Congregatione niuno dei sodetti decreti si dovesse accettare et approvare, rimettendosi però in questo et in ogni altra cosa a quanto havesse ordinato e comandato Sua Santità, la cui risposta fu laudare il parere della Congregatione, come appare dalla relatione che gli fece il Generale per ordine della

---

<sup>lii</sup> *ante di deletum*

<sup>liii</sup> *ante di loro deletum*

<sup>liv</sup> *additum in margine*

---

<sup>217</sup> See Palmio's autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, f. 43<sup>r</sup>-44), where Palmio writes also about a decree promoted mainly by Dionisio Vázquez on taking out of the *General Exam* the question about being New or Old Christian, which was strongly opposed by Palmio who was part of the team of *definitori*.

<sup>218</sup> When the pope learned about these allegations, he summoned Salmerón on 22 May to inquire about the scandal. The day after, Salmerón informed the congregation about his visit to the pope and Mercurian asked to set up a committee to investigate the charges. After a week of work, the committee composed of Salmerón, Francisco Adorno, Hoffaeus, Claude Matthieu, and Miguel de Torres unanimously judged that there were no irregularities (see ARSI, *Congr. 20b*, ff. 190<sup>r-v</sup> and 198<sup>r-v</sup>).

<sup>219</sup> See Palmio's autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, f. 39<sup>r</sup>)

<sup>220</sup> Read: desse.



Congregazione che si trova scritta in un foglio separato con la risposta del Papa.<sup>221</sup>

[30] Dalla esclusione di questo decreto che volevano fare i neofiti avvenne che si deliberono di far tutti gli offitii possibili, come han fatto appresso il Re di Spagna et il suo [129] consiglio, per separar la Spagna dall'obediencia del Generale.<sup>222</sup> Et l'autor principale di questa mala impresa è stato Dionisio Vasches, del quale s'è parlato di sopra,<sup>223</sup> con molti altri che si trovano notati nei *solii*<sup>224</sup> del P. Paolo Ernandes,<sup>225</sup> Alarcon et Cordoses<sup>226</sup> che dettero informatione fedele e prima di tutti gli offitii che faceva la lega di costoro in Spagna contra del Generale della Compagnia.

[31] La 6<sup>a</sup> è stato il gran mancamento del P. Everardo, il quale da se stesso s'intricò, lasciandosi ingannar da alcuni che cercavano *quae sua erant, non quae Jesu Christi*,<sup>227</sup> et suscitò grandi scandali et tumulti nella Compagnia.<sup>228</sup> Prima, perché volse difendere l'insolenza di Mazarino contra l'Illustrissimo Borromeo. 2<sup>o</sup>, perché si messe a perseguire [129<sup>v</sup>] ingiustamente et troppo impetuosamente due padri che havevano data certa informatione al Papa, acciò, come Padre benignissimamente che c'era, si degnasse avvisare il Generale che provedesse ad alcune cose. Et di questa istoria, perché è [stata] scritta alla lunga separatamente,<sup>229</sup> non dirò qui altro. Et havendo havuti i memoriali che furono dati al Re di Spagna contra di lui et della Compagnia, tacque, lasciando di fare la provisione che doveva et che poteva massime essendo stato informato il Sommo Pontefice di questi mali offitii che si facevano in

<sup>221</sup> I have been unable to trace this document.

<sup>222</sup> The movement of *memorialistas*. See above [11] and [21].

<sup>223</sup> See above ([8], [13], and [20]–[21]).

<sup>224</sup> Letters destined to the exclusive (*solii*) view of the superior general.

<sup>225</sup> Pablo Hernández was Mercurian's envoy to Spain (see Philip Endean, "The Strange Style of Prayer": Mercurian, Cordeses, and Álvarez," in McCoog, ed., *The Mercurian Project*, pp. 362–4).

<sup>226</sup> Antonio Cordeses (1518–1601) was admitted to the Society by Araoz in 1542. At the time of GC 3 he was provincial of Aragón. In 1573 he was appointed rector of the Penitentiary in Rome and superior of the Province of Toledo (–1578). During his tenure in Gandía and Aragón, he promoted the apostolate with moriscos (see *DHCJ* 1:952–3). He accused Ribadeneyra, Solier, and Santander of being part of the *memorialistas* movement.

<sup>227</sup> A paraphrase of *Philippians* 2:21.

<sup>228</sup> On how Mercurian's election "implied a sharp blow to the unity and charity within the Society," see Medina, "Everard Mercurian and Spain. Some Burning Issues," pp. 945sq.

<sup>229</sup> This document is unknown.

Spagna. Et havendo animo deliberato per l'amor grande che portava alla Compagnia di voler disfare et annichilare queste fattioni, ma il Generale, mettendosi a far quello che non doveva né poteva legittimamente fare, [130] lasciò correre le cose di Spagna senza farne una minima dimostrazione et, perché non se gli pose il rimedio quando se gli poteva mettere. Vedo che anderanno crescendo tanto [le fattioni] che causeranno ruina e confusione estrema nella Compagnia, se Dio per sua infinita misericordia non provvede.

[32] La 7<sup>a</sup> causa della quale sono proceduti molti travagli della Compagnia è stata l'essattione delle legitime,<sup>230</sup> sopra che haverei da scrivere molti fogli di carta. Et non è stata provincia alcuna delle nostre che di questa essattione gravissimamente non si sia lamentata per le querele et infamie che in ogni banda si sentivano spargersi contra di noi. In ogni luogo si litigava per essigere le legitime et per molte [130<sup>v</sup>] settimane nella 2<sup>a</sup> e 3<sup>a</sup> Congregatione Generale si disputò alla lunga con desiderio di levar questo scandalo che il mondo riceveva contra di noi.<sup>231</sup> I Principi, le Republiche [et] le Comunità gridavano contra di noi et i Padri di Spagna nella 2<sup>a</sup> Congregatione presentorno decreti fatti dal Re contra queste essattioni. Et con tutta la diligenza che si facesse per cavar danari da tutte le bande per sostentare il Collegio Romano che non haveva fundatione alcuna, nella 3<sup>a</sup> Congregatione lo ritrovassimo aggravato di 23,000 scudi di debito.<sup>232</sup> Come per essere sovvenuto et aiutato più volte ne ho parlato a Sua Santità et a molti cardinali con dargli<sup>233</sup> una esatta informatione dello stato del Collegio et dei debiti che havevamo et del modo et delle cause, le quali si [131] erano fatte. Finalmente, essendo restata Sua Santità chiarità della verità et conoscendo il frutto che si raccoglieva dal Collegio Romano, ci cominciò a provvedere, come l'havevo supplicato, di 5 mila scudi l'anno, sin che se gli offerisce occasione di fundarlo, come mi promesse di volerlo fondare. Et questa promessa, come si vede, liberarissimamente l'ha complita. Et se non havessimo havuto l'aiuto di questo benedetto Pontefice, senza fallo sarebbe andato a terra il Collegio di Roma. Et Dio ci fece conoscere che quando si fossimo disposti a lasciar tante liti che si facevano et seguitar la sententia dell'Apostolo per publica edificatione

<sup>230</sup> Palmio's autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, ff. 20<sup>r</sup>-).

<sup>231</sup> See Decree 8 of GC 2 and Decrees 17 and 20 of GC 3 in Padberg, *For Matters of Greater Moment*, pp. 113, 141-3.

<sup>232</sup> See Palmio's autobiography (ARSI, *Vitae* 164, ff. 40-41<sup>r</sup>).

<sup>233</sup> Read: con dare loro.

del mondo, *quia omnia licent, sed non omnia expedient*,<sup>234</sup> come veramente ci ha proveduto, et liberati dall'infamia che si sentiva in ogni banda [131<sup>v</sup>] spargersi contra la Compagnia.

[33] Et acciò che si veda a che [cosa] ci haveva ridotto la cura della robba con pretesto però buono d'allevare giovani al servizio di Dio, solo<sup>lv</sup> per fine<sup>235</sup> voglio contare. Venne a stare a Roma una Signora Lucretia, Siciliana, et essendosi maritata con un gentilhuomo, offerse tutta la sua robba, che era di qualche valore, con conditione che la volevano godere loro in vita et che dopo la morte restasse alla religione, purché la Compagnia pigliasse l'assunto di litigare et districare questa facultà et che a nome della Compagnia si litigasse per l'autorità che tiene in Sicilia, facendo però loro tutta la spesa. Il padre, che era dal P. Borgia deputato a trattare il negotio della robba, persuase al Generale, senza domandare [132] parere agli assistenti, come si faceva per ordinario in simili materie che si accettasse simile partito; ma, havendo ciò inteso gli Assistenti, procurorno che si repudiasse come cosa indegna della nostra religione.<sup>236</sup> Ma perché già s'era abbracciata tal impresa, si procurò d'andare avanti et di qui ne successero tanti inconvenienti che ci<sup>lvi</sup> confondevamo<sup>237</sup> quando ci erano detti. Et Dio per sua misericordia ce ne liberò et non permesse che simili facultà venissero alla Compagnia et per tal mezzo. Queste sono sette cause brevemente raccolte, donde sono nati i mali nostri, et humilmente prego la Maestà di Dio che ce ne liberi et conservi in gloria sua questa vigna *quam dextera sua plantavit*.<sup>238</sup>

---

<sup>lv</sup> Quale *ante* solo *delevi*.

<sup>lvi</sup> *ex* si *correx*i.

---

<sup>234</sup> 1 Corinthians 10:23.

<sup>235</sup> Read: alla fine.

<sup>236</sup> Meaning: of the Society of Jesus.

<sup>237</sup> Meaning: we were embarrassed.

<sup>238</sup> Psalm 79:16.

## APPENDIX II

### *HUMANI GENERIS INIMICUS* (1449) BY POPE NICHOLAS V

Nicolaus, Episcopus, servus servorum Dei, ad futuram rei memoriam:

Humani generis inimicus, illico quo verbum Dei cadere in bonam terram conspexit, operam dedit seminare zizaniam, ut, conculcato semine, nullum fructum produceret; prout vas electionis, Paulus apostolus, precipuus huius zizanie extirpator, refert quod in initio inter conversos ad fidem differentia antelationis exorta est, Iudeis cum gentilibus de prelatione certantibus, aliis aliter in Dei Ecclesiam scisuram inducere cupientibus, cum alii Cephae, alii Apollinis esse certarent; Redemptor noster hec providens, ab initio nascentis Ecclesie ordinavit: qui huiusmodi zizaniam extirparent, humanaque imbecillitate peccantibus aut laxis occurrerent; prout ipse Apostolus ad Romanos scribens, omne huius antelationis dissidium divinis verbis evertit; atque Petrus, apostolorum princeps, in singulis diocesibus ordinatis episcopis, omnem schismatum occasionem submovit. Nos, Redemptoris nostri exemplo, cuius vice ad huiusmodi potissime tollenda dissidia, locum, licet inmeriti, tenemus in terris, prefatorum exemplis edocti, omni vigili cura compellimur operam dare ut his, qui inter fideles possent aliquam divisionem parere, nostri pontificalis officii auctoritate occurramus, ut inter fideles caritas, amor ac unitas vigeat. Nihil enim est quod tam inter fideles conveniat quam quod in omnibus sit velle unum, inquente Apostolo: sicut enim corpus unum est et membra multa habet, omnia autem membra corporis, cum sint multa, unum corpus sunt, ita et Christus; etenim in uno spiritu omnes nos in unum corpus baptizati sumus, sive Iudei sive gentiles, sive servi, sive liberi; omnes in uno spiritu potati sumus; unum corpus, et unus spiritus, sicut vocati estis in unam spem vocationis vestre. Unus Dominus, una fides, unum baptisma, unus Deus et Pater omnium. Percepimus quosdam novos zizanie seminatores, affectantes huius unitatis et pacis, fidei nostre salutare fundamentum corrumpere; ac, quod per vas electionis apostolum Paulum extirpatum fuerat, dissidium, in diversis partibus, maxime in regnis carissimo filio nostro Ioanni, Castelle et Legionis regi illustri, subiectis, renovare; ausu temerario asserere quod qui, aut

ex gentilitate aut ex iudaismo, aut ex alio quovis errore christiane fidei veritatem cognoverunt et baptizati sunt, et, quod gravius est, eorum filios, propter novam assumptionem fidei non debere ad honores, dignitates, officia, tabellionatus et ad testimonium in chisticolarum causis perhibendum admitti; eos verbis et factis contumeliis afficientes; que, cum a Redemptoris nostri institutis aliena sint, eodem apostolo Paulo testante, cum dicit: Gloria et honor et pax omni operanti bonum, Iudeo et Greco; non est enim acceptio personarum apud Deum; et: Omnis qui credit in illum non confundetur; non enim est distinctio Iudei et Greci; nam idem Dominus omnium, dives in omnes qui invocant illum; et alibi: In Christo Iesu nec circumcisio aliquid valet, nec preputium, sed fides que per caritatem operatur. Hos, ut a veritate fidei catholice aberrantes, ad viam veritatis deducere, et quatenus qui in premissis excesserint, animadvertere cupientes, cum non tam auctoritatibus premissis divinis contradicant, sed et illustrium principum quondam Alphonsi, Sapientis cognominati, et Henrici, et carissimi filii nostri Ioannis moderni, Castelle et Legionis regum, pro fidei augmento perpetuis sanctionibus authenticis litteris eorum sigillis munitis, gravibus penis vallatis, et per nos visis et mature discussis, quibus sanxerunt ut inter noviter conversos ad fidem, maxime de populo israelitico, et antiquos christianos, nulla in honoribus, dignitatibus, officiis tam ecclesiasticis quam secularibus suscipiendis et habendis discretio fieret; ac affectantes, ut quisque que recta sunt sapiat; et qui, contra christiane legis normam, falsa seminare et proximos scandalizare, que unitatis et pacis contraria sunt presumpsere, debitis penis affecti, eorum errores agnoscant; prefatorum principum ordinationes et decreta, ut iuri et sacris canonibus conformia, super his edita, ex nostro proprio motu et certa scientia approbamus, confirmamus et apostolice auctoritatis munimine roboramus, ac omnibus et singulis cuiuscumque status, gradus aut conditionis fuerint, ecclesiasticis et secularibus, sub excommunicationis pena mandamus ut omnes et singulos ad christianam fidem conversos aut in futurum convertendos, seu ex gentilitate vel iudaismo aut ex quavis secta venerint aut venire contigerit, ac eorum posteros tam ecclesiasticos quam seculares, catholice et secundum quod decet christianum viventes, ad omnes dignitates, honores officia, tabellionatus, testium depositiones, et ad omnia alia, ad que alii christiani quantumcumque antiqui admitti solent, admittant; nec propter fidei novam receptionem, inter eos et alios christianos discretionem faciant, nec verbis aut facto contumeliis afficiant, nec affici permittant, sed omni eorum possibilitate contradicant et oppo-

nant; et eos omni caritate prosequantur et profiteantur sine personarum acceptione; omnes catholicos unum esse corpus in Christo secundum nostre fidei doctrinam, quos omnes tales esse, et pro talibus ab omnibus haberi harum serie decernimus et declaramus. Verum si qui ex his post baptisma reperiantur christianorum fidem non sapere, aut gentilium vel Iudeorum errores sectari, vel dolo aut ignorantia christiane fidei non servare precepta, quibus casibus que in Toletanis conciliis et maxime in capitulo Constituit, et alibi contra huiusmodi apostatas a fide Christi, non pariter cum aliis fidelibus bonis ad huiusmodi honores admittendos decreta sunt, locum sibi vindicant, prout prefati reges recte sacros canones intelligentes in premissis eorum constitutionibus, quasdam eorum regnorum leges interpretati sunt, aut alias minus quam christiano conveniat agere aut sapere. Qui de hoc scandalizatus fuerit, adeat ad competentem iudicem, et quod iustum est fieri, publica auctoritate iuris, servato ordine studeat; nec quisquam propria auctoritate, aut iuris ordine non servato, contra divinarum humanarumque legum doctrinam aliquid in eos aut eorum aliquem audeat attentare. Et quia parum est ordinationes fieri, nisi sint qui eas tueantur, venerabilibus fratribus archiepiscopo Hispalensi, aut qui nunc est, aut pro tempore erit dicte Ecclesie commendatario, et Toletano episcopo, ac Palentino, Abulense et Cordubense episcopis, necnon dilecto filio abbati monasterii sancti Facundi Legionis dioceseos, et cuilibet eorum in solidum, committimus et mandamus ut contra eos, qui contraria premissis in posterum dogmatizare presumpserint, et prefatis Christi fidelibus verbo aut facto propter premissa iniurias intulerint, aut hactenus intulerunt, et contra prestantes auxilium, consilium vel favorem, omni iuris sollemnitate omissa, sola facti veritate inspecta, singulis diebus et horis, ad privationis, inhabilitationis, personalis capture, et alias penas pecuniarias, prout qualitas delicti requirere videbitur, procedant, vel alter eorum procedat; non obstantibus felicitis recordationis Bonifacii Pape octavi predecessoris nostri, quibus cavetur ne quis extra suam civitatem et diocesim, nisi in certis exceptis casibus, et in illis ultra unam dietam a fine sue dioceseos, ad iudicium evocetur; seu ne iudices a Sede Apostolica deputati, predicta extra civitatem et diocesim in quibus deputati fuerint, contra quoscumque procedere; sive alii vel aliis vices suas committere, aut aliquos ultra unam dietam a fine dioceseos eorundem trahere presumant, ac de duabus dietis in concilio generali; quam aliis constitutionibus a Romanis Pontificibus predecessoribus nostris, tam iudicibus delegatis, quam aliis, edictis, que archiepiscoporum, abbatum, et aliorum predictorum,

ac cuiuslibet eorum iurisdictioni ac potestati, possent quomodolibet obviare, ceterisque contrariis quibuscumque; seu si alicui vel aliquibus communiter vel divisim a dicta Sede indultum sit, quod interdicti, suspendi vel excommunicari, aut ultra vel citra ad iudicium evocari non possint, per litteras apostolicas non facientes plenam et expressam, ac de verbo ad verbum de indulto huiusmodi, mentionem. Sane, quia difficile foret presentes litteras ad singula in quibus forsam de eis fides facienda foret, loca deferri volumus, et dicta auctoritate apostolica decernimus quod earum vero transumpto manu publica suscripto et alicuius ecclesiastice persone curie sigillo munito, fides plenaria adhibeatur, et proinde stetur ac si ipse presentes littere producte forent seu ostense: contradictores per censuram ecclesiasticam, appellatione postposita, compescendo. Nulli ergo omnino hominum liceat hanc paginam nostre approbationis, confirmationis, roborationis, mandati, constitutionis, et declarationis et voluntatis infringere, vel ei ausu temerario contraire. Si quis autem hoc attentare presumpserit, indignationem omnipotentis Dei, et beatorum Petri et Pauli, apostolorum eius, se noverit incursum. Datis februarii, Camarinensis diocesis, anno Incarnationis dominice millesimo quadragesimo quadragesimo nono, octavo kalendas octobris, pontificatus nostri anno tertio.”

Source: Oropesa, *Luz* [Alicante: Biblioteca Virtual Miguel de Cervantes, 2002], cap. XXXVIII.



## BIBLIOGRAPHY

### *Manuscript Sources*

- Alarcón, García Girón de. [1597 Memorial] (ARSI, *Instit.* 184/I, ff. 297<sup>r</sup>–312<sup>r</sup>).  
*Defensio Statuti Toletani* (ARSI, *Fondo Gesuitico*, Toledo 1641).
- Guzmán, Diego de. “Las razones que hay para que el decreto de la Quinta Congregación General se haya de abrogar y deshacer que determina que no sean recibidos los que son de linaje de Judíos o de Moros” (ARSI, *Instit.* 186e, ff. 353–8).
- Maggio, Lorenzo. “De unione animorum in Societate: restauranda et servanda” (ARSI, *Instit.* 178, ff. 154–61).
- Palmio, Benedetto. [1588? Memorial] (ARSI, *Instit.* 106, ff. 92–132).
- Possevino, Antonio. [1576 Memorial] (ARSI, *Congregationes* 20b, ff. 206–12).
- . [1598 Memorial] (ARSI, *Instit.* 184/II, ff. 349–52. *Congregationes* 26, ff. 28–30 and 288–92).
- Ribadeneyra, Pedro de. “Las razones que se me ofrecen para no hacer novedad en el admitir gente en la Compañía” (ARSI, *Instit.* 184 I, ff. 292<sup>r</sup>–5<sup>r</sup>).
- . *Historia de la Compañía de Jesús de las provincias de España y parte de las del Perú y nueva España y Philipinas* (ARSI, *Hispania* 94).
- Rodrigues, Manuel. “De baptizandis ex progenie Judaeorum” (*Instit.* 184 II, ff. 360–4).
- . “De gente bizcayna” (*Instit.* 186e, ff. 327–51<sup>v</sup>).
- . “De unione animorum” (*Instit.* 178, ff. 162–4).
- . [Postulate to GC 5] (ARSI, *Instit.* 184/II, f. 356).
- Santiváñez, Juan de. *Historia de la Provincia de Andalucía de la Compañía de Jesús* (ARSI).

### *Primary Sources: MHSI*

The following are the volumes in the *Monumenta Historica Societatis Iesu*, to which I refer in the book.

- Bobadillae Monumenta* [*Mon Bobad.*]. Edited by D. Restrepo (Madrid, 1913).
- Epistolae et Acta patris Iacobi Lainii secundi praepositi generalis Societatis Iesu* [*Mon Lainéz*]. 8 vols. Edited by E. Astudillo, S.J. (Madrid, 1912–6).
- Epistolae et Monumenta P. Hieronymi Nadal* [*Mon Nadal*]. 6 vols. Edited by F. Cervós and M. Nicolau, vols. 1–4 (Madrid, 1898–1905); vols. 5–6 (Rome, 1962–4).
- Epistolae Mixtae ex variis Europae locis, 1537–1556* [*Epp. Mix.*]. 5 vols. Edited by V. Augusti (Madrid, 1898–1901).
- Epistolae PP. Paschasii Broeti, Claudii Jaji, Joannis Codurii, et Simonis Rodericii, S.I.* [*Mon Broet*]. Edited by F. Cervós (Madrid, 1903).
- Patris Petri de Ribadeneira, Societatis Iesu sacerdotis, confessiones, epistolae aliaque scripta inedita* [*Mon Rib*], 2 vols. Edited by D. Restrepo, S.J. and Joannes Vilar, S.J. (Madrid, 1920–3).
- Fontes Narrativi de S. Ignatio de Loyola et de Societatis Iesu initiis* [*Fontes Narr.*]. 4 vols. Edited by D. Fernández Zapico, C. Dalmases, and P. Leturia (Rome, 1943–65).
- Litterae Quadrimestres* [*Litt. Quadr.*]. 7 vols. Edited by M. Lecina and Fernández Zapico (Madrid and Rome, 1894–1932).
- Monumenta paedagogica* [*Mon paed.*] (Madrid: Augustini Avrial, 1901).
- Sancti Ignatii de Loyola Societatis Iesu Fundatoris Epistolae et Instructiones* [*Mon Ign.*]. 12 vols. Edited by M. Lecina, V. Augusti, and D. Restrepo (Madrid, 1903–11).

*Sanctus Franciscus Borgia* [Mon. Borgia]. 5 vols. Edited by I. Rodríguez, V. Augusti, and F. Cervós (Madrid, 1894–1911).

*Vita Ignatii Loiolae et rerum Societatis Iesu historia auctore Joanne Alphonso de Polanco* [Chronicon], 6 vols. Edited by J.M. Velez and V. Agustí, S.J. (Madrid, 1894–8).

#### Other Works

Abad, Camilo M. “Unas ‘Anotaciones’ del doctor Pedro Ortiz y de su hermano fray Francisco sobre los Ejercicios espirituales de san Ignacio,” *AHSI* 25 (1956): 437–54.

Adelman, Janet. *Blood Relations: Christian and Jew in The Merchant of Venice* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2008).

Alcázar, Bartolomé. *Chrono-historia de la Compañía de Jesús en la Provincia de Toledo, y elogios de sus varones illustres, fundadores, bienhechores, fautores, e hijos espirituales* (Madrid: Juan Garcia Infançon, 1710).

Astrain, Antonio, S.J. *Historia de la Compañía de Jesús en la asistencia de España*. 7 vols. (Madrid: Administración de Razón y Fe, 1902–25).

—. *Introducción Histórica a la Historia de la Compañía de Jesús* (Madrid: Rivadeneyra, 1912).

Bangert, William. *Jerome Nadal, S.J. 1507–1580: Tracking the First Generation of Jesuits* (Chicago: Loyola University Press, 1992).

—. *Claude Jay and Alfonso Salmerón: Two Early Jesuits* (Chicago: Loyola University Press, 1985).

Barcena, M.<sup>a</sup> Jesus Gómez. *Escultura gótica funeraria en Burgos* (Burgos: Diputación Provincial de Burgos, 1988).

Baron, Salo Wittmayer. *A Social and Religious History of the Jews*. Vol.14: “Late Middle Ages and Era of European Expansion, 1200–1650: Catholic Restoration of Wars of Religion” (New York: Columbia University Press, 1969).

Batllori, Miguel. *Gracián y el barroco* (Rome: Edizioni di Storia e Letteratura, 1958).

Benbassa, Esther and Aron Rodrigue. *Sephardi Jewry: A History of the Judeo-Spanish Community, 14th–20th Centuries* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 2000).

Bodian, Miriam. *Hebrews of the Portuguese Nation. Conversos and Community in Early Modern Amsterdam* (Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1997).

—. *Dying in the Law of Moses: Crypto-Jewish Martyrdom in the Iberian World* (Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 2007).

*The Cardinals of the Holy Roman Church*: <http://www.fiu.edu>.

Bover, Joaquín Maria. *Nobiliario Mallorquin* (Barcelona: José J. De Olañeta Editor, 1983).

Boyarín, Jonathan. *The Unconverted Self: Jews, Indians and the Identity of Christian Europe* (Chicago: Chicago University Press, 2009).

Braun, Harald E. *Juan de Mariana and Early Modern Spanish Political Thought* (Aldershot: Ashgate, 2007).

Brodrick, James. *The Origin of the Jesuits* (Chicago: Loyola University Press, 1960, 1940).

—. *The Progress of the Jesuits (1556–79)* (Chicago: Loyola University Press, 1986).

*Bullarium Romanum* (Turin: Seb. Franco et Henrico Dalmazzo editoribus, 1890).

Burgaleta, Claudio M. José Acosta, S.J. (1540–1600). *His Life and Thought* (Chicago: Loyola University Press, 1999).

Cacho, Ignacio Nazábal. *Ignigo de Loyola el heterodoxo* (San Sebastián: Universidad de Deusto, 2006).

Calderón, Evaristo Correa. *Baltasar Gracián: Su vida y su obra* (Madrid: Gredos, 1961).

Cañellas, Joan Nadal. *Jeroni Nadal Morey, la seva vida i la seva contribució a la cultura europea del s. xvi* (Palma de Mallorca: Promomallorca Edicions, 2002).

*The Cardinals of the Holy Roman Church. Biographical Dictionary*: <http://www.fiu.edu>.

- Caro Baroja, Julio. *Los Judíos en La España Moderna y Contemporánea* (Madrid: Ediciones Arion, 1961).
- Carrete, Carlos Parrondo, ed. *Fontes Iudaeorum Regni Castellae* (Salamanca: Universidad Pontificia de Salamanca; [Granada]: Universidad de Granada, 1981–[1997]), vol. 4: “Los judeoconversos de Almazán, 1501–1505: origen familiar de los Laínez.”
- Cartas de San Ignacio de Loyola*. 6 vols. (Madrid: La V. E Hijo de D.E. Aguado, 1874–89).
- The Catholic Encyclopedia* (<http://www.newadvent.org/cathen/07220a.htm>).
- Casar, M.F. García. *Fontes Iudaeorum Regni Castellae*, vol. 6: “El pasado judío de Ciudad Rodrigo” (Salamanca: Universidad Pontificia de Salamanca, 1992).
- Cereceda Feliciano, S.J., *Diego Laínez en la Europa religiosa de su tiempo: 1512–1565* (Madrid: Ediciones Cultura Hispánica, 1945).
- Cohen, Thomas. “Nation, Lineage, and Jesuit Unity in Antonio Possevino’s Memorial to Everard Mercurian (1576),” in *A Companhia de Jesus na Peninsula Iberica nos secs. XVI e XVII*. 2 vols. (Porto: Universidade do Porto Centro Inter-Universitário de História da Espiritualidade/Instituto do Cultura Portuguesa, 2004), vol. 1, pp. 540–61.
- Coleman, David. *Creating Christian Granada: Society & Religious Culture in an Old-World Frontier City, 1492–1600* (Ithaca: Cornell University Press, 2003).
- Cortès Cortès, Gabriel. *Historia de los Judíos Mallorquines y de sus descendientes cristianos* (Mallorca: Miquel Font, 1985).
- Coupeau, José Carlos. “Los diálogos de Nadal. Contexto histórico-literario y hecho retórico,” *Ignaziana* 3 (2007): 3–80.
- Cuart, Baltasar. *Colegiales mayores y limpieza de sangre durante la edad moderna: el Estatuto de S. Clemente de Bolonia (ss. XV–XIX)* (Salamanca: Ediciones Universidad de Salamanca, 1991).
- Dalmases, Cándido. “Santa Teresa y los Jesuitas. Precizando fechas y datos,” *AHSI* 35 (1966): 347–78.
- Decretalium D. Gregorii Papae IX. Compilatio Liber Tertius* ([www.thelatinlibrary.com/gregdecretals3.html](http://www.thelatinlibrary.com/gregdecretals3.html)).
- de la Costa, H. *The Jesuits in the Philippines* (Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1961).
- del Hoyo Arturo, Baltasar Gracián y Morales. *Obras completas* (Madrid: Aguilar, 1967).
- de Mielesi, Ugo. “Teresa d’Avila e i Padri della Compagnia di Gesù,” *La Civiltà Cattolica* 133 (1982): 234–43.
- Díaz y Díaz, Luis A., ed., *Alonso de Oropesa. Luz para conocimiento de los gentiles* (Madrid: Universidad Pontificia de Salamanca, 1979).
- Dicionário Seфарadi de sobrenomes* (Rio de Janeiro: Fraiha, 2003).
- Donnelly, John Patrick. “Antonio Possevino: From Secretary to Papal Legate in Sweden,” in McCoog, ed., *Mercurian Project*, pp. 323–49.
- Dudon, Paul. *St. Ignatius of Loyola* (Milwaukee: Bruce, 1949).
- Dueñas, José de. “Los Suárez de Toledo,” in *Razón y Fe* 138 (1948): 91–110.
- Encyclopedia Judaica*, 16 vols. (Jerusalem: Encyclopedia Judaica, 1972).
- Fabre, Pierre-Antoine. “La conversion infinie des conversos. Des ‘nouveaux-chrétiens’ dans la Compagnie de Jésus au 16<sup>e</sup> siècle,” *Annales HSS* 4 (1999) 875–93.
- . ed. *Marcel Bataillon. Les Jésuites dans l’Espagne du XVI<sup>e</sup> siècle* (Paris: Les Belles Lettres, 2009).
- Fejér, Jozef. *Defuncti primi saeculi Societatis Iesu* (Rome: Institutum Historicum Societatis Iesu, 1982).
- Ferreiro, Elvira Pérez, ed. *El Tratado de Uceda contra los Estatutos de Limpieza de Sangre: una reacción ante el establecimiento del Estatuto de Limpieza en la Orden Franciscana* (Madrid: Aben Ezra Ediciones, 2000).
- Foa, Anna. “Limpieza versus Mission: Church, Religious Orders, and Conversion in the Sixteenth Century” in Susan E. Myers and Steven J. McMichael, eds., *Friars and Jews in the Middle Ages and Renaissance* (Leiden: Brill, 2004), pp. 299–311.

- Franco, Juan Hernández. *Cultura y limpieza de sangre en la España moderna. Puritate sanguinis* (Murcia: Universidad de Murcia, 1996).
- Friedman, Jerome. "Jewish Conversion, the Spanish Pure Blood Laws and Reformation: A Revisionist View of Racial and Religious Antisemitism," in *Sixteenth Century Journal* 18/1 (Spring, 1987): 3–30.
- Gallego, Valentín Moreno. "Notas historiográficas al encuentro de Loyola y Vives," in Plazaola, ed., *Ignacio de Loyola y su tiempo*, pp. 901–7.
- García-Arenal, Mercedes and Fernando Rodríguez Mediano. "Jerónimo Román de la Higuera and the Lead Books of Sacromonte," in Ingram, ed., *Conversos and Moriscos*, pp. 243–68.
- Gerber, Jane S. *The Jews of Spain: A History of the Sephardic Experience* (New York: Free Press, 1992).
- Getino, A. "Vida y obras de Fr. Lope de Barrientos," *Annales Salmantinos* (1927): 181–204.
- Giammanco, Robert. "Sull'inautenticità del memoriale antigesuitico attributo a Benito Arias Montano," *AHSI* 26 (1957): 276–84.
- Gaudeau, Bernard. *De Petri Ioannis Perpiniani vita et operibus* (Paris: Retaux-Bray, 1891).
- Goldish, Matt. *Jewish Questions: Responsa on Sephardic Life in the Early Modern Period* (Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 2008).
- Gómez-Menor, José. "El linaje toledano de santa Teresa y de san Juan de la Cruz," *Toletum* 45–46 (1969–70): 88–141.
- . "La progenie ebrea del padre Pedro de Ribadeneyra S.I. (hijo del jurado de Polendo Alvaro Fusillo Ortiz de Cisneros)," *Sefarad* 36 (1976): 307–32.
- Goodier, Alban. "St. Teresa and the Society of Jesus," *The Month* 168 (1936): 395–405.
- Gonçalves, Nuno da Silva. "Jesuits in Portugal," in McCoog, ed., *Mercurian Project*, pp. 705–44.
- Goyena, Antonio Pérez. "Arias Montano y los Jesuitas," *Estudios eclesiásticos* 7 (1928): 273–317.
- Graizbord, David L. *Souls in Dispute: Converso Identities in Iberia and the Jewish Diaspora, 1580–1700. Jewish culture and contexts* (Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 2004).
- Granada, Fray Luis de la Orden de Santo Domingo, *Vida del Padre Maestro Juan de Ávila y las partes que ha de tener un predicador del Evangelio* (Madrid: Edibesa, 2000).
- Hering Torres, Max-Sebastian. *Rassismus in der Vormoderne: die "Reinheit des Blutes" im Spanien der Frühen Neuzeit* (Frankfurt: Campus, 2006).
- Hillgarth, J.N. *Readers and Books in Majorca 1229–1550* (Paris: CNRS, 1991).
- Ianuzzi, Isabella. "Mentalidad inquisitorial y jesuitas: el enfrentamiento entre el Cardenal Silíceo y la Compañía de Jesús," *Cuadernos de Historia Moderna* 24 (2000): 11–31.
- Iglesias, Ignacio. "Santa Teresa de Jesús y la espiritualidad ignaciana," *Manresa* 54 (1982): 291–311.
- Información en derecho. En defensa de la Bula conservatoria, dada por los Pontífices Pío V y Gregorio XIII a la Compañía de Jesús, Casas, Colegios y Religiosos dellos* (s.l., c. 1575).
- Ingram, Kevin. *Secret lives, public lies: The conversos and socio-religious non-conformism in the Spanish Golden Age*. Ph. D. Thesis (San Diego: University of California, 2006).
- , ed. *Conversos and Moriscos in Late Medieval Spain and Beyond*, Volume One: *Departures and Change* (Leiden: Brill Academic Publishers, 2009).
- . "Historiography, Historicity and the Conversos," in Ingram, ed., *Conversos and Moriscos*, pp. 335–56.
- Inquisición de Mallorca, Reconciliados y relajados, 1488–1691* (Barcelona: [M. Perdigó], 1946).

- Institutum Societatis Iesu* (Florence: Ex Typographia a SS. Conceptione, 1892–1893).  
 Jacobs, Hubert, ed. *Documenta Malucensia* (Rome: Institutum Historicum Societatis Iesu, 1974–84).
- Johnson, Harold B. “A Pedophile in the Palace” (<<http://people.virginia.edu/~hbj8n/pedophile.pdf>>).
- Jorge, Enrique. “San Francisco de Borja y Santa Teresa de Jesús,” *Manresa* 46 (1974): 43–64.
- Jurado, Manuel Ruiz. “San Juan de Ávila y la Compañía de Jesús,” *AHSI* 40 (1971): 153–72.
- . “Un caso de profetismo reformista en la Compañía de Jesús. Gandía 1547–1549,” *AHSI* 43 (1974): 217–66.
- Kamen, Henry. *The Spanish Inquisition: a historical revision* (New Haven: Yale University Press, 1998).
- . “Una crisis de conciencia en la Edad de Oro en España: Inquisición contra Limpieza de sangre,” *Bulletin Hispanique* 88/3–4 (1986): 321–56.
- . *Crisis and Change in Early Modern Spain* (Aldershot: Ashgate, 1993).
- . “Limpieza and the Ghost of Américo Castro: Racism as a Tool of Literary Analysis,” *Hispanic Review* 64/1 (1996): 19–26.
- Kaplan, Gregory B. *The Evolution of Converso Literature: The Writings of the Converted Jews of Medieval Spain* (Gainesville: University Press of Florida, 2002).
- King, Willard F. *Juan Ruiz de Alarcón, letrado y dramaturgo: su mundo mexicano y español* (México: Colegio de México, Centro de Estudios Lingüísticos y Literarios, 1989).
- Lacouture, Jean. *Jesuits: A Multibiography* (Washington, D.C.: Counterpoint, 1995).
- Lapaque, S. & V. Donare, eds. *António Vieira, “Sur les procédés de la Sainte Inquisition”. Propositions en faveur des gens de la nation juive* (Paris: Bayard, 2004).
- Lazar, Lance Gabriel. *Working in the Vineyard of the Lord: Jesuit Confraternities in Early Modern Italy* (Toronto: Toronto University Press, 2005).
- Lynn Hossain, Kimberly. *Arbiters of Faith, Agents of Empire: Spanish Inquisitors and their Careers, 1550–1650*. Ph.D. Thesis (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University, 2006).
- Losada, Angel, ed. *Erasmus in Hispania, Vives in Belgio. Acta colloquii Brugensis, 1985* (Leuven: Peeters, 1986).
- Longhurst, John E. “Saint Ignatius at Alcalá. 1526–1527,” *AHSI* 26 (1957): 252–6.
- . *Luther’s Ghost in Spain (1517–1546)* (Lawrence, Kan: Coronado Press, 1964).
- Machado, Diogo Barbosa. *Memorias para a historia de Portugal, que comprehendem o governo del rey D. Sebastião, unico em o nome, e decimo sexto entre os Monarchas Portuguezes* (Lisbon: na Oficina de Joseph António da Sylva, 1736).
- Mariana, Juan de. *Obras* (Madrid: Biblioteca de Autores Españoles, 1950).
- Marijuan, Rosario Porres and Teresa Benito Aguado. “El Estatuto de limpieza de sangre y sus repercusiones en Vitoria en tiempos de Felipe II,” in *Hispania* 60/2, núm. 205 (2000): 515–62.
- Martin, Melquiades Andrés. *El misterio de los alumbrados de Toledo, desvelado por sus contemporáneos (1523–1560). Discurso de apertura de curso 1976–1977* (Burgos: Facultad de Teología del Norte de España, 1976).
- Martina, Giacomo. *Storia della Compagnia de Gesù in Italia (1814–1983)* (Brescia: Morcelliana, 2003).
- Maryks, Robert, ed. *Giacomo Laínez. Prima biografia ignaziana* (Napoli: Centrum Ignatianum Spiritualitatis, 1996).
- . “Abnegación en los escritos de Jerónimo Nadal (1507–1580),” *Manresa* 73 (2001): 87–96.
- . “Jerónimo Nadal,” in *DEI*, pp. 1315–9.
- . “Census of the Books Written on Sacramental Confession (1554–1650),” *Annali di storia moderna e contemporanea*, anno X (2004): [415]–519.
- . *Saint Cicero and the Jesuits. The Influence of the Liberal Arts on the Adoption of Moral Probabilism* (Aldershot: Ashgate, 2008).

- Martz, Linda. "Converso Families in Fifteenth- and Sixteenth-Century Toledo: The Significance of Lineage," *Sefarad* 48 (1998): 1–79.
- McCoog, Thomas M. *The Mercurian Project: Forming Jesuit Culture, 1573–1580* (Rome: Institutum Historicum Societatis Iesu, 2004).
- McKinney, Ronald H. "The Baroque Casuistry of Baltasar Gracian," *The Modern Schoolman* 81/2 (2004): 79–95.
- Medina, Francisco de Borja. "Jesuitas en la armada contra Inglaterra," *AHSI* 58 (1989): 3–42.
- . "Ignacio de Loyola y la 'limpieza de sangre,'" in Plazaola, ed., *Ignacio de Loyola y su tiempo*, pp. 579–615.
- . "San Ignacio y los Judíos," *Anuario del Instituto Ignacio de Loyola* 4 (1997): 37–63.
- . "Precursores de Vieira: Jesuitas andaluses y castellanos en favor de los cristianos nuevos," in *Terceiro centenário da morte do Padre António Vieira. Congresso internacional. Actas* (Braga: Universidade Católica Portuguesa, 1999), pp. 491–519.
- . "Íñigo de Loyola y los mercaderes castellanos del Norte de Europa. La financiación de sus estudios en la Universidad de París," *AHSI* 51 (1999): 159–206.
- . "Ignacio de Loyola y la 'limpieza de sangre,'" *Encuentro Islamo-Cristiano* 339–340 (Julio–Agosto 2000): 2–16.
- . "Everard Mercurian and Spain. Some Burning Issues," in McCoog, ed., *Mercurian Project*, pp. 945–966.
- Melammed, Renée Levine. *A Question of Identity. Iberian Conversos in Historical Perspective* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2004).
- Millán, José Martínez. "La crisis del 'partido castellano' y la transformación de la Monarquía Hispana," *Cuadernos de Historia Moderna* 2 (2003): 11–38.
- Mir, Gabriel Codina. "La ordenación y el doctorado en teología de Jerónimo Nadal en Aviñón (1537–1538)," *AHSI* 36 (1967): 247–51.
- Mir, Miguel S.J., *Historia interna documentada de la Compañía de Jesús* (Madrid: Imprenta de J. Ratés Martín, 1913).
- Moore, Kenneth. *Those of the Street: The Catholic-Jews of Mallorca: a Study in Urban Cultural Change* (Notre Dame, Ind: University of Notre Dame Press, 1976).
- Munitiz, Joseph A., S.J. "Francisco Suárez and the exclusion of men of Jewish or Moorish descent from the Society of Jesus," *AHSI* 73 (2004): 327–40.
- Mutaner i Mariano, Lleonard, ed. *Ralación de los Sanbenitos 1755* (Mallorca: Miquel Fonf, 1993).
- Nadal, Gerónimo. *Evangelicae historiae imagines: ex ordine Evangeliorum quae toto anno in Missae sacrificio recitantur, in ordinem temporis vitae Christi digestae* (Antwerp: Martin Nutius, 1593).
- Netanyahu, Benzion, *The Origins of the Inquisition in Fifteenth Century Spain* (Random House: New York, 1995).
- . *Toward the Inquisition: Essays on Jewish and Converso History in Late Medieval Spain* (Ithaca, N.Y.: Cornell University Press, 1997).
- Nieto, J.I. Gutiérrez. "Los conversos y el movimiento comunero," *Hispania* 94 (1964): 237–61.
- Nirenberg, David, *Communities of Violence: Persecution of Minorities in the Middle Ages* (Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1996).
- . "Mass Conversion and Genealogical Mentalities: Jews and Christians in Fifteenth-Century Spain," in *Past and Present* 174/1 (2002): 3–41.
- O'Malley, John W. *The First Jesuits* (Cambridge, Mass: Harvard University Press, 1993).
- . *Trent and All That: Renaming Catholicism in the Early Modern Era* (Cambridge, Mass: Harvard University Press, 2000); Italian translation: *Trento e dintorni. Per una nuova definizione del cattolicesimo nell'età moderna*. Trad. Robert A. Maryks (Rome: Bulzoni, 2005).
- Ordeix, S. Pey. *Historia crítica de San Ignacio de Loyola... Estudio analítico de la vida e historia del santo fundador de la Compañía hecho directamente sobre los documentos*



- de los archivos nacionales y extranjeros, especialmente de los secretos del Vaticano, de la inquisición y de la Compañía* (Madrid: Impr. de A. Marzo, 1916).
- Origen Genealógico de algunos Apellidos existentes en Mallorca e Historia de los Judíos de España* (Valencia, Ediciones Franva, 1965).
- Ortiz, Antonio Domínguez. *La clase social de los conversos en Castilla en la edad moderna* ([Madrid]: Instituto Balme de Sociología, Departamento de Historia Social, Consejo Superior de Investigaciones Científicas, 1955).
- . “Los conversos de origen judío después de la expulsión,” in Carmelo Viñas y Mey, ed., *Estudios de historia social de España* (Madrid: Instituto Balme de Sociología. Consejo Superior de Investigaciones Científicas, 1955), pp. 226–431.
- . *Los judeoconversos en España y América* (Madrid: ISTMO, 1971).
- . *Los judeoconversos en la España moderna* (Madrid: Mapfre, 1993).
- Padberg, John W., Martin D. O’Keefe, and John L. McCarthy, eds. *For Matters of Greater Moment: The First Thirty Jesuit General Congregations: A Brief History and a Translation of the Decrees* (St. Louis: The Institute of Jesuit Sources, 1994).
- Pardo, Enrique Jorge. “Santa Teresa de Ávila y la Compañía de Jesús en el siglo XVI,” *Razón y fe* 166 (1962): 293–306.
- Pastore, Stefania. *Un’eresia spagnola: spiritualità conversa, alumbradismo e inquisizione (1449–1559)* (Firenze: L.S. Olschki, 2004).
- Pérez, Lorenzo, ed. *Anales Judaicos de Mallorca* (Palma de Mallorca: Ripoli, 1974).
- Pike, Ruth. *Aristocrats and Traders. Sevillian Society in the Sixteenth Century* (Ithaca, N.Y.: Cornell University Press, 1972).
- . *Linajudos and Conversos in Seville: Greed and Prejudice in Sixteenth- and Seventeenth-Century Spain* (New York: Peter Lang, 2000).
- Pizarro Llorente, Henar. *Un gran patrón en la corte de Felipe II: Don Gaspar de Quiroga* (Madrid: Universidad Pontificia Comillas, 2004).
- Plazaola, Juan, ed. *Ignacio de Loyola y su tiempo: congreso internacional de historia (9–13 setiembre, 1991)* (Bilbao: Mensajero, 1992).
- Poole, Stafford. “The Politics of *limpieza de sangre*: Juan de Ovando and His Circle in the Reign of Philip II,” *The Americas* 55 (1999): 359–89.
- Possevino, Antonio. *Bibliotheca selecta* (Cologne: apud Joannem Gymnicum sub Monocerote, 1607).
- Rahner, Hugo. *Saint Ignatius Loyola. Letters to Women* (Freiburg: Herder, 1960).
- Rastoin, Marc, S.J. “Les chrétiens d’origine juive dans la Compagnie naissante,” in *Christus* 211 (2006): 357–63.
- . “The ‘Conversos’ in the Society of Jesus or From Windfall to Fall,” in Thomas Michel, S.J., ed., *Friends on the Way: Jesuits Encounter Contemporary Judaism* (New York: Fordham University Press, 2007), pp. 8–27.
- Reites, James W., S.J. *St. Ignatius and the People of the Book: An Historical-Theological Study of St. Ignatius of Loyola’s Spiritual Motivation in His Dealings with the Jews and Muslims* (Rome: Pontificia Universitas Gregoriana, 1977).
- . “St. Ignatius of Loyola and the Jews,” *Studies in the Spirituality of the Jesuits* 13/4 (1981).
- Rey, Eusebio. “San Ignacio de Loyola y el problema de los cristianos nuevos,” *Razón y Fe* 153 (1956): 117–204.
- Ribadeneyra, Pedro de. *Catalogus scriptorum religionis Societatis Iesu* (Antverpiae: ex officina Plantiniana, apud viduam & filios Io. Moreti, 1613).
- . “De Prognatis genere Hebraeorum Societatis aditu non excludendis,” in *Mon Rib.* 374–88.
- Risco, Alberto. “Una opinión sobre los tres primeros confesores jesuitas de santa Teresa de Jesús (Cetina, Prádanos, B. Álvarez),” *Boletín de la Real Academia de la historia* 80 (1922): 462–9.
- Rodrigues, Francisco, S.J. *Historia de la Companhia de Jesus na Assistência de Portugal*. 7 vols. (Porto: Real Academia de la Historia, 1931–1950).



- Rodríguez, Félix. "Santa Teresa de Jesús y sus consejeros jesuitas," *Manresa* 59 (1987): 309–11.
- Rosenstock, Bruce. *New Men: Conversos, Christian Theology, and Society in Fifteenth-century Castile* (London: University of London, 2002).
- Roth, Norman. *Conversos, Inquisition, and the Expulsion of the Jews from Spain* (Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 2003).
- Rurale, Flavio. "Carlo Borromeo and the Society of Jesus in the 1570s," in McCoog, ed., *Mercurian Project*, pp. 559–605.
- Ruiz-de-Medina, Juan, ed., *Documentos del Japón (1547–1562)* (Rome: Institutum Historicum Societatis Iesu, 1990–5).
- Sacchini, Francesco *Historiae Societatis Iesu* [Rome: Typis Dominici Manelphii, 1652].
- Salvador, José Gonçalves. *Cristãos-novos, Jesuítas e Inquisição (Aspectos de sua atuação nas capitanias do Sul, 1530–1680)* (São Paulo: Livraria Pioneira Editora, 1969).
- Samson, Alexander, "The adelantamiento of Cazorla, converso Culture and Toledo Cathedral Chapter's 1547 *estatuto de limpieza de sangre*," *Bulletin of Spanish Studies*, 84/7 (2007): 819–36.
- Sanz, Enrique. "Los Laínez y la limpieza de sangre," *Perficit* 17 (1993): 65–71.
- Scaduto, Mario. "La missione di Cristoforo Rodríguez al Cairo (1561–1563)," *AHSI* 54 (1958): 233–78.
- . "Uno scritto ignaziano inedito. Il 'Del officio del segretario,'" *AHSI* 29 (1960): 305–312.
- . *L'epoca di Giacomo Laínez. Il governo. 1556–1565* (Rome: Edizioni "La Civiltà Cattolica," 1964).
- . *Catalogo dei Gesuiti d'Italia, 1540–1565* (Rome: IHSI, 1968).
- . *L'epoca di Giacomo Laínez. L'azione. 1556–1565* (Rome: Edizioni "La Civiltà Cattolica," 1974).
- . *L'opera di Francesco Borgia, 1565–1572* (Rome: Edizioni "La Civiltà cattolica," 1992).
- Schneider, Burkhardt. "Die Denkschrift des Paul Hoffaeus S. I. *De unione animorum in Societate*," *AHSI* 29 (1960): 85–98.
- Schurhammer, Georg. *Francis Xavier. His Life, His Times* (Rome: The Jesuit Historical Institute, 1973).
- Scorraille, Raoul de. *François Suarez de la Compagnie de Jésus* (Paris: P. Lethiellieux, 1912).
- Selke, Angela. *El Santo Officio de la Inquisición. Proceso de Fr. Francisco Ortiz (1529–32)* (Madrid: Ed. Guadarrama, 1968).
- Sicroff, Albert. "El Lumen ad revelationem gentium, de Alonso de Oropesa, como precursor del erasmismo en España," in Eugenio Bustos Tovar, ed., *Actas del cuarto Congreso Internacional de Hispanistas* (Salamanca: Asociación Internacional de Hispanistas, 1982).
- . *Los estatutos de Limpieza de Sangre: controversias entre los siglos XV y XVII* (Madrid: Taurus, 1985).
- Simonsohn, Shlomo. *The Jews in the Duchy of Milan. A Documentary history of the Jews of Italy* (Jerusalem: Israel Academy of Sciences and Humanities, 1982).
- Sigüenza, José. *Historia de la Orden de San Jerónimo* (Madrid: Bailly-Ballière, 1907–9).
- Sola, José C., S.J. "El P. Juan Bautista Eliano, un documento autobiográfico inédito," *AHSI* 4 (1935): 191–221.
- Spadaccini, Nicholas and Jenaro Talens, eds. *Rhetoric and Politics: Baltasar Gracian and the New World Order* (Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 1997).
- Starr-LeBeau, Gretchen D. *On the Shadow of the Virgin. Inquisitors, Friars, and Conversos in Guadalupe, Spain* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2003).
- Stow, Keneth R. "The Burning of the Talmud in 1553, in the light of the Sixteenth-Century Catholic Attitudes Toward the Talmud," *Bibliothèque d'Humanisme and Renaissance* 34 (1972): 435–59.

- . *Catholic Thought and Papal Jewry Policy 1555–1593* (New York: Jewish Theological Seminary, 1977).
- Tacchi Venturi, Pietro, S.J. *Storia della Compagnia di Gesù In Italia*, 2 vols. in 4 parts (Rome: La Civiltà Cattolica, 1950).
- Tellechea, Ignacio Idígoras. “Censura inédita del Padre Francisco de Toledo, S.J.,” *Revista Española de Teología* 29 (1969): 3–35.
- Unzué, José Luis Orella. “La Provincia de Guipúzcoa y el tema de los judíos en tiempos del joven Iñigo de Loiola,” in Plazaola, Ignacio de Loyola y su tiempo, pp. 847–68.
- . *Las raíces de la hidalguía Guipuzcoana. El control de los judíos, conversos y extranjeros en Guipúzcoa durante el siglo XVI* (San Sebastián: Universidad de Deusto, 1995).
- Velásquez, Didacus [Diego de Simancas]. *Defensio Toletani Statuti* (Antwerp: Plantin, 1573)
- Verdín-Díaz, Guillermo, ed. *Alonso de Cartagena y el “Defensorium Unitatis Christianae.” Introducción histórica, traducción y notas* ([Oviedo]: Universidad de Oviedo, 1992).
- Villiers, John. “Las Yslas de Esperar en Dios: The Jesuit Mission in Moro 1546–1571,” *Modern Asian Studies* 22/3 (1988): 593–606.
- Villoslada, Ricardo García. *Universidad de París durante los estudios de Francisco de Vitoria O.P. (1507–1522)* (Rome: apud Aedes Universitatis Gregorianae, 1938).
- Vorst, Charles van de. “La Compagnie de Jésus e la passage a l’Ordre des Chartreux (1540–1646),” *AHSI* 23 (1954): 3–34.
- Wicki, Josef. “Le *Memorie dei penitenzieri gesuiti di S. Pietro*,” *AHSI* 57 (1988): 263–313.
- . “Die ‘cristão-novos’ in der Indischen Provinz der Gesellschaft Jesu von Ignatius bis Acquaviva,” *AHSI* 92 (1977): 342–61.
- Yerushalmi, Yosef Hayim, *Assimilation and Racial Anti-Semitism: The Iberian and the German Models*. Leo Baeck memorial lecture, 26 (New York: Leo Baeck Institute, 1982).
- Yovel, Yirmiyahu. *The Other Within: The Marranos: Split Identity and Emerging Modernity* (Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 2009).
- Zaforteza y Musoles, Diego. *La ciudad de Mallorca. Ensayo histórico-toponímico* (Palma de Mallorca: Ajuntament, 1960).



## INDEX

- Abraham 8, 9, 13, 32, 46  
 Abreo, Francisco 126, 189  
 Abreu, Francisca 100  
 Adam 7, 8, 20  
 Acosta, Diego, de 54, 81, 108, 216  
 Acosta, Jerónimo de 54, 81, 127, 216  
 Acosta, José, de xxviii, 54, 81, 128, 149, 216, 262  
 Acquaviva, Claudio xxvi–xxix, xxxi, 46, 49, 54, 58, 66–7, 73, 75, 80, 83–4, 108, 111–2, 117, 124–7, 127, 129, 142–56, 160, 167, 174–5, 181–2, 187–91, 193, 227, 251, 269  
*Acts of the Apostles* 16, 19, 134, 176, 188, 227  
 Aguilera, Gonzalo de 51–2, 54  
 Alarcón, García Girón de xix, xxiii, xxviii, 4, 26, 75, 82–3, 96, 98, 110, 156, 159, 166–7, 182–3, 185, 189, 254, 262  
 Alarcón, Juan Ruiz de 190, 265  
 Alaric 19  
 Albaladejo 190  
 Alboraique xvi  
 Albotodo, Juan de 184  
 Alcáçova, Pedro de 73–4  
 Alcázar, Luis del 155, 157, 216  
 Alcántara, Pedro de 113, 133  
 Alcántara (Order of) 28  
 Alcalá (de Henares) xx, xxi, 43, 46–52, 55, 68, 76, 79, 82, 90–1, 101, 107, 113, 119, 127, 141, 153–4, 179, 190, 195–6, 212, 221, 265  
 Alexander, Dominican friar 189  
 Alexander III, pope 194  
 Alexander VI (Borgia), pope xxiv  
 Alexandria 67, 101  
 Alfonso X (the Wise), King of Castile 21, 22  
 Almagro 119  
 Almazán xxi, 55, 57–8, 94, 137, 154, 263  
 Almeida, Luis de 74  
 Alonso y Pérez, Nicolás. *See* Bobadilla, Nicolás  
*Alumbrados* 41, 47–8, 113, 265  
 Ignatius of Loyola, and xx, 47, 48, 55, 76  
 Amelia 99  
 Antonio (*The Merchant of Venice*) xxxii  
 Álvarez, Baltasar xxiv  
 Álvarez de Toledo, Eleonor 85  
 Anchieta, José de 100  
 Anchieta, Luis de 100  
 Andalusia 110, 118, 127, 173, 190, 222, 251  
 Anrique Anrriques 72–3  
 Antwerp xviii, xxvi, 2, 31, 51, 54, 67, 69, 124, 157, 266, 269  
*Apologia pro Iudaeis Christianis* 31  
 Aquitaine 120  
 Araoz, Antonio xxi, xxvi, 79–80, 101, 103, 133–4, 221, 222–3, 254  
 ancestry of 91  
 Borja, Francisco de, and 103, 130, 133, 134, 221, 222, 223, 227, 232  
*limpieza de sangre*, and xxi, 64, 80, 81, 87, 123, 135, 188, 221  
 Loyola, Ignatius of, and xxi, 188  
 Nadal, Jerónimo, and 79, 80, 99  
 Palmio, Benedetto, and 104  
 Arévalo 50  
 Arias de Párraga, Francisco 149, 151  
 Aristotle 5  
 Astudillo, Diego de 93, 118–9  
 Astudillo, Francisco de 68  
 Augsburg 110, 131, 232  
 Austria 61, 101, 106, 118, 123, 144, 145  
 Avellaneda, Diego 118–9  
 Averroism/Averroist 120  
 Avignon 78, 87–8, 151, 216  
 Ávila (city) xxiii, xxiv, 28, 107  
 Ávila, Juan de xxiv, 80–2, 85–6, 264  
*limpieza de sangre*, and 189  
 Society of Jesus, and xxi, xxiv, 74, 80, 81, 82, 85, 86, 127, 160, 190, 265  
 Ávila, Teresa de, St. xxiv, 87, 101, 113, 119, 134, 153, 263, 267  
 Azevedo, Inácio de 100, 102, 217  
 Azpilcueta, Martín 71  
 Badajoz 28, 167  
 Baghdad xv

- Baïus, Michael 106  
 baptism xv, 11, 14–6, 26–7, 58, 60–2, 66, 177, 257  
   regenerative character of xviii, 4–5, 7, 9, 19–21, 169, 174, 194  
 Barcelona 50, 61, 88, 137, 153, 239, 243  
 Barrientos, Lope de 132, 264  
 Basques, Basque Country 48, 50, 55, 80, 100, 221  
 Bataillon, Marcel xxiii, xxiv, 4, 42–43, 49  
 Bellarmine, Cardinal Robert 96  
 Belmonte de Gracián 153–4  
 Belo, Antonio 74  
 Benavente, Mencía de 82  
 Benedictines 44  
 Bernal Díaz de Lugo, Juan 81  
 Bernal, Pedro 118–9  
 Bérulle, Cardinal Pierre de 145  
 Berze, Gaspar 73  
 Bética 201, 203  
 Bible, biblical 5, 7, 11, 17, 19, 30–1, 51, 34, 142, 155, 212  
 Bobadilla, Nicolás 48, 55–6, 90–1, 92–3, 100, 118, 132, 135, 178, 221, 230, 261  
 Bolivia 112  
 Bologna 28, 58, 111, 114, 131, 142, 238–9  
 Bonelli, Cardinal Michele 114  
 books, published by conversos 5, 65, 70, 90, 106, 108, 120, 151, 154–6, 159, 167, 179, 212  
 Borja (Borgia), Francisco de, St. xxiv, xxv, xxvii–xxviii, 31, 39, 42, 58, 67, 69, 80, 81, 85–6, 94, 97, 99–101, 103–4, 108, 110–5, 117–20, 123–4, 126–34, 136, 138–40, 156, 164, 166, 172, 188, 190, 201, 222–29, 231–4, 241–5, 247, 249–50, 252, 256, 262, 265, 268  
 Borromeo, Cardinal Carlo, St. 108, 124, 130–2, 142, 228–9, 231–2, 238, 254, 268  
 Botini, Chiara 131  
 Bousset, Wilhelm 156  
 Brazil 73, 85, 100–2, 224  
 Brera College 108, 130  
 Brescia 145  
*Breve directorium ad confessarii* 70–1, 90  
 Broet, Paschasius 94  
 Bruges 51–2  
 Bruni, Leonardo 5  
 Burgos xix, 4, 5, 7, 11, 44, 52, 54, 61, 68, 107, 177, 179, 195, 216  
 Bustamante, Bartolomé de 73, 81  
 Cáceres, Lope 50  
 Cacho Nazábal, Ignacio 51  
 Ca(g)liani 120  
 Cagliari 119  
 Cairo 66–7, 101  
 Cajetan (Tommaso de Vio), Cardinal 196–7, 209  
 Calahorra 127, 81  
 Calatayud 153–4  
 Calatrava, Order of 28  
 Câmara, Gonçalves Luis da 49, 121, 246  
 Canisius Peter 119, 130–1, 139–40, 143, 248  
 Carafa, Cardinal Carlo 99  
 Cardulo, Fulvio 137, 235, 248  
 Carmelites (Discalced) 28  
 Caro Baroja, Julio xvii  
 Carpi, Cardinal Alberto Pio di 93  
 Carraffa e Carraffa, Francesco Maria 154  
 Carranza de Miranda, Archbishop Bartolomé de 31, 104  
 Carrasco, Martín 154  
 Carga, Camillo 137, 241, 243  
 Carrillo de Acuña, Alonso 5, 150, 195  
 Carrillo, Juan Bautista de 126  
 Cartagena, Alonso de Santa María de xviii–xix, 1, 4–25, 28, 30–1, 33, 37, 39, 83, 163, 166, 175–177, 194, 201–2, 269  
 Cartagena, Pedro de 4  
 Carvajal, Cristóbal 85  
 Casa de Reina (Badajoz) 167  
 Casa dei Catecumeni 58, 60, 62  
 Casa Santa Martha 61, 89  
 Cassian, John 177–8  
 Castile xviii, 2, 4, 7, 26–7, 51, 68, 80, 96, 118, 128, 190–2, 201, 203, 268  
 Castro, Afonso 72–3  
 Castro Alonso 73  
 Castro, Juan de 54  
 Castro, Juana García de 68  
 casuistry xxiii, 65, 70–1, 108, 119, 154, 155, 266  
 Catalonia/Catalan 78, 154, 243  
 catechism 73, 85, 110, 152  
 Chemnitz, Martin 119  
 Cicero 5, 34

- Chapelle, Maximiliano 82, 236  
 Charles V, Emperor 29, 44, 61, 166  
 Chiavone, Leonetto 136, 231, 234,  
 239  
*chuetas* 89  
 circumcision 8, 12, 14, 21, 27, 31, 33,  
 35, 37, 117, 145, 176, 194–5, 200–1,  
 209, 210  
 Cisneros, Cardinal Francisco Jiménez  
 de 48, 119, 150, 196  
 Ciudad Real 28  
 Ciudad Rodrigo 126, 189, 263  
*Claros varones* xix  
 Clermont de Paris 212  
 Clovis 19  
 Cobos y Molina, Francisco de los 29,  
 69  
 Collegio Romano (Roman College)  
 44–6, 67, 86, 98, 106, 108, 110–1, 119,  
 129, 131, 134, 137, 142, 225–6, 231,  
 240–3, 255  
 Communion, converso books about  
 xxiv  
 Constitutions (Jesuit) 70, 77, 79, 86,  
 90, 93, 98, 122, 137, 163  
 non-discriminatory character of xxi,  
 xxviii, 63–4, 75, 81–2, 84–5, 87,  
 132, 141, 149, 164, 171, 180, 182,  
 204  
 impediments in 108, 146–7, 188,  
 197–9, 201  
 conversion xvii, xxxi, 1–2, 7, 39, 61–2,  
 66–7, 120, 132, 152, 167, 174, 178,  
 196, 200, 209, 215, 220, 263–4, 266  
 Copts 66, 101  
 Councils  
 Council of Basel 4, 21, 193  
 Council of Nicaea 119  
 Council of Pisa 197  
 Councils of Toledo 22–3, 25, 27, 30,  
 35, 42  
 Council of Trent xxiii, 55, 57, 67, 96,  
 98, 130, 141, 165, 200, 224, 248,  
 266  
 and converso Jesuits xxiii, 55, 67,  
 96, 98–9, 165, 179, 200, 223–4,  
 232, 248  
 Christ  
 responsibility for death of 17–8, 21,  
 32–3, 36, 46  
 unity, and 6, 8–11, 15, 17, 19, 26–7,  
 38, 45, 61, 97, 160, 164–5, 175–6,  
 181–2, 192, 194, 196, 202, 227,  
 257–9  
 Christian Humanism, and conversos  
 5, 110  
 Cicero 5, 34  
 Clement I, pope 25  
 Cogordan, Ponce de 93  
 Coimbra 73–5, 100, 107–8, 110, 119,  
 127, 145, 179  
 Colloquy of Poissy 98, 165, 223–4  
 confession (sacramental)  
 converso books about xxiii, 65, 70,  
 84, 106, 265  
 Confraternity of St. Giuseppe 63  
 Congregations General (of the Jesuits)  
 First 90–3, 98, 113, 134–5, 178,  
 230  
 Second 98–104, 114, 119, 131, 138,  
 227–9, 231–2, 244, 255  
 Third xxii, xxv–xxvii, 55, 69, 75,  
 82, 91, 111–2, 117–25, 131, 134–5,  
 137–41, 160, 163, 170–3, 179, 181,  
 230, 232, 237, 244–54  
 Fourth 46, 131, 143, 145, 190  
 Fifth xxii, xxviii, 54, 65, 82, 106,  
 108, 128–9, 146, 149, 159–60, 185,  
 191, 197  
 Sixth xxviii, 159, 161, 213  
 Twenty-ninth 213  
 Constantine, the Great 19  
 Cordeses, Antonio 112, 118, 254  
 Cordova 28, 31, 73, 104, 112, 155, 220,  
 236  
 Coronel, María 58, 137  
 Cota, Alonso de 2, 3  
 Council of Trent 57, 130, 141, 266  
 Critana, Francisco de 74  
 Cuadrado, Pedro 52, 54, 216  
 Cuéllar 56, 108  
 Cuéllar, Juan de 51–2, 54  
 Cuéllar, Juan Velázquez de 50–1  
 Cuenca 57, 127, 190  
*Cum nimis absurdum* 39, 63  
*Cupientes Iudaeos* 4, 39, 62, 193–4  
 Cupis, Cardinal Giovan Domenico  
 de 62, 89  
 Daimiel 89  
 Dalmases, Cándido de xxx, 111  
 David 17, 46  
*Decretum* (Gratian's) 22–3  
*Defensio Toletani Statuti* xviii, xxii, 2,  
 31–9, 192, 269  
*Defensorium Unitatis Christianae*  
 xviii–xix, 4–28, 33, 39, 163, 175–7,  
 194, 269

- de genere* decree 38, 107, 140, 174, 182, 185, 190, 197, 206–7 (see also purity-of-blood and the Society of Jesus)
- De Hispaniae Regibus* 36
- Desbuquois, Gustave 192
- Diet of Augsburg 110, 232
- Dias, Antonio 74
- Dias, Baltasar 75
- Díaz de Lugo, Juan Bernal 81
- Díaz de Montalvo, Alonso 18, 20, 22, 25, 83
- Dillingen 66, 119, 131
- Doménech, Jerónimo 44, 51, 71, 78, 118, 131, 231, 243
- Dominicans xxiii, 25, 28, 66, 73, 155, 185, 189, 196–7, 208–9, 220
- Dotti, Gaspare de' 90
- Éboli, prince of. See Gómez de Silva, Ruy ecclesiology, converso xix, 10, 16, 175–6
- Eguía, Diego de 51
- Eguía, Esteban de 51
- Eguía, Miguel de 51
- election of Israel 6, 8, 13
- Eliano, Giovanni Battista (Romano) 66–7, 101, 119, 182, 268
- Elizabeth I, Queen 99
- (H)Enríques, (H)Enrique 65–6, 119, 126–7
- Epiphanius, St. 97
- Erasmus/Erasmists xvii, xix–xx, xxiii, 41–2, 47–8, 50–1, 55, 76, 137, 265, 268
- Espina, Alonso de 28, 34
- Estrada, Francisco de 128
- Ethiopia 113
- Eugenius IV, pope 5
- Evarist, pope 25, 177
- Évora 72, 108, 110, 145, 250
- Expulsion of 1492 (Spain) xvii–xviii, 65, 215, 220, 267–8
- Farnese, Ottavio 61
- Farnese, Cardinal Alessandro 44, 138, 246–8
- Favre, Pierre, Bl. 55–8, 61, 64, 79, 131
- Ferdinand II, King of Aragon xvi, xxiv, 35, 50, 52, 54, 220
- Ferrara 32, 114, 132, 233, 247, 249
- Finus (Fino, Fini d'Adria), Hadrianus 32
- Flanders 44–5, 49, 54, 57, 82, 98–9, 106, 124, 136, 236, 252
- Florence 58, 85, 114, 231
- Fortalitium fidei* 34
- “fourth vow,” and conversos 135–6, 248
- Fois, Mario xxv
- France 87, 98–9, 106, 114, 120, 136, 145, 154, 160, 167, 179, 181, 212, 224, 232, 252
- Franciscans 6, 28–9, 31, 34, 48, 51, 72, 76, 113, 196, 220, 263
- Frascati 130, 139, 172, 248
- Freux, André des (Frusius) 66, 90
- Fuente Ginaldo 126, 189
- Funai 74
- Gabriel VII, Patriarch 66
- Gago, Baltasar 15, 73
- Gallio, Cardinal of Como 122, 251
- Gandía xxiv, 67, 101, 110, 113, 133–4, 154, 254, 265
- García de Licona, Martín 50
- García de Mora, Marcos 22, 24–5
- General Exam* 58, 75, 199, 204, 253
- Genealogy xvii, xxii, xxxi, 43, 119, 147–8, 150, 159, 180, 190, 203–4, 266–7
- Genoa 85, 238
- Gentiles xviii, xxix, 5–6, 8–19, 21, 26–7, 32, 97, 166–7, 175–6, 193, 257, 263
- Germany 49, 98, 106, 118–9, 131, 136, 160, 179, 181, 224, 248, 251–2
- Ghislieri, Cardinal Michele 93, 101
- Gilmont Jean-François xxx
- Girón, García de Alarcón. See Alarcón, García Girón de
- Goa 73–4, 151, 179
- Gobierno, Miguel 118
- Godofredus, Petrus 36–7
- Gómez, Alonso 128
- González Dávila, Gil 252
- Gomes, Antonio 72–3
- Gomes de Abreu, João 100, 217
- González de Mendoza, Cardinal Pedro 196
- González de Mendoza, Pero 30, 150
- González, Gonzalo 126
- Gracián y Morales, Baltasar 153–5, 212, 262–3, 266, 268
- Granada 85, 106–7, 112, 123, 127, 184, 190, 216
- Granada, Luis de xxiv, 81, 113, 180
- Gratian 22–3



- Graus 154  
 Great Armada 101  
 Gregory XIII, pope 62, 67–8, 120–1,  
 129, 132, 138, 175, 193–4, 209, 245–6,  
 250  
 Guadalupe xix, 6  
 Guijarro, Juan Martínez. *See* Silíceo  
 Guipúzcoa xxi, 48–50, 57, 179, 200,  
 221, 269  
 Gundlach, Gustav 192  
 Gurrea, Juan 100, 124, 137, 238  
 Guzmán, Diego de xxiii, xxviii, 35, 46,  
 66–7, 80–6, 89, 100, 151, 156, 159–60,  
 182–7, 189, 213, 262  
 Guzmán, Luis de 118
- Hagar 20  
 Halle 119  
 Hebrews 14, 133, 135, 149, 196, 262  
 Hebrew language 36–7, 67, 78, 87, 151,  
 153  
 Henrique, Cardinal Infant 120, 139,  
 171, 246, 250  
 Henriques, Leão 120–1, 139–40,  
 170–2, 250, 252  
 Henry IV, King of France 212  
 Heretics 6, 31, 87, 122, 163, 169, 173,  
 179–81, 183, 198, 208  
 Hernández, Bartolomé 100  
 Hernández, Francisca 51  
 Hernández, Gaspar 104, 111, 124, 137,  
 231, 236  
 Hernández, Pablo 254  
 Herrera, Isabel de 104  
*Hidalgo, hidalguía* xxix, 50, 269  
 Higuera, Jerónimo Román de la 127,  
 264  
 Hinestrosa, Matías de 104  
 Hita 66, 101, 112  
 Hoffaeus, Paul xxvii, xxix, 117, 129,  
 140, 143–5, 170, 190, 248, 251, 253,  
 268  
 Hondo 74  
 Horta, Salvador de 113, 133  
 Huesca 154  
*Humani generis inimicus* 25, 28, 38,  
 132, 191, 257–60  
 Hurtado de Mendoza, Juan 58, 137
- Ignatius of Loyola. *See* Loyola, Ignatius of  
 Illescas 113  
*Illius qui pro dominici* 63  
 India 57, 72–3, 75, 171–4, 224  
 Ingolstadt 143
- Inquisition, Spanish  
   Jesuits and 126, 129, 147, 150, 173,  
   212  
   Loyola Ignatius and 43, 47, 52, 55,  
   76, 81, 164–5, 221  
   purity of blood and xxii, xxviii, 31,  
   51, 57, 64, 74, 88, 119, 132, 143,  
   150–2, 220, 250  
   reasons for its establishment  
     xviii–xix, 6–7  
 intermarriage  
   conversos and xvii, xix, 17, 22, 58,  
   61, 68, 89, 101, 106, 137, 190, 209,  
   221  
 Isaac 8, 31, 32  
 Isabella, Queen of Castile xvi, xxiii, 35,  
 42, 216, 220  
 Isabella of Portugal 44  
 Israel/Israelites xviii, 5–6, 8, 10–9, 21,  
 24–5, 39, 59, 132–3, 142, 192, 223,  
 258  
 Istanbul (Constantinople) xvi  
 Italy xxv–xxvi, 39, 57, 66, 83–5, 89, 98,  
 101, 103, 114, 118, 120, 123, 131, 134,  
 136–7, 142, 145, 161, 163, 171, 175,  
 179, 212, 219–20, 225, 231, 233, 239,  
 241, 252
- Jacob 8, 17, 31–2  
 Jaén 28  
 Jagiello 19  
 Japan 57, 73–5, 86, 151, 179, 180  
 Jeronymites xix–xx, xxiii, 5–7, 28, 41,  
 106, 190–1, 207, 220  
 Jerusalem 10, 33, 52, 175, 180  
 Jessica (*The Merchant of Venice*) xviii,  
 xxxii
- Jews  
   bias against xvi–xviii, xxix, 2, 20–5,  
   32–6, 48, 63, 87, 132, 138, 144, 146,  
   180  
   conversion of xv, xxix, 3–4, 6, 10,  
   17, 33, 48, 67, 83, 87, 91, 101, 142,  
   152, 174–5, 177–8, 196, 200, 203,  
   208–9, 215–6, 220–1  
   Gentiles and 6, 9, 17–8, 26–7, 64,  
   166, 175, 193–4, 196  
   Loyola Ignatius of, and xx, 42,  
   48–50, 61, 89  
   popes and 26–7, 62–3, 91, 120  
 Jiménez de Cisneros, Cardinal  
   Francisco 48, 150  
 Jiménez, Diego 87–8  
 Jiménez, Fernando 30

- Job 8  
 John of Austria 101  
 Joseph, St. 46  
 Juan II, King of Castile xviii, 2, 4–5,  
     21, 25, 203  
 Juan de la Cruz, St. xxiv, 264  
 Judas, Maccabaeus 19  
 Julian, St., pope 25, 97, 177  
 Julius III, pope 63  
 Justinian, Emperor 19
- Kalisz 120  
 Kamen, Henry xx  
 Kostka, Stanisław, St. 112
- LaFarge, John 191  
 Laínez, Cristóbal 58  
 Laínez, Diego xxi, xxiv–xxviii, xxx,  
     15, 42, 44, 48–9, 55–9, 61–4, 66,  
     68–9, 78–9, 90–9, 101, 106, 113–5,  
     117–9, 124, 131, 133–7, 141–2, 145,  
     151, 154, 165–6, 178–9, 187–8, 216,  
     222–4, 230, 232, 237, 248, 261, 263,  
     265, 268  
 Laínez, Marcos 58  
 Landino, Juan 128  
 linguistic skills (of conversos) xxiii,  
     5, 67, 70, 73–4, 78, 87, 98, 119, 124,  
     151–3, 180, 184  
 Lastanosa, Vincencio Juan de 154  
 Ledesma Diego de 86, 104, 108, 110,  
     134, 136, 225–6, 231–3  
 León 3, 26–8, 107, 177, 192  
 León, Luis de xxiv  
 Lérida 119, 154  
 Leuven 44, 70, 108, 153  
 Levita, Rabbi Elia (Elias Askenazy) 66  
 Liberian Basilica 106  
*limpieza de sangre*. See purity of blood  
 Lisbon 72–4, 85, 100, 110, 118, 127,  
     251, 265  
 Linus, pope 177  
 Livius, Titus 210–1  
 Loarte, Baltasar de 85, 190, 216  
 Loarte, Gaspar de 54, 70, 81, 84–6, 89,  
     100, 123, 160, 182, 216  
 Lobo, Alonso 31  
 Lópes, Simão 65  
 Lópes, Manuel 82  
 López, Gaspar 127  
 López, Manuel 100, 118–9, 127  
 Loreto 54, 58, 90, 99, 114, 119, 235  
 Lepanto 101  
 Lombardy 104, 110, 118, 124, 130–1,  
     136, 231, 233, 239
- Loyola, Ignatius (Íñigo) xx–xxii,  
     xxv–xxviii, xxx, 1, 29, 39, 42–77,  
     89–91, 93, 98, 103, 115, 117–8, 124–5,  
     130–6, 141, 149, 160, 164–5, 178–9,  
     182, 187–8, 193, 198–9, 215–6, 221–2,  
     230, 236  
*Lumen ad revelationem gentium et gloria  
 plebis Israel* xviii–xx, 5–23, 38–9,  
     191, 195, 260, 263, 268  
 Luna, Álvaro de 2, 4
- Macau xv, 151  
 Macerata 114–5  
 Madagascar 73  
 Madrid xxi, 61, 75, 104, 124, 127, 137,  
     187, 213  
 Madrid, Antonio 104  
 Madrid, Cristóbal de 75, 89–90,  
     98–100, 118, 135–6, 139, 223, 232,  
     247, 249  
 Maggio, Lorenzo xxvii, xxix, 120,  
     129, 133, 140, 143–5, 170, 190,  
     261  
 Majorca. See Palma (de Mallorca)  
 Malaysia 75  
 Maldonado, Juan de 167, 212,  
     232  
 Maluenda clan xix, 52, 68, 179  
 Mannaerts, Olivier 140, 232, 252  
 Manresa 50  
 Manrique de Lara, Antonio 51  
 Mantua 120, 161  
 Mariana, Juan de xxviii, 82, 107, 128,  
     156, 159, 167, 210–3, 217, 232, 262,  
     265  
 Margaret of Austria 61  
 Maronites 66–7  
 Marranos xvi, xxiv, 36–7, 87, 133, 136,  
     269  
 Martínez Guijeño, Juan. See Silíceo  
 Mary, Mother of Jesus 46, 84  
 Mary I Tudor, Queen 99  
 Mata, Gregorio de 118  
 Mauroy, Henry 31, 33  
 Mazarino, Giulio 142, 254  
 Medici, Cosimo de' 114  
 Medina del Campo 52, 54, 81, 87, 108,  
     216  
 Medina, Francisco de Borja xxv, xxxi,  
     52, 166  
 Medina, Juan de 93  
 Medina, Miguel de 128  
 Melanchton, Philipp 119  
*(The) Merchant of Venice* xviii, 138,  
     262

- Mena, Rodrigo 124, 137, 240  
Mendoza, Álvaro de 30  
Mendoza de Bobadilla, Cardinal Francisco de 203  
Mendoza González, Fernando de 127  
Mendoza, Leonor de 190  
Mendoza, Luis 137, 235, 248–9  
Mercurian Everard xxv–xxvii, xxxi, 44, 46, 49, 65, 70, 104, 111, 118–26, 128–31, 136, 138, 140, 142, 156, 159–60, 162–3, 166, 168, 170, 172, 174–175, 181–2, 188–9, 224, 232, 245–6, 250, 252–4  
Messina 54, 66, 79, 131, 225, 231, 239  
military chaplains, converso 15, 73, 101, 154  
ministries, preferred by conversos xxiii–xxiv, 44, 67, 70, 86–7, 101, 106, 111, 123, 127, 184, 254  
Milan 19, 66, 108, 120, 123, 130–1, 135–6, 142, 167, 228, 231–2, 238  
Miona, Manuel 50–1, 78  
Miró(n), Diego 44, 64–5, 72, 87, 93, 100, 103, 114, 118–9, 136, 174, 224, 232  
Modena 124, 238, 241  
Moluccas 72–5  
Monsanto (Portugal) 145  
Montano, Pedro 128  
Montemayor, Juan de 190  
Montoya, Juan de 100, 118–9  
Morais, Sebastião 108  
Morales Torrellas, Angela 154  
Moriscos xxiii, xxviii, 44, 87, 91, 123, 127, 149, 184, 191, 208, 215, 254  
Moro Islands 72  
Munich 143  
Muslims xvii, xxviii, 3, 35, 55, 149, 208, 215  
Münster 143  
Nadal Crespí, Bernardo 89  
Nadal, Esteban 88  
Nadal [Morey], Jerónimo xxi, xxvi, 15, 41, 44, 49, 56–8, 66, 69, 75–91, 93–4, 98–100, 103, 106, 110, 114–5, 118–9, 123–4, 130–1, 135–6, 139, 182, 187, 224, 232, 247, 250, 261–3, 265–6  
Nadal Pomár, Rafael 89  
Nagasaki 74, 86, 180  
Nájera 51  
Naples 46, 49, 54–5, 66, 90, 101, 111, 118, 126–7, 129, 138, 145, 231, 239, 244  
Narbona, Fernão de 74  
Navarre 51  
Netherlands, the Spanish xx, 52  
Nicholas V, pope 25, 28, 38, 132, 166, 191, 258  
Nobrega, Miguel da 73  
Noah 8  
Nuñez Barreto, Melchor 113  
Oita 74  
Olave, Martín de 68  
Oliveira, Gabriel 74  
Oporto 65, 100, 127, 145  
Oropesa, Alonso de xviii–xx, 1, 4–12, 14–18, 21–3, 28, 31, 37–9, 166, 191, 195, 260, 263, 268  
Ortiz de Cisneros, Álvaro Husillo xxxi, 42, 264  
Ortiz de Cisneros, Hernando 42, 216  
Ortiz, Francisco 51, 268  
Ortiz, Pedro 51–2, 61, 262  
Ortiz, Pedro (Jesuit) 52  
Osorio, Juan 128  
Osorio, Leonor 242  
Ovid (Ovidian) 142  
Oviedo 28, 112, 126, 189  
Oviedo, Andrés de 89, 113, 133  
Pacheco, Francisco 155  
Pacheco, Juan 190  
Pacheco, Juan Bautista 127, 134  
Pacheco, Juana 190  
Padberg, John xxv  
Padua 44, 58, 69, 131, 239  
Paiva de Andrade, Diogo 119  
Palermo xv, 44, 58, 62, 142  
Palma de Mallorca 76  
Palma, Elvira de 119  
Palmio (di Palmia), Benedetto xxv–xxvii, xxix–xxx, 44, 59, 66, 80, 82, 91, 93, 100–1, 103–4, 106, 110–2, 114, 118–20, 123–4, 126, 128–46, 162, 164, 170–2, 219–56, 261  
Palmio, Francesco 131  
Palto, Pedro 128  
Pamplona 51  
Panama 112  
Papacy 44, 66, 78  
Paris 29, 39, 44, 48, 50–7, 64, 68, 76–9, 88, 93, 110, 141, 179, 212, 216, 266, 269  
Parra, Pedro de 104, 108, 112, 123, 136  
*Partidas* 21–2  
Pascual, Domingo 154  
Pascual, I[g]nés 50  
Passeri, Bernardino xxvi, 124

- Paul, St. 9, 12, 14–6, 18, 21, 26, 32–3, 37–8, 65, 67, 143, 166–7, 169, 176, 188, 192–4, 257–8, 260
- Paul III, pope 4, 39, 44, 46, 52, 62, 193, 246
- Paul IV, pope xx, 38–9, 63, 90–1, 94, 134–5
- Peralta, Pedro de 52
- Pérez Godoy, Francisco 101
- Perpiñán, Pedro Juan 110
- Peru 107–8, 112, 119, 121, 123–5, 127, 217, 252, 261
- Perugia 49, 99, 240
- Pesquería 72
- Philip II, King of Spain xx, xxviii, 29, 90, 133, 150, 213, 250, 267
- Philippines 74, 107, 125, 252, 261, 263
- physicians (converso) 65, 71, 119, 152, 154, 196, 242
- Piedmont 120
- Pinto, Andrés 152–3
- Piñas, Baltasar 86, 112, 118–9, 123
- Piqueras 190
- Pisa 197
- Pisa, Alfonso de 118–9, 120, 123, 144, 196
- Pisa, Gonzalo de 119
- Pius V, pope 111, 114, 131, 194
- Plaza, Juan de la 118–9
- pogroms*, Jewish of 1391 xvi, 2, 4, 132, 165, 216
- Polanco, Alonso 127
- Polanco, Juan Alfonso de xix, xxv–xxvi, 10, 44, 48–9, 52, 56, 62, 64, 66, 68–71, 75, 79, 83, 86, 89–91, 93–4, 97–101, 103–4, 111, 114–5, 117–8, 120–4, 127, 135–40, 170–1, 179, 216, 223–4, 231–3, 245–52, 262
- Polanco, Gregorio de 68, 216
- Poissy, Colloquy of, converso Jesuit participation at 98, 165, 223–4
- Poland 19, 106, 120, 123, 145, 159, 181
- Porreño, Baltasar 32
- Portocarrero, Francisco 128
- Portugal xvi–xvii, xxv, 2, 37, 44, 51, 57, 61, 65, 72, 74–5, 80, 82, 86, 100–1, 104, 118, 121, 136–7, 140, 145, 152–3, 166, 169, 170–1, 177, 181, 209, 222, 224, 232, 243, 246, 250–2, 264–5, 267
- Possevino, Antonio xxv, xxviii–xxix, xxxi, 49, 57, 62, 75, 82, 94, 96, 119–20, 122–3, 130, 149, 151, 156, 159–82, 188, 205–6, 208, 213, 223, 251, 261, 263, 267
- Poznań (Posen) 120
- Prádanos, Juan de xxiv, 267
- preaching, Christian to Jews 6, 58, 60, 62, 175, 177
- Probabilism xxiii, 71, 107, 265
- proselytism xvi, 52, 55, 61
- Pulgar, Fernando de xix
- purity of blood (*pureza de sangre*)  
concept of xvi  
history of 28, 196–7  
Inquisition, Spanish, and 7, 5  
opposition to 4–29, 159–213  
Philip II and xxviii  
Society of Jesus, and xxi, xxx, 38, 76–90, 107, 120, 140, 143–213  
in *Defensio Toletani Statuti* (Simancas) 31–9  
in Toledan statutes (1449) xviii, 2–4, 22, 37  
in Silíceo's statutes 29–31
- Quiroga, Cardinal Gaspar de xxviii, 150, 187, 267
- Rahab 17
- Ramírez, Antonio 118–9
- Ramírez, Beatriz 82
- Ramón, Pedro 75, 173–4, 179
- Ratisbone 57, 61
- Reformation (Catholic) xxiv
- Reformation (Protestant) xvii, xxiv, 55, 99, 264
- Reites, James xxx, xxxi, 63
- Rhodes (Rueda), Alexandre de 151–2, 155, 216
- Ribadeneyra, Pedro de xxiv, xxvi–xxviii, xxxi, 42–5, 49, 51–2, 59, 61, 65, 67, 69, 78, 82–6, 90, 96, 99–100, 103–4, 108, 110–1, 118, 121, 123–6, 136–7, 139, 141, 151, 154, 156, 159–60, 182, 187–9, 213, 216, 223, 231, 239, 250, 252, 254, 261, 264, 267
- Ritius, Michael 36
- Roboredo 138, 243
- Rodrigues, Gaspar 73
- Rodrigues, Manuel xxvii, xxix, 24, 129, 133, 139, 143–6, 170–1, 190, 262
- Rodrigues Simão 55–6, 72–4, 82, 100, 118, 132, 178
- Rodríguez, Cristóbal 15, 66–8, 87, 100–1, 114, 123, 134, 136, 225, 232, 268
- Román, Alfonso 100
- Roman College. *See* Collegio Romano

- Rome xxi–xxvii, xxx, 19, 25, 31, 44–7, 49, 51–3, 55, 57–8, 60–4, 66–70, 73, 76, 78–9, 81–6, 89–91, 93, 97–9, 101, 103–4, 106–8, 110–4, 117–20, 123–5, 129–40, 142–3, 145–6, 151–2, 155, 162–5, 170–3, 175, 177, 185, 189–91, 193, 212, 220, 223, 225, 227–33, 235–45, 247, 249, 250–1, 254–6
- Roser, Isabel 50
- Ruiz, Alonso 86, 104, 112, 118–9, 123, 134, 136, 225, 231–2
- Ruiz, Pedro 128
- Ruth 17
- Sá [Saa], Calixto de 50
- Sá [Saa], Gaspar de 50
- Sá [Saa], Manuel de 50, 70, 75, 86, 89, 100, 108, 123, 136, 167, 232
- Sabiñán 154
- Sacchini, Francesco 59, 67, 94–8, 103, 140, 151, 251, 268
- Salamanca xxiii, 4–5, 28–9, 31, 47, 54, 70, 76, 104, 107, 119, 126, 151, 155, 189, 196
- Salmerón, Alfonso de 111, 118, 124, 140–1, 224, 231, 250, 253, 262
- Samuel ha-Levi. *See* Santa María, Pablo de *sanbenito* 89, 104, 220, 266
- San Andrés (Belmonte) 154
- San Antonio (Sigüenza) xvii
- Sanahuja 119
- San Bartolomé (Salamanca) 28–9
- Sánchez, Cristóbal 136
- Sánchez, Gaspar 127
- San Clemente (Bologna) 28
- San Cosme (Belmonte) 154
- San Giovanni del Mercato (Rome) 63
- San Julián, José de 54, 81, 128, 216
- Sanlúcar la Mayor 108
- San Pablo (Cordova) 28
- Santa Cruz (Valladolid) 31
- Santa Cruz, Diego de 85, 126–7
- Santa Eulalia (Palma de Mallorca) 88
- Santa María de Cartagena family xviii–xix, 4–5, 68, 74, 177
- Santa María, Pablo de xviii, 4–5, 25, 68, 174, 177
- Santa Maria in Transpontina (Rome) 106
- Santander, Luis (Diego) de xxi, 86–7, 111, 254
- Santiago 61
- Santiago, Order of 28
- Santo Tomás (Ávila) 28
- Saragossa 61, 75, 124, 151, 153–4, 179, 238
- Sarah 20
- Sarmiento, Pero de xviii, xxii, 1–2, 4, 6, 22, 25, 29–30, 35, 38–9, 149, 159, 192
- Sassari 119
- Scaduto, Mario xxix–xxx, 80, 108
- Skarga, Piotr 112
- schools, converso foundation of xxii–xxiii, 52, 54, 82, 155, 165, 205, 212, 216
- Sebastião, King of Portugal 72, 121, 139, 171, 246, 250, 265
- Segorbe 54
- Segovia 28, 52, 54, 86–7, 107–8, 111–2
- Seneca 5
- Sentencia-Estatuto* 2–4, 29, 39
- Serpa 74
- Seville 28, 58, 73, 81, 85–7, 104, 108, 110, 127, 149, 151, 155, 185, 187, 190, 216, 267
- Shakespeare xvi, xviii, xxxii, 138
- Shanghai xv
- Schopenhauer, Arthur 154
- Sicily xv, 44, 51, 71, 79, 98, 118–9, 123, 131, 165, 231, 242
- Sicroff, Albert xvii–xix
- Sigüenza xvii, 28, 55, 57, 141
- Sigüenza, José de xix, 7
- Silíceo (Guijarro, Juan Martínez) xviii, xx–xxii, 1–2, 25, 29–39, 52, 77, 81–3, 133, 159, 200, 264
- Simancas, Diego de (Didacus Velásquez) xviii, xxii, 2, 26, 30–9, 146, 192, 197, 269
- Sisebuto, King of Visigoths 23
- Sisenando, King of Visigoths 23
- Soárez, Cipriano 107, 217
- Society of Jesus (the Jesuits). *See* Alcalá, Jesuit College in; Ávila, Juan de; Ávila, Teresa de; books; Casa dei Catecumeni; casuistry; Collegio Romano; Communion; confession; Congregations General; Constitutions (Jesuit); Councils (Trent); “fourth vow”; *General Exam*; Inquisition (Spanish); Jews (Ignatius of Loyola); linguistic skills; military chaplains; ministries; Poissy, Colloquy of; preaching; Probabilism; purity-of-blood; schools; Spiritual Exercises; St. Martha House; St. Peter Penitentiary; Tutorism; Vulgate;

- Solier, Antonia de 112  
 Solier, Hernando de 104, 111–2, 123,  
 136, 232, 254  
 Solomon 17, 19  
*(The) Song of Songs* 21  
 soteriology (Jewish-converso) xix,  
 175–6  
 Soto, Domingo de 104  
 Sourie, Jacques 101  
 Spain xvi–xxii, xxvii, 4, 29, 33, 36–7,  
 39, 41, 44, 49, 54, 57, 61, 65, 79–80,  
 83–4, 87, 89–90, 96–9, 101, 103–4,  
 110–1, 119, 122–3, 126, 132–6, 142–3,  
 146–7, 150–1, 159, 164–5, 167, 171–2,  
 177, 181, 185, 188–90, 200–1, 203–4,  
 208–9, 212–3, 220, 222, 224, 232, 237,  
 244, 252, 254, 264–8  
 Spiritual Exercises 52, 57, 66, 69–71,  
 78, 81, 130, 133, 166, 223  
 Starr-LeBeau, Gretchen xviii–xix, 268  
*Statutum contra hebraeos* xvii  
 St. Martha House 61, 89  
 St. Peter Penitentiary 101, 111  
 Suárez, Baltasar 107, 216  
 Suárez de Toledo, Gaspar 106  
 Suárez de Toledo family 106–7, 110,  
 212, 217, 263  
 Suárez, Diego 231  
 Suárez, Francisco xxxi, 66, 68, 106–9,  
 151, 154, 216, 266, 268  
 Suárez, Juan 100, 118  
 Sweden 123, 174, 263
- Tacchi Venturi, Pietro xxix  
 Talavera de la Reina (Toledo) 6, 30,  
 82, 212  
 Talavera, Hernando de xxiii–xxiv  
 Talmud xvii, 32, 93, 153, 268  
 Tamil 72  
 Tarragona 154  
 Tavera, Diego de 81  
 Tavera, Juan de 81  
 Távora, Manuel de 73  
 Taxco 190  
 Tehran xv  
 Tejada, Fray Juan 113, 133, 222  
*Theologiae moralis summa* 65  
 Thomas Aquinas, St. 9, 14, 33, 178  
 Titus, Emperor 19  
 Tivoli 65, 123  
*Tizón de la Nobleza* 203  
 Toledo xviii, xx, xxii, xxviii, 1–7, 21–5,  
 27–33, 35–6, 38, 42–4, 51–2, 55, 61,  
 65, 78, 81–2, 84, 89, 94, 96–7, 103–4,  
 106–7, 110, 112–3, 118–9, 123, 125,  
 127–8, 132, 141, 143, 147–8, 150–1,  
 154, 159, 169, 177, 187, 190, 195–6,  
 201, 203, 212–3, 216, 254, 262, 265–6,  
 268  
 Toledo, Alfonso de 104  
 Toledo, Francisco de xxviii, 31, 70–1,  
 104–6, 108, 111, 144, 149, 220, 236, 269  
 Torano, Giovanni da 63  
*tornadizo* xvi  
 Torquemada, Cardinal Juan de 25  
 Torquemada, Inquisitor Tomás de 25  
 Torres, Baltasar de 54, 71, 81, 216, 242  
 Torres, Francisco de 69  
 Torres, Hernando de 15, 101  
 Torres, Miguel de 118, 251, 253  
 Trancoso, Antonio 137, 236  
 Transylvania 120  
 Trabia xv  
 Trent, Council of. *See* Councils  
 Truchsess von Waldburg, Cardinal  
 Otto 130–1, 139  
 Trujillo, Francisco 128  
 Tuscany 69, 85, 99, 101  
 Tutorism xxiii, 71
- Uceda, Gaspar de 196–7  
 usury xv, xvii, 173, 181  
 Uztarroz, Andrés 154
- Valladolid 28, 31, 44, 54, 85  
 Vall de Cristo 54  
 Valles, Juan 128  
 Valencia 28, 44, 52, 78, 85, 87, 104,  
 110, 118, 123  
 Valencia, Gregorio de 54, 66, 81  
 Valignano, Alessandro 164, 171–3  
 Valpedrosa, Gaspar de 127  
 Valpedrosa, Melchor 128, 149  
 Vargas, Rodrigo 128  
 Vaz, Antonio 72  
 Vaz, Gomes 73  
 Vaz, Marcelo 100  
 Vázquez, Dionisio 44, 101, 104, 110–1,  
 118–9, 123, 126, 129, 134, 136–8, 142,  
 222, 225, 230–2, 241–4, 253  
 Vázquez, Miguel 128  
 Vega, Juan de 44, 71, 179, 242  
 Velázquez de Cuéllar, Juan 50–2, 54  
 Venice xviii, 51, 58, 66, 69, 129, 145, 262  
 Vespasian, Emperor 19  
*Vicus eius nos* 62

- Vienna 70, 145  
 Vietnam 151–2  
 Villa de Minaya (Cuenca) 190  
 Villalobos, Alfonso de 44  
 Villalobos y Ribadeneyra, Catalina de 42  
 Villalba, Pedro 118, 152  
 Villanueva, Francisco de xxi, 81–2,  
 84, 86  
 Villarejo 190, 205  
 Villena 28  
 Visigoths xvii, 19, 23  
 Vitelleschi, Mutius 94, 152  
 Vitoria 265  
 Vitoria, Juan Alonso de 70, 100  
 Vives, Joan Lluís xxiii–xxiv, 52, 153,  
 179, 264–5  
 Vulgate, converso Jesuit work on 106,  
 108  
 Wierix xxvi, 124  
 Worms 57  
 Xavier, Francis, St. 56–7, 72–4, 78,  
 132, 268  
 Yerushalmi, Yosef Hayim xvi  
 Zamora, Juan Alfonso de 5  
 Zárate, Pedro de 45  
 Zúñiga, Catalina de 127  
 Zúñiga, Diego Ortiz de 104  
 Zúñiga, Juan de 250



# STUDIES IN MEDIEVAL AND REFORMATION TRADITIONS

(Formerly *Studies in Medieval and Reformation Thought*)

Edited by Andrew Colin Gow  
Founded by Heiko A. Oberman†

123. NEWHAUSER, R. (ed.) *The Seven Deadly Sins. From Communities to Individuals*. 2007
124. DURRANT, J.B. *Witchcraft, Gender and Society in Early Modern Germany*. 2007
125. ZAMBELLI, P. *White Magic, Black Magic in the European Renaissance*. From Ficino and Della Porta to Trithemius, Agrippa, Bruno. 2007
126. SCHMIDT, A. *Vaterlandsliebe und Religionskonflikt*. Politische Diskurse im Alten Reich (1555-1648). 2007
127. OCKER, C., PRINTY, M., STARENKO, P. and WALLACE, P. (eds.). *Politics and Reformations: Histories and Reformations*. Essays in Honor of Thomas A. Brady, Jr. 2007
128. OCKER, C., PRINTY, M., STARENKO, P. and WALLACE, P. (eds.). *Politics and Reformations: Communities, Politics, Nations, and Empires*. Essays in Honor of Thomas A. Brady, Jr. 2007
129. BROWN, S. *Women, Gender and Radical Religion in Early Modern Europe*. 2007
130. VAINIO, O.-P. *Justification and Participation in Christ*. The Development of the Lutheran Doctrine of Justification from Luther to the Formula of Concord (1580). 2008
131. NEWTON, J. and BATH, J. (eds.). *Witchcraft and the Act of 1604*. 2008
132. TWOMEY, L.K. *The Serpent and the Rose: The Immaculate Conception and Hispanic Poetry in the Late Medieval Period*. 2008
133. SHANTZ, D. *Between Sardis and Philadelphia*. The Life and World of Pietist Court Preacher Conrad Bröske. 2008
134. SYROS, V. *Die Rezeption der aristotelischen politischen Philosophie bei Marsilius von Padua*. Eine Untersuchung zur ersten Diktion des *Defensor pacis*. 2008
135. GENT, J. VAN. *Magic, Body and the Self in Eighteenth-Century Sweden*. 2008
136. BUCER, M. *Briefwechsel/Correspondance*. Band VII (Oktober 1531-März 1532). Herausgegeben und bearbeitet von B. Hamm, R. Friedrich, W. Simon. In Zusammenarbeit mit M. Arnold. 2008
137. ESPINOSA, A. *The Empire of the Cities*. Emperor Charles V, the *Comunero* Revolt, and the Transformation of the Spanish System. 2009
138. CRAIG, L.A. *Wandering Women and Holy Matrons*. Women as Pilgrims in the Later Middle Ages. 2009
139. REID, J.A. *King's Sister – Queen of Dissent*. Marguerite of Navarre (1492-1549) and her Evangelical Network. 2009
140. BRUMMETT, P. (ed.). *The 'Book' of Travels: Genre, Ethnology, and Pilgrimage, 1250-1700*. 2009
141. INGRAM, K. (ed.). *The Conversos and Moriscos in Late Medieval Spain and Beyond*. Volume One: Departures and Change. 2009
142. MACDONALD, A.A., VON MARTELS, Z.R.W.M. and VEENSTRA, J.R. (eds.). *Christian Humanism*. Essays in Honour of Arjo Vanderjagt. 2009
143. KEUL, I. *Early Modern Religious Communities in East-Central Europe*. Ethnic Diversity, Denominational Plurality, and Corporative Politics in the Principality of Transylvania (1526-1691). 2009
144. BAUMANN, D. *Stephen Langton: Erzbischof von Canterbury im England der Magna Carta (1207-1228)*. 2009
145. FIREY, A. A *Contrite Heart: Prosecution and Redemption in the Carolingian Empire*. 2009
146. MARYKS, R.A. *The Jesuit Order as a Synagogue of Jews*. Jesuits of Jewish Ancestry and Purity-of-Blood Laws in the Early Society of Jesus. 2010.